

# Chapter 1401 - Sixth Day

Chapter 1401: Sixth Day

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

On the fifth day.

The Saint Lady received a signal flare. She clenched it in her hand and read the message on it.

Whoosh!

The holy light spread from Huang Yanchen's body. She asked, "Who sent you the signal flare?"

The Saint Lady didn't try to hide it. "Zhang Ruochen."

Martial Saint Canglan who was standing in front of the Saint Lady said, "Countless heavenly kings in the imperial government want to kill him, yet he still dares contact you? You guys have a deep bond."

The Saint Lady didn't argue back. Instead, she said, "He asked me for a favor."

"He would ask others for a favor?"

Huang Yanchen and Martial Saint Canglan almost said it at the same time, but they didn't ask the Saint Lady what Zhang Ruochen was asking for.

The atmosphere in Saint Palace Yuanchu became slightly awkward.

Huang Yanchen and Martial Saint Canglan had all kinds of assumptions in their minds, but they vetoed them all.

The Saint Lady said, "He said he doesn't want to hurt the ordinary people. Kunlun's Field is the world of trillions of people, not the world for First Central Empire."

Martian Saint Canglan smiled. “You guys share almost the same ideology. No wonder he asked you instead of me.”

Huang Yanchen said, “The saints in Kunlun’s Field should’ve arrived at Peakless Mountain already. Let’s head there as well.”

...

On the sixth day.

The headquarters of Demonic Sect, Saint Wood Mountain.

Mu Lingxi was detained in a palace made of iron on Saint Wood Mountain. She wasn’t allowed to be in contact with the outside world, nor was anyone allowed in.

Huang Yanchen came to the iron palace, accompanied by the saint leader of Mu’s family and Yun Zheng.

“Tomorrow is the seventh day, and Qiu Yu of the Fire Tribe will come marry Lingxi. We don’t allow anyone else to visit her, but you’re the senior sister of Lingxi. You’re an exception,” Yun Zheng said.

Huang Yanchen nodded, looking at the bizarre building that was perfectly sealed.

Squeak!

Huang Yanchen opened the door, leaving a long shadow on the ground.

Huang Yanchen saw Mu Lingxi after she walked in. She was sitting on the floor, and her eyes were glazing over. Her hair was messy, and she was covered with mud. She looked completely different from the childish but lovely junior sister Duanmu.

“What happened? How could your dad and Mu family treat you like this?”

Huang Yanchen couldn’t be more heartbroken. She immediately walked toward her.

“Stay away from me.”

Mu Lingxi immediately distanced herself from Huang Yanchen.

Huang Yanchen teared up and said, “Lingxi, it’s me, your sister Chen.”

“I know you’re Huang Yanchen, but why...why did you do that to him? People change. What do you want to do to me?” Mu Lingxi asked cautiously.

Huang Yanchen kept shaking her head, speechless.

Mu Lingxi said, “Do you know what I regret the most? I shouldn’t have changed the brands of ‘Huang Number One’ and ‘Di Number One’ when Zhang Ruochen entered Dragon Wu Palace, otherwise the bond between you guys wouldn’t be that strong. Then you wouldn’t have had the chance to hurt him that deeply.”

Mu Lingxi continued, saying, “You know that he’ll never hurt you. No wonder how much I love him and want to get with him, he can always control himself.”

Huang Yanchen closed her eyes, took a deep breath and said, “I’m destined to follow a different path from him, so only God knows what’ll happen in the future, but I know that he values you a lot, otherwise he wouldn’t have told everyone his identity as the crown prince of Sacred Central Empire. He’s coming to Peakless Mountain only to save you.”

“Crown prince of Sacred Central Empire? What do you mean?”

Mu Lingxi looked confused.

Huang Yanchen then said, “Don’t you know he’s the crown prince of Sacred Central Empire?”

Mu Lingxi was a bit dazed and shook her head.

Huang Yanchen sighed. Obviously, Mu Lingxi had no idea what was going on outside her prison.

And then, Huang Yanchen told her about how Zhang Ruochen issued the crown prince edict and conquered Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, and then, she said, “Zhang Ruochen is definitely coming to Peakless Mountain tomorrow, but he’s

going to be in grave danger. Unlike Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, Peakless Mountain is guarded by a supreme saint, and I heard that there's a supreme saint in the Fire Tribe as well. Besides, there'll be lots of great beings from the imperial government coming to Peakless Mountain. Once Zhang Ruochen shows himself, he'll be encircled."

Mu Lingxi smiled and said, "Are you asking me to talk him out of it?"

Huang Yanchen said, "Even with the help of previous officials from the Sacred, he won't be able to fight Moon Worship Demonic Sect, the Fire Tribe and the imperial government, and besides, many powers also stand with Qiu Yu. Only one person can persuade him not to do it and thus save his life."

Mu Lingxi said, "So you want me to talk him out of coming to Peakless Mountain?"

"That's right."

Huang Yanchen stayed silent for a while, then she nodded.

"Do you really think he's an idiot? Do you really think I can stop him from coming to Peakless Mountain? Nobody can change his mind once he's determined."

Mu Lingxi said, "Actually, I find it an amazing thing to die together with Zhang Ruochen on Peakless Mountain. I don't want to submit to fate, and besides, I believe he's someone who can create a miracle. There's nothing he can't accomplish. If he dies on Peakless Mountain tomorrow, I'll die with him. If he saves me, then I'll follow him forever."

"Stupid. Nobody can fight fate. Everyone's been doing what he or she doesn't want to do since being born..."

Huang Yanchen's voice got lower and lower. Eventually, she shook her head, stopped talking and walked out of the iron palace.

Huang Yanchen ran into the Saint Lady under Saint Wood Mountain.

"How did it go? Did she say yes?" the Saint Lady asked.

Huang Yanchen shook her head.

The Saint Lady then said, “Did you tell her that you can take her away using the oracle of the Empress even if Zhang Ruochen doesn’t come to Peakless Mountain tomorrow?”

“No... It doesn’t matter... Perhaps it’s great for Zhang Ruochen to have a girl who loves him wholeheartedly, otherwise he’ll feel abject loneliness.”

Huang Yanchen’s lips were shivering and her eyes were glazing over as she said that.

“Are you okay?” the Saint Lady asked.

Huang Yanchen shook her head and said, “Tell everyone from the imperial government that nobody is allowed to attack Zhang Ruochen tomorrow, otherwise, they’re going against the oracle.”

“You’re going to offend the entire imperial government doing that. Aren’t you afraid the empress will punish you after she comes back?” the Saint Lady said.

“That’s all I can do for them.”

Huang Yanchen walked forward, dazed.

The Saint Lady stared at Huang Yanchen walking away, then she said, “They know it’s dangerous, yet they still chose to do it...”

...

Yunwu Commandery.

“Mother, fourth brother and ninth sister, if you want to stay in Yunwu Commandery, I won’t force you to leave. I hope we can meet each other again in the future,” Zhang Ruochen said, looking at his dearest family.

“Ninth brother, will you be in danger going to Peakless Mountain? Will you not be able to make it back this time?” Zhang Yuxi asked, concerned.

Zhang Shaochu said, “I’m not a coward. Even if I can’t help with anything, I’ll still go to Peakless Mountain with you.”

With the promise of Moon Goddess, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t afraid that he’d run into danger on Peakless Mountain.

Besides, he had promised Moon Goddess that he'd follow her to Heaven Field to help her with an issue.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea how far Heaven Field was from Kunlun's Field, and he didn't know what kind of dangers he would run into helping a God.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen wasn't sure whether he could make it back to Kunlun's Field.

Zhang Ruochen heard the voice of Moon Goddess. "Bring the two elders who make wine and pills."

This was the first time Moon Goddess had initiated a conversation with Zhang Ruochen, which astounded Zhang Ruochen. Why does a God value Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic that much?

Zhang Ruochen was confused.

He then heard Moon Goddess's voice again. "Do you want to know what kind of a place Heaven World is?"

"Of course," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Heaven World is called Saint World, and it was built to fight against Hell World. You need to at least be a half saint to refine there. However, when a half saint enters Heaven World, he can only wield a power that's slightly stronger than an ordinary person. Six Saints to Heaven Wine and Saint Pills can play a great role there," Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "A half saint is already strong enough to refine in Heaven World? There're countless half saints in Kunlun's Field; why can't they go refine in Heaven World?"

Moon Goddess said, "The universe is enormous, and there're thousands of worlds that're just as powerful as Kunlun's Field. Even Gods have no idea where the edge of the universe is. A world is only qualified to negotiate with the Gods in Heaven World after a God's born, after which it'll become a subsidiary world of Heaven World and build the saint path from Heaven World to subsidiary worlds. Then the half saints, saints, saint kings and supreme saints will be qualified to refine in Heaven World.

“After becoming a subsidiary of Heaven World, that world will be penetrated by Hell World, but Heaven World will defend it. Also, it’s not a good idea just to depend on Heaven World all the time. Instead, you need to be strong. Otherwise you’ll be annihilated anyway.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. “A hundred thousand years ago, there were several Gods in Kunlun’s Field. Wasn’t Kunlun’s Field a subsidiary world of Heaven World?”

“Kunlun’s Field used to be powerful, indeed, and it was ranked high on ‘Ten Thousand Worlds Merit Rank.’ Unfortunately... No matter. There’s something you’d better not know. After the Gods of Kunlun’s Field died, it was abandoned by Heaven World.

“I don’t know whether your empress can survive negotiating with Gods in Heaven World or not. If she can, the saint road from Kunlun’s Field to Heaven World will be built again, then Kunlun’s Field that’s already doomed might still stand a chance.”

# Chapter 1402 - Crown Prince Of The Sacred Comes To Pray

Chapter 1402: Crown Prince Of The Sacred Comes To Pray

1

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After listening to the Moon Goddess' words, Zhang Ruochen felt like he was no different from the frog at the bottom of the well.

There were actually so many worlds as strong as Kunlun's Field in the universe. But even put together, they still couldn't counter the attacks from Hell. They must establish the Heaven World to counter Hell.

How strong was Hell?

Zhang Ruochen inhaled sharply. A strange thought appeared in his mind, but he shook his head, not continuing to think about it. His eyes darkened, as if thinking about something.

It didn't cost much effort to invite Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic over, because they'd gone voluntarily to Zhang Ruochen, deciding to visit Peakless Mountain with him.

"Back then, Shi Qianjue killed my entire family," Gu Songzi said angrily. "It's time to make him pay. Before, I didn't dare to go to Peakless Mountain because they had the advantage in numbers. Now that I'm going with you, the Crown Prince, I'm ready to stir up a storm."



“The Saintess of the Demonic Sect is being forced to marry a tree,” the Crazy Alcoholic said. “Shi Qianjue has married all of the ancestors. I will stop this from happening even if it kills me.”

“It’s far from Yunwu Commandery to the Peakless Mountain. If we don’t go now, we might not make it in time.”

Zhang Ruochen sat on the Golden Dragon Carriage. He activated all his Holy Qi and poured it in. Nine golden dragons instantly rushed out of the carriage, shaking the clouds with their roars.

Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic transformed into two beams of light and rushed into the carriage.

Roar!

Instantly, the nine golden dragons transformed into golden streaks. Pulling the carriage, they rushed into the sky. Mere moments later, they were already outside of Yunwu Commandery.

The Seventh.

Most of the Saints from the various top forces had arrived at Peakless Mountain. Today’s banquet would gather all the Saints. Its scale was unprecedented.

“Xue Wuye, lord of Wanxiang City, has arrived to the banquet.”

“Sui Han, leader of the Qin Sect, has arrived to give blessings.”

“Heavenly King Douzhan has arrived. Please enter the palace.”

...

Both the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect and Fire Tribe were absolute powers and friendly with many clans and sects. Thus, the ones who could receive invitations were all big names.

Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi sat in similar places. One was a player while the other practiced abstinence, but they had a very good relationship.

“How about we bet whether Zhang Ruochen or Qiu Yu will arrive first today?” Xue Wuye asked, chuckling.

Monk Lidi smiled and shook his head softly. “No.”

Xue Wuye found it disinteresting too. “I, Xue Wuye, hate men who pressure women. For a woman, you have to understand her, spoil her, love her, protect her. To be honest, between Zhang Ruochen and Qiu Yu, I would rather have Zhang Ruochen get the beauty in the end.”

“A pity, a pity,” Monk Lidi said.

“It’s indeed a pity. The Fire Tribe and Moon-Worship Demonic Sect are both too strong. Even if Emperor Ming were alive, he might not offend them both for a woman. Even if Zhang Ruochen comes to Peakless Mountain, he might be powerless too.”

Not everyone who came to the banquet was on Qiu Yu’s side. Some also hoped Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi could have a good ending.

Actually, many forces owed Zhang Ruochen and recognized his character.

However, they were too lowly before the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect and Fire Tribe. They could only sigh inwardly.

“I only hope Zhang Ruochen won’t come to Peakless Mountain. Otherwise, I’m afraid he’ll suffer today.”

“This is the headquarters of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect. Even when Empress Chi Yao attacked them back then, she still suffered greatly.”

“Zhang Ruochen should just bear it. It’s not worth it to give up his life for a woman.”

...

Time passed quickly. It was now noon.

According to the agreement, Qiu Yu and the Fire Tribe should arrive now and lead the bride away.

But neither Qiu Yu nor Zhang Ruochen had arrived. The atmosphere was extremely strange.

“Zhang Ruochen probably got scared away. He won’t dare to come to Peakless Mountain today.”

“That’s not certain. Maybe the army of the Sacred and the Fire Tribe have already started fighting a vicious war somewhere.”

Mu Lingxi wore a bright red dress with phoenix patterns. She had beautiful makeup on and her hair was very neatly done. She put on a phoenix headdress and sat primly at the front of the banquet without moving. She was beautiful.

Looking only at her features, there was no woman more beautiful than her in all of Kunlun’s Field.

No matter what the others said, she didn’t feel any joy or sadness. Whether Zhang Ruochen came today or not, she would not marry Qiu Yu. Today’s wedding might be her funeral.

Just then, fiery red clouds rolled over powerfully from the south. One could vaguely see Saint beasts, carriages, and ships in the fire.

“Look, the cultivators of the Fire Tribe are here!”

At that moment, countless eyes on Peakless Mountain looked up into the sky.

“I can finally see Qiu Yu’s handsome looks. Unfortunately, the bride isn’t me. How come the little Saintess is so lucky?”

“I heard that Qiu Yu is number one of all cultivators in his generation. Even Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi are below him. I wonder what kind of legendary figure he is.”

Finally, Mu Lingxi’s fingers tensed a bit. Her entire body was trembling lightly.

Another Saintess of the Demonic Sect laughed beside her.

“The Zhang Ruochen that you’re waiting for might not be coming. Of course, marrying Qiu Yu is enough for us sisters to be jealous.”

“This is none of your business,” Mu Lingxi said.

“Yes! You’re so powerful. Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen will become the laughingstock of Kunlun’s Field after today.

Everyone will know that he was scared by Qiu Yu and as cowardly as a mouse.”

“Actually, Zhang Ruochen’s choice was accurate. After all, he would only be coming to die.”

Mu Lingxi was furious. Unfortunately, she couldn’t move at all. Otherwise, she would’ve walked over to slap the other Saintess.

Moments later, the cultivators of the Fire Tribe climbed up Peakless Mountain with Qiu Yu at the front. They came to Tianmu Peak and entered the white stone square where the banquet was set up.

Saint Leader Mu and Yun Zheng went to welcome him personally.

Yun Zheng smiled from far away. “Son-in-law, we’ve been waiting. Why did you only arrive now?”

Qiu Yu wore a red outfit and had a clean face. He was very handsome. Seemingly very humble and apologetic, he said, “We were stopped by some Sacred rebels along the way and they delayed us. Fortunately, we took care of all of the little thieves. We didn’t miss the most auspicious time, right?”

Everyone was silent.

No cultivator present was unmoved.

Not long ago, the Sacred rebels had defeated the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. Their force was extremely large. But this powerful force was defeated by the Fire Tribe so easily. Qiu Yu had even called them a group of “little thieves.”

Wasn’t the Fire Tribe a bit too strong?

A wave of fawning voices sounded instantly.

Mu Lingxi’s heart trembled slightly. Her face turned pale instantly.

Saint Leader Mu and Yun Zheng exchanged glances. They both let out relieved sighs and smiles. Since the Sacred rebels were killed, today’s wedding should be very successful.

Xue Wuye smiled and called out, “Excuse me, Qiu Yu, was Zhang Ruochen part of the group of little thieves?”

Qiu Yu looked over at Xue Wuye. “I did not happen to see Zhang Ruochen.”

“I see. I guess they really were a group of small thieves.” Xue Wuye raised his wine glass in Qiu Yu’s direction. He smiled and took a sip.

The banquet’s atmosphere grew a bit awkward.

Yun Zheng chuckled. “I’m afraid Zhang Ruochen didn’t even dare to fight personally. He ran away in fear when he saw the cultivators of the Fire Tribe.”

The banquet was filled with laughter. In order to flatter Qiu Yu, someone else followed with, “Yes, the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion can’t compare to the Fire Tribe. Even if Zhang Ruochen borrows some guts, he still won’t dare to offend the Fire Tribe.”

The atmosphere finally recovered a bit. Then Saint Leader Mu and Yun Zheng brought Qiu Yu and the Fire Tribe cultivators toward the banquet.

Boom.

Suddenly, the entire Peakless Mountain trembled.

Next, a resonating voice traveled from the horizon. “Zhang Ruochen, Crown Prince of Sacred Ming, has come to Peakless Mountain to pray to the heaven and earth.”

Each word was like thunder, ringing painfully in everyone’s ears.

That moment, the sky darkened a bit.

Everyone on Peakless Mountain looked toward the direction of the voice. A 3,000-foot-tall Taigu Demon Ape stood on the horizon. It held a battle flag and looked extremely menacing and aggressive.

The voice earlier had come from its mouth.

Beside the Demon Ape, there was a dragon carriage pulled by nine golden dragons. It drove over the plains, approaching

Peakless Mountain.

Behind the dragon carriage, four Saint beasts lifted up the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron while roaring.

Other than that, the various Saints of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion and the Sacred followed closely behind the Golden Dragon Carriage. Extremely strong Saintly Way ripples came from each of them.

“The Crown Prince of the Sacred has come to Peakless Mountain to pray,” a Saint roared coldly. “People of Moon-Worship Demonic Sect, how dare you not open the gates and welcome him immediately?”

Emperors would all choose famous mountains to pray to the sky.

Eight hundred years ago, Peakless Mountain had been within the borders of the Sacred Central Empire. It was reasonable for the Crown Prince of the Sacred to come to Peakless Mountain for the ritual.

All the cultivators at Mount Tianmu exchanged awkward glances. Zhang Ruochen really did dare to come to Peakless Mountain for the ritual. He was completely provoking the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect.

At the same time, everyone knew that the ritual was just an excuse. Zhang Ruochen’s true motives were probably to steal the bride.

Whoosh!

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron flew up and hovered in the sky. Many golden runes flew out of the cauldron and lit up the sky like stars.

A Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, countless miles long, flew around the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and roared angrily, “If you don’t open the gates and formation, the Crown Prince will flatten Peakless Mountain today!”

# Chapter 1403 - Shi Qianjue

Chapter 1403: Shi Qianjue

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Qiu Yu laughed from the top of Saint Wood Mountain and said, "He actually dares trespass on Peakless Mountain. I'll go defeat him with the monks of the Fire Tribe."

"Wait."

Ouyang Huan walked out, engulfed in gleaming saint light.

"Lord Qiu Yu, you're the groom today, so you should be with the guests at the wedding. Moon Worship Demonic Sect is more than enough to deal with such a small issue."

And then, all the saints from Demonic Sect left with Ouyang Huan.

The wedding was carried out, yet the monks had all turned their attention toward the area beneath the mountain.

"Turn on Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron to break the mountain-guarding formation."

Zhang Ruochen wasn't patient or willing to wait. He stood up, flew to Golden Dragon Carriage and performed 'Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture.' He opened all the fourteen apertures on his palm, and thick saint Qi gushed into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron."

Meanwhile, the saints from the Sacred standing behind Golden Dragon Carriage also wielded saint Qi light pillars.

Suddenly, the destructive forces from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron became more than ten times stronger, forming a golden whirlpool that had a diameter of hundreds of miles.

Those ancient golden characters spun around the whirlpool, hitting Peakless Mountain.

Bang!

Bang!

...

Each of the ancient golden characters hit the guarding formation like a little star, shaking the half-transparent guarding screen, forming whirlpools.

The forces from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron made the monks from Demonic Sect cave into the ground as they couldn't stand up at all.

Ouyang Huan stood at the top of a formation tower and said, "Don't push it too hard, Zhang Ruochen. Do you really think you can just trespass in the territory of Moon Worship Demonic Sect like this?"

"You didn't open the guarding formation, so I'll have to break it."

Zhang Ruochen put his hands up, holding the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, looking almighty.

Yan Kaiyuan yelled, "Open the guarding formation and welcome his highness now if you're smart, otherwise, there'll only be bloodshed if we crack it open."

Mingjiang King said, "We're just here to worship heaven and earth. We don't want to commit killings. Don't force us."

"How reckless. We'll see how you're going to create bloodshed on Peakless Mountain. Activate supreme saint inscriptions and use them to kill those who provoke us."

Ouyang Huan's voice was spread to the entire Peakless Mountain.

In the next moment, the spiritual meridians under Peakless Mountain flowed rapidly, and spiritual Qi and saint Qi gushed out.

There were black pillars in thirty-six directions around the mountain.



Those black pillars were all thousands of feet tall, and looked like thirty-six bizarre-looking stone mountains. Supreme saint inscriptions emerged on those pillars, and black light rushed out, diving under the mountain.

Boom!

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was able to ward off most of the black light, yet several traces of black light still hit the ground, creating huge pits with a diameter of more than ten miles. Thick black mist spread from the pit to thousands of miles away.

The sky was blocked out by dust. It was only afternoon, but now, it was dark.

If people used their saint eyes, they could see the thrilling scenes where the light ravaged the ground, leading to cracks that were thousands of miles long.

Not even saint kings could survive such attacks.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath as his eyes gleamed. He yelled, "Break!"

The saints from the Sacred operated the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron with Zhang Ruochen and used it to hit Peakless Mountain.

Sizzle!

Lightning emerged on the surface of the guarding formation, and it formed a huge bowl covering Peakless Mountain.

However, that lightning bowl caved as it was hit by the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, and then, it crumbled.

The first layer of the guarding formation of Peakless Mountain was crushed.

The Golden Dragon Marriage kept moving forward, and the Sacred saints finally entered Peakless Mountain.

And then, they used the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron to attack the second layer of the formation.

"How is it possible?"

Ouyang Huan looked shocked and he couldn't stay calm anymore.

The disciples of Moon Worship Demonic Sect and wedding guests were all horrified as they couldn't believe the Sacred dregs were that powerful.

“The guarding formation of Peakless Mountain can ward off attacks from supreme saints. How did they destroy it that easily?”

“That bronze cauldron is a force to be reckoned with. It's possibly an incredible supreme saint weapon, and after it's been activated by a group of saints, its power is unfathomable.”

“I heard Ling Xiao Heavenly King's Blue Sky Pagoda was suppressed by it.”

...

Qiu Yu sneered and said, “Nothing but a supreme saint weapon. Zhang Ruochen really thought he could trespass on Peakless Mountain with that? How naïve.”

A saint ancestor of the Fire Tribe shouted, “Hierarch Shi, those dregs from the Sacred are going to break the second layer of the formation if you don't stop them. Tens of millions of disciples of the Demonic Sect will be exposed, and there'll be mountains of corpses.”

Whoosh!

A trace of demonic Qi emanated from a secret region, covering the entire headquarters of the Demonic Sect.

All the creatures in Peakless Mountain, except saints, were groveling on the ground and yelling, “Hierarch!”

None of the saints, including the guests who had reached the state of saint, dared to keep sitting in their chairs anymore. They all stood up and bowed toward where the demonic Qi was the thickest.

Supreme saints were the emperors of the saints, so all the creatures needed to salute them.

Traces of demonic Qi gathered and formed a holy being.

That was the body of Shi Qianjue, which was tens of thousands of feet tall.

The previous officials of the Sacred also felt great pressure, as if the space around them was so frozen that they couldn't move or breathe anymore.

Shi Qianjue shouted, "For the sake of Emperor Ming, I'll pretend like nothing happened if you leave now, Zhang Ruochen. I'll not ascertain your responsibilities for provoking Moon Worship Demonic Sect. How about that?"

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist, broke away from the saintly way suppression and said, "I came to Peakless Mountain because I want to perform a sacrificial ceremony. You're a supreme saint, so act like a supreme saint. Are you really afraid that I'm going to annihilate Demonic Sect? How about you open the guarding formation? And I promise that I'll leave after the ceremony and that I won't hurt any monk from Demonic Sect."

"What're you going to sacrifice in the ceremony?" Shi Qianjue asked.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Saint Wood Mountain and said, "Phoenix Tree, Qiu Yu. He killed my friend, and that's unforgivable. I can use him as a sacrifice to the heaven and earth."

"You want to make the sacrifice to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree instead of heaven and earth, don't you?"

Shi Qianjue was extremely intelligent, so nothing could be hidden from him.

Obviously, He had learned about the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and Universe World. He then said, "Zhang Ruochen, I understand you have lots of grudges against him, but you're a member of Kunlun's Field, and Qiu Yu is the hope for Kunlun's Field. If you kill him, that means you kill the hope of Kunlun's Field. Do you really think you're doing the right thing?"

A saint ancestor of the Fire Tribe sneered and said, “Heaven and earth holy Qi was created in Kunlun’s Field, which accelerated the refining efficiency of the creatures here. The empress became a God because the rules changed, and all this was thanks to Lord Qiu Yu. As he becomes stronger and stronger, he’ll bring more and more changes to Kunlun’s Field, then all the creatures living here can be benefited incredibly.

All the monks present nodded.

They were all able to feel that the heaven and earth rules had changed a little bit, as Kunlun’s Field was more suitable for refining. Qiu Yu was indeed a benefit to everyone.

“Zhang Ruochen, how dare you plan to sacrifice Lord Qiu Yu just because of your personal grudge? How evil and selfish are you? You’re going to destroy the hope of Kunlun’s Field,” a saint said.

Qiu Yu stood and smiled smugly. He looked sympathetically at Zhang Ruochen who had become the enemy of Kunlun’s Field.

Yan Kaixuan’s veins popped. He yelled, “So what we’re destroying the hope of Kunlun’s Field? Qiu Yu has seized the woman of our crown prince, so he’s got to die. Tell him to fight our highness.”

“That’s right, our crown prince can knock you back to your original forms within ten moves,” the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon yelled.

Just as Qiu Yu was able to argue back, the saint ancestor standing beside him stopped him, shook his head toward him and said, “Our goal today is to seize the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. Let those from Moon Worship Demonic Sect annihilate the dregs from the Sacred first, then we’ll go capture Zhang Ruochen.”

Qiu Yu nodded.

The saint ancestor of the Fire Tribe bowed at Shi Qianjue and said, “Hierarch Shi, those dregs from the Sacred are totally provoking Moon Worship Demonic Sect. We have to teach

them a lesson. If you're not in a good place to deal with me, we from the Fire Tribe can do that for you."

# Chapter 1404 - Two Supreme Saints

Chapter 1404: Two Supreme Saints

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Elder Yan, you are joking! If they dared to attack Peakless Mountain, they would clearly be provoking us. For the dignity of the Demonic Sect, how could I forgive them easily?”

Shi Qianjue understood that the Fire Tribe was using the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect to fight the Sacred followers. But the headquarters of the Demonic Sect definitely wouldn't have the Fire Tribe fight them, so the Demonic Sect had to do it themselves.

The Fire Tribe elder bowed and stepped back.

“Zhang Ruochen,” Shi Qianjue said, “are you still not retreating?”

“I won't.”

Even faced with a Supreme Saint, Zhang Ruochen was still decisive.

“Whatever. Today, I will teach you a lesson in Emperor Ming's place.”

At that moment, the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi streaked forward like two blurs. They reached the vicinity of the second layer of defensive formations.

The Crazy Alcoholic didn't seem bedraggled at all. Instead, he was extremely fierce as he yelled, “Shi Qianjue, as the leader of the Demonic Sect, you should protect the safety of each disciple. But you negotiated with the Fire Tribe and divine

tree. You're actually forcing a Saintess to marry an outsider. Since when did the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect start needing to sacrifice a Saintess to stabilize our status and expand our power? Our teacher's reputation was all ruined in your hands."

The Crazy Alcoholic's voice was resonant and spread into every Demonic Sect disciples' ear.

Some of the disciples had the same thoughts as the Crazy Alcoholic. They were filled with anger but didn't dare say it out loud.

Of course, some other disciples thought that the Crazy Alcoholic was too outrageous.

"Where did this crazy old man come from? He dares to insult the sect leader. Does he not want to live anymore?"

"You don't even know him? He's a famous figure of the Demonic Sect, the sect leader's junior brother, Feng Zuisheng. He's so many generations above you and you dare to call him a crazy old man?"

...

Hearing the Crazy Alcoholic's insults, the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect showed slight signs of inner conflict.

A very old elder said, "When the previous sect leader was alive, the Saintesses had very high statuses. They were true Saintesses. After Shi Qianjue became the sect leader, the Saintesses became tools for him to bribe people and expand his power. What difference do they have with prostitutes? I couldn't stand this trend for a long time. Since Senior Uncle Feng is returning, please bring justice for everyone."

"Nie Beifeng, you dare doubt the sect leader? Do you want to rebel?"

Ye Xiaoxiang, the palace leader of the Night Palace walked out of thin air.

Her figure flashed and she cut down with her sword. She beheaded the Demonic Sect elder who'd just spoken, leaving blood all over the ground.

Seeing this, the anger in the Crazy Alcoholic's eyes grew even fiercer.

“Haha, haha.”

A bright laugh filled the air.

A handsome figure appeared on the horizon, walking on the water.

The Furnace Plains were vast, but under this young figure's feet, there were miles of blue waves. It was like the sea had followed him over.

The blue-robed cultivator stood at the top of the waves with his hands behind his back. “Indeed, the Saintess of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect sounds glamorous, but they're actually the most pitiful group of women in the world.”

Ye Xiaoxiang stood under Shi Qianjue and looked at the blue-robed man on the waves. “Luo Xu,” she said coldly. “You dare to come to Peakless Mountain? What benefits did Zhang Ruochen give you for you to be willing to come die?”

Zhang Ruochen was also surprised. He didn't expect for Luo Xu to come.

There were thousands of miles of waves under Luo Xu's feet, like a large lake. The water wasn't a spell. It was formed by his Rules of Saintly Way.

From this, it was clear that Luo Xu's cultivation was probably at the Saint King Realm.

Luo Xu's eyes were a bit dazed. “Benefits? No benefits in the world can tempt me. However, 200 years ago, I had my biggest regret here. Today, 200 years later, I don't wish for the tragedy to repeat itself. Zhang Ruochen, you won't blame me for coming uninvited, right?”

“I am more than grateful for Senior Luo coming to aid me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Shi Qianjue,” Gu Songzi said. “You've reached the Supreme Saint Realm and no one here is your match one on one. But we have so many strong figures here. If we activate the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron together, can you still stop us?”



“Once the second layer of the defensive formation is broken, at least half of the Demonic Sect disciples will lose protection,” the Crazy Alcoholic said. “How many disciples will be killed from a Saint battle?”

A long laugh came from Shi Qianjue. “You’ll never know how miraculous the Supreme Saint Realm is before you reach it. What can you do to me, even if I walk out of the defensive formation?”

The Spiritual Qi shook violently. Then a tall figure dressed in a robe flew out of the mountain defensive formation and stood at the same height as the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Shi Qianjue seemed to be around 50 years old. His robe was like black steel. Layers of demonic clouds hung above his head. He looked like an overbearing demon lord.

“Mighty Sect Leader, undefeatable in the world, lord of the five regions.”

“Mighty Sect Leader, undefeatable in the world, lord of the five regions.”

...

The cultivators of the Demonic Sect all bowed respectfully at Shi Qianjue. Even some of the guests to the banquet knelt too.

That was the spiritual pressure a Supreme Saint gave Saints.

It was like how commoners instinctively knelt down before an emperor.

“No.”

The Saints of the Sacred all faltered when they saw Shi Qianjue appear near the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Under Zhang Ruochen’s guidance, they used all their might to send Holy Qi into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Whoosh!

Many ancient golden words flew out of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

However, Shi Qianjue was a step faster. He extended an arm. A demonic hand formed by Rules of Saintly Way slapped down on the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, sending it flying.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron lost control. It flew to the horizon, transforming into a tiny black dot before disappearing completely.

“Great! How will those Sacred rebels counter a Supreme Saint without the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron?”

Qiu Yu and the Fire Tribe cultivators all smiled.

Shi Qianjue was definitely a domineering hero who killed decisively. After sending the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron flying, he activated his Holy Qi again, forming a black demonic ball between his hands.

The ball’s light was extremely deep, like a black hole that could swallow all the energy in the world.

“Zhang Ruochen, I gave you a chance before, but you didn’t treasure it. In that case, you and the old followers of the Sacred will all die here.”

Shi Qianjue pressed his hands down.

The black demonic ball started falling down.

In that instant, the plains under Peakless Mountain were sealed with ice, turning into a place of death.

Heavenly King Douzhan was already at the peak of the Saint King Realm. Now, he inhaled sharply. “A Supreme Saint’s casual attack is ten times stronger than me.”

“I’m finally witnessing a Supreme Saint attack,” a Saint said. “Is this really power that a human can unleash? Even the legendary gods aren’t this strong, right? Even standing at the top of Mount Tianmu, I feel immobilized.”

Mu Lingxi was extremely worried. She bit her lip with her pretty teeth and tasted blood.

Ling Feiyu stood up straight and clenched her fists. “Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen,” she uttered. “You must have a hidden card, right?”

Qiu Yu nodded. The smile in his eyes grew heavier. “As expected from a Supreme Saint. This one strike could probably wipe out half of the Sacred rebels!”

The various Saints at the top of Mount Tianmu all had different expressions. Some were worried, some proud, some anxious, and some had gleeful smiles.

Just then, a large crack opened up on the ground. A divine hand reached out.

This divine hand was hundreds of feet long, like a five-fingered cloud. It crashed against the demonic ball that fell from the sky. Instantly, rings of energy rippled out in all directions. It even caused the second layer of the defensive formation to tremble.

A Supreme Saint’s attack was actually blocked.

All the cultivators on Peakless Mountain were dumbfounded. It was like time had stopped.

Boom.

Kaboom.

...

Then the divine battle corpse walked out of the crack in the ground. The large body stood on the vast field and roared in Shi Qianjue’s direction.

The Death Zen Elder sat cross-legged on the divine battle corpse’s head. He shone with brilliant Buddhist light.

“That’s the Death Zen Elder. How can that be the Death Zen Elder?”

“Why is the Death Zen Elder helping Zhang Ruochen? With his status, he probably won’t be moved no matter what Zhang Ruochen offers him.”

The Death Zen Elder’s appearance was beyond everyone’s expectations.

Shi Qianjue was clearly a bit taken aback too. “Death Zen, you dare to go against the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect? This isn’t a wise choice.”

“Amitabha! I owe Sir Zhang, so I will naturally help him today,” the Death Zen Elder said.

On Mount Tianmu, Qiu Yu’s eyes narrowed. He seemed to have figured something out. “I see. Zhang Ruochen is the true mastermind. He’s the one who killed millions of Fire Tribe members. Die, he must die.”

“The Death Zen Elder has nothing against the Fire Tribe. There’s no way he would offend us. It must be Zhang Ruochen.”

A Saint Elder of the Fire Tribe put his hands together and bowed toward the south. “The Death Zen Elder and Zhang Ruochen are both top enemies of the Fire Tribe. I ask the Fire Lord to come out and kill them.”

Golden fire clouds appeared in the southern sky.

A man in golden armor appeared in the fiery clouds.

The energy waves from his body were even stronger than Shi Qianjue. “Death Zen Elder,” the man said. “If you escape to outside the region, you might be able to survive. Why are you still in Kunlun’s Field? Do you really think that I can’t kill you?”

The Fire Lord’s appearance definitely turned this suspenseful battle into something uninteresting.

Two Supreme Saints appearing had a complete advantage. How could they continue to fight?

Of course, even if the Sacred army was wiped out today, they could still go down in history. It was already incredible to force two Supreme Saints to come out.

“Oh?”

Suddenly, the Fire Lord and Shi Qianjue both sensed something. They turned at the same time, looking toward the northern sky.

# Chapter 1405 - Wow, What a Huge Owl

Chapter 1405: Wow, What a Huge Owl

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Lots of black spots flew from the north to Peakless Mountain like locusts.

As they got closer and closer, the monks could see those enormous beasts, owls, cranes, birds, and vultures.

Tens of millions of savage beasts encircled Peakless Mountain, and they kept yelling.

“Where did all those savage beasts come from? Is a beast emperor trying to attack Moon Worship Demonic Sect?”

“If the guarding formation is cracked open, those savage beasts will kill all the disciples of Moon Worship Demonic Sect.”

...

Shi Qianjue’s eyes gleamed with saint light, and he said, “Which beast emperor is it? Show yourself.”

“Okay. Here I am.”

The dark clouds above the savage beasts turned crimson, and then, fiery feathers emerged from the clouds.

Each feather was at least one thousand feet long.

The entire sky started to burn, and the heat coming from that savage beast was stronger than that of the Fire Master. That savage beast covered half of the sky, intimidating all the creatures.

Guoguo had turned back into a rabbit a long time ago. Its eyes popped and it yelled, “Wow! What an enormous owl!”

“Damn you. I’m an immortal bird. I was called Massacre Emperor a hundred thousand years ago. I ate saints and rode divine dragons. Everywhere I went to, I brought bloodshed.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and looked to the savage beast in the sky that was talking overbearingly.

That forces coming from the savage beasts were akin to the immortal bird he’d met in Yin and Yang Ocean, however, it had a cat head and talked almost exactly like Blackie.

Was it really Blackie?

The head mouse saw Blackie and kneeled on the ground. It said, “No wonder it’s Lord Blackie. All the savage beasts have to follow its orders.”

Ye Xiaoxiang sneered, “It’s nothing but an owl.”

“What do you know? I can kill hundreds of people like you all at once.”

The forces coming from the owl were indeed immense, which made Ye Xiaoxiang feel suppressed, so she closed her mouth.

Perhaps only the hierarch could deal with a beast emperor.

Shi Qianjue said, “What has Moon Worship Demonic Sect done to you, Massacre Emperor? Why are you surrounding Peakless Mountain with all those savage beasts?”

The immortal bird with a cat head said, “I don’t need to explain myself to you. Kneel before me and kowtow three times, otherwise, you’ll bear whatever consequences come.”

Discussion came from Peakless Mountain.

“What a tyrannical beast emperor. How dare it ask the hierarch of Demonic Sect to kowtow to it?”

“It’s almighty. Perhaps only the empress can suppress it.”

...

“Kill it.”

Ouyang Huan gave an order.

Supreme saint inscriptions emerged on the demonic pillars again. They formed thirty-six traces of light and dashed toward the previous officials of the Sacred and the immortal vampire in the sky.

Death Zen Elder operated the godly corpse, standing in front of the Sacred saints and warding off most of the light.

Nine traces of light flew toward the immortal bird.

All the monks looked to the immortal bird as they wanted to see how powerful it was.

However, that immortal bird quickly shrunk its body. Obviously, it didn't want to confront those traces of light directly. It kept shrinking as it didn't want to be hit by the light.

How come?

Was it afraid of the traces of light?

Every time the immortal bird shrunk its body, its forces would decrease. After an instant, that immortal bird was hundreds of times smaller than before.

Boom!

A trace of light flashed right beside its body, and the destructive Qi itself knocked it to the ground.

Everyone was rendered speechless after witnessing that.

How come a beast emperor is so weak?

Even Shi Qianjue and the Fire Master were a bit surprised as they hadn't seen anything like this before.

Zhang Ruochen felt really awkward, as he found Blackie totally unreliable.

Ye Xiaoxiang smiled. "Nothing but an owl."

The body of the immortal bird became smaller and smaller, and in the end, it became barely longer than three feet. It stood up, having a furry cat head, and said, "What's wrong with an owl? An owl is terrifying enough. Don't you dare say you weren't scared just now."

“Of course, I was. I was almost scared to death.” Ye Xiaoxiang kept laughing.

“What’re you laughing about? Something happened to my body when I was incarnating. How dare a nobody like you laugh at me?” the immortal bird said.

Guoguo walked out and said, “Stop flaunting yourself. You’re no match for her. She’s a saint king.”

“Piss off.”

The immortal bird was furious and kicked Guoguo away. It yelled, “Follow my order, all savage beasts. Attack the guarding formation of Peakless Mountain.”

Unfortunately, the savage beasts didn’t follow its order at all.

They could feel the terrific forces coming from Shi Qianjue and the Fire Master, so they all flew away.

“A bunch of cowards!”

The eyes of the immortal bird popped, and blue smoke came out of its body.

Guoguo ran back and looked at the immortal bird with a cat head. It touched its fur and asked curiously, “Are you Lord Blackie? Why did you become this way? Is this your original body?”

“Piss off! I told you to piss off!”

The immortal bird yelled and was about to beat Guoguo.

Guoguo immediately ran away again, and that immortal bird chased it as it wanted to teach that rabbit a lesson.

Suddenly, the savage beasts that had been flying away all came back.

Guoguo and the immortal bird both stopped and looked to the sky. They both looked shocked and said, “Why’re they flying back?”

Boom!

Boom!

...



Deafening sounds came from the underground.

Every time the sound came out, the ground would shake fiercely.

This time, the Fire Master and Shi Qianjue were both intimidated

Traces of great saint might emerged on the ground, and tens of saint shadows were standing in the black mist, approaching Peakless Mountain.

The two saint shadows at the front were two golden lions. They walked side by side, engulfed in the golden light. Their forces were just as strong as those of the Fire Master and Shi Qianjue.

The Vice Leader of Guarding Dragon Pavilion stood beside Zhang Ruochen and said, “Your highness, they’re the two Vice Leaders of Disha Pavilion.”

Zhang Ruochen recognized the two golden lions and they were said to be the guarding beasts of Sacred Central Empire.

He couldn’t believe that they were still alive.

The dozens of saint shadows following the golden lion were probably the members of Disha Pavilion.

One of the members from Disha Pavilion was an elder with thorns all over his body. He said, “Crown prince’s here to worship the heaven and earth, kneel before him.”

Tens of millions of the savage beasts that were flying in the sky encircled Peakless Mountain again, following the command of the members from Disha Pavilion.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron flew from a direction, giving out gleaming light.

The mud was tumbling under the cauldron, and hundreds of thousands of monks were riding savage beasts, rushing out.

“Murong Family will worship the heaven and earth and his highness.”

Murong Yefeng flew in the sky holding the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron using his holy Qi, and he put the cauldron in front of

Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen and Murong Yefeng gave each other a look and smiled at the same time.

Murong Yefeng was Zhang Ruochen's only friend in his lifetime.

After eight hundred years, Murong Yefeng was already one of the top-tier beings in Kunlun's Field, but just as they saw each other, Zhang Ruochen knew that their friendship hadn't changed at all with time.

Boom!

Dozens of monk armies also ran to Zhang Ruochen.

"Tiger Half Human Race, your highness."

"Chen family from Tiantai Continent, your highness."

...

The previous officials of the Sacred Central Empire formed one large army after another on Peakless Mountain.

Mingjiang King couldn't have been more excited watching the scene. He felt that Sacred Central Empire was back to its peak. He said, "If you still refuse to open the guarding formation, Moon Worship Demonic Sect will be annihilated today, Shi Qianjue."

"Let's see whether you're strong enough to do that."

Shi Qianjue looked to Zhang Ruochen, and he released an immense amount of saint might, forming two demonic handprints large like mountains, trying to suppress Zhang Ruochen.

If he could manage to kill Zhang Ruochen, the armies of Sacred Central Empire would lose their glue.

"You'll have to go through us first."

Murong Yefeng and the Vice Leader surged and performed saint spells, clashing with the demonic handprint of Shi Qianjue.

Boom!

The two demonic handprints were torn apart. Murong Yefeng and the Vice Leader rushed forward. One of them formed a palm print and the other formed a fingerprint, attacking Shi Qianjue.

“You guys are far from enough.”

Shi Qianjue sneered, and two demonic floods gushed out of his eyes, dashing toward Murong Yefeng and the Vice Leader.

“They’re not alone.”

Tens of thousands of Buddha sounds came out of Death Zen Elder’s body, and he raised his hands up. The palm of the godly corpse slapped toward Shi Qianjue.

# Chapter 1406 - Charging Up Peakless Mountain

Chapter 1406: Charging Up Peakless Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Shi Qianjue, the Death Zen Elder, Murong Fengye, and the Vice Leader were all top figures of their own territory. They could cause unrest in Kunlun's Field with just a stomp of their foot.

A huge battle erupted with the four. In that moment, the sky turned turbid. Even a Saint couldn't approach them.

The Fire Lord was also staring at Zhang Ruochen, preparing to capture him and counter the Saints of the Sacred.

But as soon as he got that thought, dozens of saintly spells flew from the Disha Pavilion's camp toward him.

"City of Heavenly Fire."

The sea of fire under the Fire Lord's feet rose up quickly, turning into a huge city of fire. Towering walls rose up on all four sides, blocking the dozen spells.

Kaboom.

The dozens of spells hit the fire wall. Like raindrops, they only produced small ripples and quickly scattered.

But in this short time, a golden Ni also flew to the side of the fire city. It stepped down, crushing one of the fire walls.

The Fire Lord's expression changed. Peering back, he discovered another golden Ni had charged from behind, blocking his exit path.

Two golden Ni attacked at the same time. They tore apart the fiery clouds in the sky, sending the Fire Lord down from the sky and collapsing the sky and land.

“The defensive beasts of the Sacred haven’t reached the Supreme Saint Realm, right? How can they be so powerful?” Blood flowed out of the Fire Lord’s mouth.

In that previous clash, he’d actually gotten hurt.

One of the golden Ni spoke in the human tongue. “You have to improve a bit over 800 years.”

Next, the two golden Ni attacked once again, pulling the Fire Lord into their circle.

The two Supreme Saints were both busy. Zhang Ruochen and the Saints of the Sacred activated the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron with all their might again, attacking the second layer of the defensive formation.

Boom!

Boom!

...

Every attack from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron would shake the second level of the defensive formation fiercely. Huge cracks appeared on the side of Peakless Mountain.

Right now, all the disciples of the Demonic Sect were in fear. They were afraid that they would die after the defensive formation was destroyed.

On Mount Tianmu, no Fire Tribe cultivator could laugh anymore. All of their faces were deathly pale.

They saw the Fire Lord get hurt with their own eyes.

The level of the Sacred rebels had surpassed all of their expectations. It seemed that they really could destroy the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect and Fire Tribe.

Qiu Yu was calmer. He gazed at Huang Yanchen, the Saint Lady, Heavenly King Douzhan and the others. “The Sacred rebels are getting out of hand. Won’t the imperial court do something?”

“Earlier, I already asked the lord of the Earth God Temple and Chaotic Military Lord for help,” the Saint Lady said. “But they didn’t reply. Perhaps they’ve run into something very important.”

Qiu Yu’s eyes were ice cold. “Is there anything more important than defeating the Sacred rebels?”

“Are we qualified to guess a Supreme Saint’s matters?” the Saint Lady said, a bit impolitely. Then she added, “Lord Qiu Yu, please stay calm. This is the Peakless Mountain, the headquarters of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect. The Sacred rebels won’t be able to conquer it easily.”

The surrounding cultivators were all laughing inwardly.

Zhang Ruochen had come powerfully and clearly to steal the bride. His target was naturally Qiu Yu.

Once Zhang Ruochen got onto Peakless Mountain, getting the bride stolen would be a small matter. By then, Qiu Yu might not even be able to keep his life.

How could Qiu Yu not panic?

A Saint Elder from the Fire Tribe said, “Doesn’t the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect have the Life-Death Furnace, a supreme weapon? How come it hasn’t been used yet?”

Ling Feiyu walked to the square near the banquet and said coldly, “Since it’s the Life-Death Furnace, then it is naturally used when the Demonic Sect is at a life-or-death moment.”

“Palace Lord Ling, is this still not a life-or-death moment?” a Fire Tribe Saint Elder asked.

“Zhang Ruochen and the Sacred followers have come to Peakless Mountain to worship,” Ling Feiyu said, “not to kill. They will leave when they finish praying.”

The Fire Tribe Saint Elder squinted and said in a low voice, “Palace Lord Ling, are you too naïve or have you made an agreement with Zhang Ruochen? Do you want to become the leader of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect?”

Ling Feiyu’s eyes were sharper than a sword. “Elder Yan, you should deal with the Fire Tribe. Does the Moon-Worship

Demonic Sect need you to worry over who our leader is?”

Then Ling Feiyu went to the peak of Mount Tianmu and looked down. “All disciples of the Moon-Worship Demonic Sect, listen. No one is allowed to attack the Sacred followers. I can protect you all. If you don’t listen, you will pay the consequences yourself.”

Her sound waves traveled outward, spreading across the entire Peakless Mountain.

The disciples who’d planned on fighting to the death with the Sacred followers now grew hesitant.

Elder Yan could see that Ling Feiyu was purposely helping Zhang Ruochen. But if she succeeded, how could the Fire Tribe survive?

“You’re looking for death.”

Elder Yan activated his Holy Qi. His skin instantly turned golden-red like burning stone. He radiated with shocking heat.

Stepping down, the stone underfoot melted instantly.

Elder Yan’s figure flashed. As if teleporting, he appeared before Ling Feiyu. He clenched his hands into claws and struck Ling Feiyu’s chest.

Sizzle.

The firelight was brilliant. People couldn’t keep their eyes open.

But shockingly, Elder Yan flew backward before his claws could hit Ling Feiyu. He fell heavily on the ground.

His arms had turned into dust.

“What just happened?”

“How is this possible? Elder Yan is very powerful among Saint Kings. How long ago did the Saintess reach the Saint King Realm? How could she injure him heavily with only one strike?”

Only the top figures present could see that Ling Feiyu wasn’t the one who’d attacked.

It was another top figure.

“Why can’t we just sit down and talk? Why must we fight?”

Right then, a man with white hair stepped down from the mountain. He reached the peak of Mount Tainmu.

The one who’d spoken was him.

The white-haired man seemed to be in his fifties. He looked similar to Ling Feiyu, but he looked frail and sickly. There were no Holy Qi ripples on him.

Ling Feiyu walked to the white-haired man’s side. Supporting him, they walked into the banquet and sat down on one of the seats.

When the Mu Family Saint Leader saw the man, his expression suddenly changed. He hurried over and bowed. “Greetings, Senior Uncle Ling.”

The white-haired man nodded, motioning for him to stop bowing and straighten himself.

Discussions erupted throughout the banquet.

“Who is this?” Martial Saint Canglan asked softly.

The Saint Lady studied the white-haired man. “It must be the son of the Demon Emperor, Demon Emperor Ling Xiu.”

“Ling Xiu? Shi Qianjue’s junior brother? Ling Feiyu’s father?” Martial Saint Canglan widened her eyes in disbelief.

The Saint Lady nodded.

Martial Saint Canglan pursed her lips. “I heard that 600 years ago, Ling Xiu failed when competing with Shi Qianjue for the position of sect leader and disabled his own cultivation. How can one live so long without cultivation?”

Ling Xiu seemed to have heard Martial Saint Canglan. He looked over and smiled. “After disabling your cultivation, you can still practice Spiritual Power. There are thousands of ways of cultivation. Each one is useful.”

The Saint Lady put her hands together and bowed slightly. “Senior Ling Xiu is indeed a top figure. After the way of



martial arts was cut off, you could still cultivate Spiritual Power to this terrifying extent. A casual strike could actually injure a Fire Tribe Saint Elder. I am very impressed.”

Ling Xiu shook his head. “My Spiritual Power is at level 60,” he said, chuckling. “But compared to your grandfather, I am still very, very far away.”

Boom!

Hearing that, the entire Mount Tianmu seemed to have exploded.

Level 60?

Wasn't level 60 of Spiritual Power a Spiritual Power Supreme Saint?

This was indeed shocking news. The Moon-Worship Demonic Sect had actually produced two Supreme Saints.

“Greetings, Supreme Saint.”

Everyone in the square fell to their knees.

Who dared not to kneel before a Supreme Saint?

Qiu Yu and the Fire Tribe looked at Ling Feiyu and Ling Xiu. Their expressions grew even more uncomfortable.

Boom.

A loud boom came from under the mountain. Even Mount Tianmu shook slightly.

The second layer of the defensive formation had been breached.

Mount Tianmu wasn't inside the third layer, so now, it was completely exposed. As for the defensive formation within Mount Tianmu, it was practically useless. How could it stop the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron?

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen steered the Golden Dragon Carriage and rushed up Peakless Mountain, flying toward Mount Tianmu.

Even though Ling Xiu and Ling Feiyu had issued an order, there were still many cultivators loyal to Shi Qianjue. They

attacked Zhang Ruochen and the Sacred army.

“Disciples of Moon-Worship Demonic Sect,” Gu Songzi yelled. “If you don’t wish to die, just sit obediently. If you continue listening to Shi Qianjue, you can only die.”

Gu Songzi hated Shi Qianjue and the disciples who followed him. He led the attack on them.

Whoosh!

Luo Xu clenched his hands into fist prints and punched. The thousands of miles of water under his feet rushed up Peakless Mountain.

With just one strike, tens of thousands of Demonic Sect disciples died in the waves.

The members of the Tiangang Pavilion and Disha Pavilion followed closely after the Golden Dragon Carriage. They crushed forward, blasting apart the disciples who dared to stop Zhang Ruochen.

This included Ye Xiaoxiang, lord of the Night Palace. She was split into parts by dozens of saint spells, turning into a cloud of bloody mist.

Ouyang Huan sat at the top of a formation tower and looked forward. He saw the nine huge golden dragons pulling a dazzling carriage and flying over.

Zhang Ruochen sat peacefully in the carriage like an emperor surveying the land.

Whoosh!

Demonic Sect disciples were densely packed around the Golden Dragon Carriage. There were probably hundreds of thousands of them. Some struck with weapons and some with martial techniques. All wanted to stop Zhang Ruochen.

But with the protection of the Tiangang Pavilion and Disha Pavilion, no matter how many Demonic Sect disciples there were, none could stop the Golden Dragon Carriage for a moment.

Thud, thud.

Corpses of Demonic Sect disciples fell down like rain. The entire sky turned blood-red. It was like Hell.

As the Golden Dragon Carriage approached, Ouyang Huan closed his eyes. "You won!" he said.

Boom.

The nine golden dragons and Golden Dragon Carriage crashed against the formation tower and crushed over, turning Ouyang Huan's body and soul into broken pieces.

The entire time, Zhang Ruochen was very calm. No emotions flashed past his eyes. He was as calm as if he'd crushed an ant.

# Chapter 1407 - Peak of Saint Wood Mountain

Chapter 1407: Peak of Saint Wood Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Everyone who had reached half-saint level or higher could see what was happening down the mountain.

The disciples of the Demonic Sect were being slaughtered. Both Ye Xiaoxiang and Ouyang Huan were prominent beings, yet they were both annihilated and turned into dust.

Everyone was breathing heavily as nobody could stay calm.

“What should we do now? The dregs from the Sacred are too powerful. Monks from Moon Worship Demonic Sect can’t stop them at all.”

The monks of the Fire Tribe were all horrified. They looked at each other, and they looked to Qiu Yu and the two saint ancestors.

Qiu Yu tried to look calm. He looked around the monks and said, “Zhang Ruochen and the Sacred dregs are completely lawless. We need to team up to defeat them.”

There were many monks who were close to the Fire Tribe, and they prepared to fight Zhang Ruochen to ingratiate themselves with Qiu Yu.

However, things were completely different from what they had expected. Zhang Ruochen was so forceful that even two supreme saints were suppressed and that saint kings were killed.

Everyone looked to Ling Xiu and Ling Feiyu. They sighed and lowered their heads.

A mind power supreme saint was sitting among the guests, so even Heavenly King Douzhan didn't dare do anything.

Qiu Yu was furious seeing none of the monks doing anything.

Boom!

The guarding formation that was protecting Saint Wood Mountain showed up, forming a layer of lightning screen, covering the mountain.

However, the protection screen was cracked open in an instant.

Howl!

Following deafening dragon sounds, nine golden dragons dragged Golden Dragon Carriage to the peak of the mountain and showed up on the square where the wedding was being held.

And then, four saint beasts carried the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and flew up, showing up behind the Golden Dragon Carriage.

All the members from Guarding Dragon Pavilion were dressed in white and wearing astral sky masks, standing on both sides of the Golden Dragon Carriage. They released powerful saint might, which terrified some of those weak monks.

A member of Guarding Dragon Pavilion shouted, "Our crown prince is here to worship the heaven and earth. Go away if you want to live."

"Those people are powerful. Don't mess with them," someone whispered.

Most of the monks in the wedding dodged the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Some of the powerful beings were still sitting on their chairs and watching what was happening.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Mu Lingxi who was sitting at the center of the wedding place. She was particularly beautiful today and she wore a red wedding gown and a phoenix hat. She was the prettiest girl in the world.

They both smiled at each other.

Mu Lingxi was smiling with tears in her eyes and she couldn't even express how moved she was.

This was something she thought would only happen in her dreams, yet now it was reality.

The man she loved was riding the Golden Dragon Carriage to save her, and for that, she had no other desires anymore.

Many other girls were jealous of Mu Lingxi, but they all kept their emotions to themselves.

“Anyone who dares stop the Golden Dragon Carriage, die,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Some of the powerful beings who had originally wanted to attack him all stopped.

Even the monks of the Fire Tribe didn't dare to anything. Every time the Golden Dragon Carriage moved forward, they stepped back.

When the Golden Dragon Carriage was only three hundred feet away from Mu Lingxi, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the carriage and walked to Mu Lingxi.

“Sister Duanmu, I'm here to take you with me. Are you willing to follow me?”

Zhang Ruochen pointed at Mu Lingxi's forehead and undid the seal on her.

Mu Lingxi immediately stood up, hugged Zhang Ruochen and said, “Of course, I am. From now on, stop calling me Sister Duanmu. Call me Lingxi.”

The Sacred saints all climbed up to the top of Saint Wood Mountain, and they all guffawed with exhilaration seeing that.

“The saintess of Demonic Sect is our crown prince's girl. That's a perfect couple.”

“A hero and a beauty. It's going to be a legend throughout the world. Our crown prince is the greatest hero, and the saintess is the most beautiful girl. Anyone have any problem with that?”

“I’ll kill anyone who has problems with that.”

...

Many people stared at Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi, who were hugging each other.

The Saint Lady looked incredibly envious at this moment, and she felt somehow bitter.

Huang Yanchen was staring at the ground the entire time. Her heart was in pain, and she clenched her fist so tightly that her palm started to bleed.

The man in front of her was supposed to be her husband, but now, they were nothing but strangers.

The girl he was hugging was supposed to be her, but now, it was Mu Lingxi.

Ling Feiyu didn’t look either, but her sword kept shaking.

Ling Xiu shot a glance at her saint sword and said, “You’re very unstable now.”

“I’m not,” Ling Feiyu said.

Ling Xiu said, “To a sword saint, the mind will affect the sword. If your mood is affected, then your sword will move as well. You can only control your sword if you’re in a perfect state of mind.”

“I understand.”

Ling Feiyu clenched her fist, and then, her saint sword stopped shivering.

Lin Suxian also looked kind of jealous. She said, “What a man. He actually changed Mu Lingxi’s destiny.”

At this moment, Lin Suxian saw a blue shadow standing on the square.

Luo Xi walked toward Lin Suxian, and he turned from being hostile to gentle. He reached out his hand and said, “Are you willing to come with me, Suxian?”

Lin Suxian stared at Luo Xu, yet all she could think about was Luo Xu rushing to the peak of Peakless Mountain two hundred

years ago.

It was déjà vu.

Lin Suxian started to tear up, and then she reached out her hand.

But then, her hand froze before it touched the hand of Luo Xu. Lin Suxian shook her head and said, “Sorry, I can’t just leave with you like this.”

Luo Xu was shocked. He ground his teeth and said, “Are you mad that I came too late?”

Lin Suxian shook her head and said, “I couldn’t be happier that you’re here, but it’s been two hundred years. Things are not how they were before. We can’t go back... I’m sorry... Sorry...”

“My love for you has never changed in the past two hundred years. Give me another chance, and I promise that I’ll protect you with my life. Nothing can separate us,” Luo Xu said.

Lin Suxian didn’t dare look at Luo Xu. She turned around and prepared to leave.

Luo Xu grabbed Lin Suxian’s wrist and dragged her into his arms.

“We’ve got to try. Last time, we caved to fate, and there were mountains of regrets. Let’s control our own destiny this time.”

Luo Xu flew out of Saint Wood Mountain like a trace of light with Lin Suxian.

“Gosh! Luo Xu literally just seized Lin Suxian. He was more reckless than Zhang Ruochen.”

“Lin Suxian, the wife of the saint master of the Qi family...yet she was taken away by Luo Xu like that? Look, his face turned green.”

“Not just green!”

“The saint master of Qi’s family is more miserable. Qiu Yu only lost his fiancé, yet he lost his wife.”



Qiu Yu couldn't be more furious. His body started to burn. It couldn't be more humiliating as his fiancé was hugging Zhang Ruochen on his wedding day.

“Do you dare fight me, Zhang Ruochen?” Qiu Yu said.

“You? I'll kill you for his highness.”

The ancestor of the Cai family released saint soul domain and covered Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu knew that he wasn't the Cai family's ancestor's match. He yelled, “If you kill him, you kill the spiritual root of Kunlun's Field. When the empress comes back, she will kill you.”

“You dare threaten me?”

The ancestor of the Cai family sneered. His eyes gleamed with saint light and prepared to kill Qiu Yu.

“Stop!” Huang Yanchen yelled. She stood up, looked at the ancestor of the Cai family and looked back to Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Zhang Ruochen, the imperial government won't stop you if you just want to take Mu Lingxi away. However, Qiu Yu is the Divine Phoenix Tree, and he'll be the spiritual root of Kunlun's Field in the future. The empress ordered the imperial government to protect him. If you kill him, you'll make yourself the enemy of the entire First Central Empire.”

Zhang Ruochen turned around, looked to Huang Yanchen and said, “I came to Peakless Mountain to kill him. Do you really think you can stop me?”

Silver liquid leaked out from Huang Yanchen's forehead, forming a saint sword. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “I'll fight you. If I win, let Qiu Yu go, If you win, then I'll kill myself with the Chaotic Universe Sword. How does that sound?”

Zhang Ruochen kept glaring at Huang Yanchen. Mu Lingxi kept shaking her head at Zhang Ruochen as she was worried that he might actually fight Huang Yanchen to the death.

Whoosh!

A black hole emerged beside Zhang Ruochen. Han Qiu walked out of the black hole, sneered and said, "How about me fighting you for Zhang Ruochen?"

# Chapter 1408 - Second Clash

Chapter 1408: Second Clash

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Whoosh!

Han Qiu twisted her wrist and power of darkness surged out of her palm. One could vaguely see a saint sword wrapped in the dark power.

Flashing, Han Qiu flew to Huang Yanchen like a ghostly spirit and cut down with her sword.

Huang Yanchen didn't dodge. Her blue eyes stared unblinkingly at Zhang Ruochen.

Martial Saint Canglan was standing nearby. Just as Huang Yanchen was going to die under Han Qiu's sword, her eyes glinted and she grabbed the Fengtian Sword, leaving a trail of fiery light behind.

She grasped the sword hilt with both hands and cut down fiercely, clashing with Han Qiu's saint sword.

There was a boom.

Red fiery clouds seemed to spew out of the Fengtian Sword, sending Han Qiu flying back.

A thin line of blood appeared on Huang Yanchen's snow-white neck. A drop of blood flowed out. That was an injury caused by the sword Qi from Han Qiu's sword.

It could be said that if Martial Saint Canglan had been an instant slower, Huang Yanchen's head would have fallen to the ground.

Martial Saint Canglan stood before Huang Yanchen. Grasping both swords, she uttered, “Zhang Ruochen, are you still the faithful and affectionate Zhang Ruochen from before? When you defeated the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and Fire Tribe and climbed Peakless Mountain, I thought that you were just angry. If you’re furious and have a belief, I wouldn’t say those lofty words even if thousands of innocent humans die because of you. There are no absolute rights or wrongs in the world. Living is the most important. Survival of the strongest is the truth.

“But Huang Yanchen is your wife. One year ago, if she hadn’t risked her life to save you outside Ziwei Palace, you would’ve died in the empress’ hands. Otherwise, why do you think the empress let you, the Sacred Crown Prince, leave? Do you really think the empress doesn’t know the secrets of the Sacred followers? But now you want to kill her? Are you even a man?”

“You better mind your own business,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

“You...”

Martial Saint Canglan widened her pretty eyes and revealed two rows of white teeth.

Huang Yanchen walked back to Zhang Ruochen. Her entire aura was different and her eyes had sharpened. “Sister Canglan, you shouldn’t get involved in our conflict.”

Han Qiu sneered. “Good! Great! Last time, in the Blue Dragon Void World, I lost to you and it pained me. This time, you won’t be so lucky!”

Han Qiu’s body dissolved into a ten-foot-wide black hole. Powerful devouring force burst from inside the hole.

The six Demonic Sect disciples closest to Han Qiu were pulled into the black hole without warning. They cried out painfully and struggled, trying to escape.

Boom, boom.

The six disciples exploded into dust.

“This is...the power of darkness... Retreat!”

The other cultivators were all terrified. They all retreated into the distance, afraid that they would be pulled inside the black hole.

A Confucius Saint King from among the Guarding Dragon Pavilion tossed a saint book out.

Hundreds of thousands of words flew out of the book. They formed a hundred-foot-wide word territory over Han Qiu and Huang Yanchen.

Clearly, the Confucius Saint King didn't want their battle to affect the cultivators outside.

The Saint Lady looked at the thousands of words floating in the square and then at the Confucius Saint King with the starry mask. She grew thoughtful.

Martial Saint Canglan retreated to the Saint Lady's side. Still furious, she said, “How come Zhang Ruochen changed so much?”

“If you gain something, it means you will lose something,” the Saint Lady said. “If you lose something, it also means you will gain something.”

“What are you saying?” Martial Saint Canglan asked.

“Nothing,” the Saint Lady said. “I just want to tell you that everyone changes. Sometimes, it's because of the environment. Sometimes it's because of time, and sometimes it's forced.”

“You Confucius Way cultivators are just so dramatic and love talking in circles and riddles. Is that fun?”

Martial Saint Canglan didn't feel like continuing to talk with the Saint Lady. She focused on the fight inside the word territory and her eyes narrowed. “The woman beside Zhang Ruochen is so powerful. She's actually on the same level as Huang Yanchen. With her abilities, she should be as well-known as the nine Heirs. How come I've never heard of her before?”

The Saint Lady nodded. “She’s completed the Dark Body and cultivates the Dark Way. Of the nine Heirs in the same realm, only Xue Wuye and Lidi are stronger than her. Plus, both the Dark Body and Dark Way become stronger as her level increases. In the future, when she reaches the Saint King Realm, Xue Wuye and Lidi won’t be able to defeat her unless they make great improvements in Rules of Saintly Way.”

In an instant, Han Qiu and Huang Yanchen had exchanged more than 100 blows within the word territory. The thousands of words used to stabilize the space trembled.

One year ago, when the nine Heirs fought with Zhang Ruochen, they’d received divine power from the Empress and all reached the Absolute Realm in that moment.

After a full year of cultivation, Huang Yanchen had reached the Heaven Pass Realm earlier.

Han Qiu was still in the Absolute Land Realm.

Of course, a deity’s power could only help a cultivator reach the Absolute Land Realm as quickly as possible. Because starting with the Heaven Pass Realm, a Saint’s cultivation was more about the Rules of Saintly Way. Even a deity couldn’t give much help with that.

“Your abilities do impress me. You can actually fight with me for a long time. It seems that you’ve gained a lot by following the empress.” Han Qiu sneered.

Han Qiu’s cultivation was so fast because she cultivated the Dark Way. She could swallow the cultivation of others and convert it into her own power.

Even Zhang Ruochen couldn’t compare with that!

Thus, Han Qiu believed that Huang Yanchen’s own abilities and cultivation speed couldn’t be compared with her.

Huang Yanchen stayed silent. She activated her Holy Qi and fed it into the Chaotic Universe Sword. Brilliant light shone from the sword. With a dozen-meter-long trail of Sword Qi, it cut down.

Han Qiu didn’t take the hit head-on. She moved to the left.

Even though she was as fast as lightning, a strand of her long hair was still cut down.

“You’re looking for death.”

Han Qiu flew up and pointed up with both hands at the same time. “Dead souls and ghosts, listen to me. Gate of the nether world, open.”

Beams of Rules of Darkness formed at her fingertips. They converged into chains and passed through space, connecting with the nether world.

A deep and ghostly door opened slowly.

Hair-rising screams and howls sounded within the ghostly doors. Then a Corpse King in a tattered dragon robe charged out.

The Corpse King’s body was very rotten. The bones in his face and chest were exposed. Icy Qi of death radiated from the bones.

“The Dark Body is indeed powerful. She can actually summon a Corpse King from the nether world.”

“That Corpse King’s abilities can fight a Heaven Pass Saint.”

“Huang Yanchen isn’t a typical Heaven Pass Saint. With her abilities, she can fight a group of people in the same realm. A Heaven Pass Corpse King isn’t a match for her at all.”

...

Han Qiu’s lips curled up. She manipulated more Rules of Darkness and poured it into the ghostly gates.

Instantly, four Corpse Kings and five Ghost Kings charged out of the gates.

This way, there were five Corpse Kings and five Ghost Kings. Each one was like a Heaven Pass cultivator. This meant there were ten Heaven Pass cultivators attacking Huang Yanchen at the same time.

Seeing this, all the cultivators shook their heads. Ten against one in the same realm was a crushing victory. Huang Yanchen would definitely lose.

The Saint Lady also held her breath. She stared at the fight within the word territory. She didn't let out a relieved breath until she saw that Huang Yanchen could actually fend off the five Corpse Kings and five Ghost Kings.

“When the Chaotic Military Lord held the war god competition one year ago,” the Saint Lady said, “how many of the same realm did Wan Zhaoyi fight at once?”

“Nineteen.”

“What about you?” the Saint Lady continued.

Martial Saint Canglan was quiet for a moment. “Nine.”

After pausing, she continued, “There were many restrictions at the competition. I couldn't use my advantage speed at all. If it had been in such a vast battlefield, nine cultivators of the same realm wouldn't have been enough for me at all.”

The Saint Lady chuckled. “If it's on a vast battlefield, Wan Zhaoyi wouldn't only fight 19 with his combat experience. However, a true life-or-death battle has many more variables than a competition. If the enemy Saint prepared to deactivate their saintly source at the start, then even Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to fight 19 of the same realm.”

“You think Zhang Ruochen is even stronger than a crazy man like my brother?” Martial Saint Canglan asked. “Don't you know what it means to fight 19 True Saints by yourself? That scene was so shocking. Anyway, I was fully impressed. Plus, the second place of the Ministry of War is also a genius. Not only has he reached the Peak Realm once in the four realms of Martial Way, he also has an undefeatable body, but he only fought 12. Plus, the higher your realm is, the harder it is to fight more enemies by yourself.”

The Saint Lady didn't want to argue with Martial Saint Canglan. She just smiled and said, “Wan Zhaoyi fighting 19 True Saints at once in the True Saint Realm is indeed powerful. He is already undefeatable in his era.”

Inside the word territory, Huang Yanchen survived 15 minutes under the siege of the five Ghost Kings and five Corpse Kings.



She wasn't defeated, but she had a dozen wounds and was badly injured. It was like she could die at any time.

“To One Sword Technique.”

Clenching her teeth, Huang Yanchen grasped her sword hilt with bloody hands. She continuously poured Holy Qi into the Chaotic Universe Sword. In an instant, the sword released vast destructive Sword Qi.

That move cost all the Holy Qi within her.

Her victory or defeat depended on this strike.

# Chapter 1409 - Defeated Within Three Moves

Chapter 1409: Defeated Within Three Moves

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Huang Yanchen wielded her sword, and a trace of sword Qi cut three Corpse Kings and two Ghost Kings in half.

Huang Yanchen rushed forward, trying to stab Han Qiu in the forehead.

Han Qiu was using all her strength to control the Corpse Kings and Ghost Kings, so it seemed that she couldn't dodge the attack of Huang Yanchen at all.

However, Han Qiu suddenly smiled bizarrely as the sword light got closer.

Whoosh!

A dark phantom that looked exactly like Han Qiu flew out of her body and hit Huang Yanchen.

Huang Yanchen trembled and spit out blood. She bounced away like a kite without its string.

That dark phantom went back to Han Qiu's body.

Han Qiu stopped controlling the Corpse Kings and Ghost Kings, instead, she rushed toward Huang Yanchen and was about to stab Huang Yanchen's neck with her sword. She sneered and said, "My dark dividing self is just as powerful as my original body, isn't it?"

Huang Yanchen stood on the square, bleeding. She closed her eyes and said, "If you want to kill me, do it now."

Han Qiu smiled at Zhang Ruochen smugly and said, “Should I kill her, your highness?”

Everyone at the peak of Saint Wood Mountain looked to Zhang Ruochen.

Even the heavenly kings from the imperial government didn't dare try and save her as Huang Yanchen would definitely be killed by Han Qiu if they failed. Nobody could afford to bear that responsibility, which meant Huang Yanchen's life was totally in Zhang Ruochen's hands now.

Mu Lingxi grabbed Zhang Ruochen's hand, shook her head and said, “No! You can't kill sister Chen.”

Mu Lingxi was worried that Zhang Ruochen would regret killing Huang Yanchen in the future. If someone did something regretful, he or she would spend the rest of the life wallowing in pain and sorrow. She couldn't allow Zhang Ruochen to do something like that.

“Kill? Nobody's going to kill anybody! I haven't said anything yet. Who dares to kill!”

An immortal bird with a cat head walked out of the crowd.

It had a chubby body. It twisted its butt with its wings spread, walking toward Han Qiu and Huang Yanchen.

The eyes of that immortal bird bulged, and it yelled at Han Qiu, “Didn't you hear what I just said? Put down your sword, otherwise, I'll beat you half to death.”

And then, the immortal bird knocked Han Qiu's sword away with its wings.

Han Qiu had originally planned to seize the chance to kill Huang Yanchen once and for all so that Zhang Ruochen's lingering feelings toward her would be gone, yet she was interrupted by a beast who didn't look like any animal.

“Where did you come from? How dare you stop me?”

Han Qiu picked up her sword and swung it toward the immortal bird with a cat head.

Bang!

She didn't manage to hurt the immortal bird with that move at all.

Han Qiu felt that her arms went numb after that. She immediately put her saint sword away and looked to the immortal bird in shock.

The immortal bird smiled and said, "Do you really think you can hurt me?"

"Ugh!"

Han Qiu mobilized her dark power, and dozens of traces of black demonic forces gushed out of her forehead and gathered in her arm, and then, she hit the belly of the immortal bird.

There were many characteristics of dark power. It could swallow, erode, and kill.

However, just as Han Qiu hit the immortal bird's belly, it was only to find out that the immortal bird's feathers started to burn.

Even dark power couldn't penetrate its body.

The immortal bird shook its body and knocked Han Qiu away. It guffawed, "I'm invincible. Do you really think you can hurt me?"

The other monks were all amazed.

Huang Yanchen stared at that immortal bird that was standing in front of her. She found the way it talked resembled that of Blackie too much.

However, its forces were completely different from those of Blackie.

Besides, Blackie was a cat, but this was an owl.

Huang Yanchen heard Blackie transmitting its voice to her. "Obviously, Zhang Ruochen came here to kill Qiu Yu today. Nobody but you stood up and tried to protect him. Are you an idiot?"

Huang Yanchen then confirmed that the immortal bird was Blackie.

She said, “The empress told us before she left that Qiu Yu is the spiritual root of Kunlun’s Field, which makes him the hope of Kunlun’s Field. If Zhang Ruochen kills him, he’ll be executed by the empress without a doubt. I don’t have a choice.”

“Leave that to me.”

Blackie transmitted its voice to Huang Yanchen again.

Blackie looked to Qiu Yu and said, “Come over here, tree.”

Qiu Yu didn’t give a damn about Blackie. He then looked to Huang Yanchen and said, “Lord heir, do you really think I don’t know you still have some lingering feelings toward Zhang Ruochen? I know it was you who ordered the monks from the imperial government not to attack the Sacred dregs, otherwise they wouldn’t have been that arrogant. I suggest you follow the oracle of the empress, otherwise, you know what’ll happen to you if you go against a God.”

Blackie flapped its wings and dashed toward Qiu Yu like a black goose with a cat head. It yelled, “How dare you ignore me? I’ll kill you!”

Qiu Yu looked disdainful. He moved his body and dodged Blackie at a speed faster than an absolute saint.

Blackie didn’t hit Qiu Yu. Instead, it hit a saint ancestor of the Fire Tribe that was standing behind Qiu Yu.

Bang!

That saint ancestor performed handprints seventeen times and hit Blackie’s chest. Blackie was knocked away like an artillery shell into the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Just as Blackie was knocked away, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and disappeared with his Abyss Ancient Sword.

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen showed up right above Qiu Yu and slashed down.

Qiu Yu’s speed was nothing compared to spatial move, so he couldn’t dodge Zhang Ruochen’s sword at all.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen's sword clashed with Qiu Yu's arms, releasing an enormous amount of power and cracking the ground.

Qiu Yu was wearing two arm protections and two hand protections, which warded off the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Martial Saint Canglan was a bit surprised. She said, "Fire God Armor."

The Saint Lady was also a bit surprised as well. She said, "Indeed, but that isn't the complete Fire God Armor, only arm protections and hand protections."

"I asked her majesty to bestow upon me a Fiery God arm protection, yet she didn't even say yes," Martial Saint Canglan said.

The Saint Lady smiled and said, "Qiu Yu has the body of a true god. He's the spiritual root and the hope of Kunlun's Field. Of course, her majesty values him more."

Martial Saint Canglan was a bit upset. She said, "So what? His cultivation is way stronger than Zhang Ruochen's, and he has Fiery God Armor, yet he's still being suppressed by Zhang Ruochen. If there were another seedling of the Divine Trees, he would never have been valued by her majesty like this."

The Saint Lady said, "You've underestimated Qiu Yu. His true god body constitution makes him stronger than Xue Wuye and Lidi, however, his state of mind is indeed his weakness, otherwise..."

"Otherwise what?" Martial Saint Canglan asked.

"Nothing." the Lady Saint smiled.

In the past half a month, Zhang Ruochen had refined part of the pill Qi of Chongling Pill and reached the middle stage of Absolute Ground Realm.

As for Qiu Yu, he had reached the pinnacle stage of Absolute Ground Realm.

"Aren't you supposed to be invincible among those at the same level?" Zhang Ruochen asked coldly while suppressing Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu kneeled on the ground with one knee as he was completely suppressed by the Abyss Ancient Sword. He couldn't even say one word.

Zhang Ruochen was still able to talk while suppressing him, which meant he hadn't used all his strength yet.

Zhang Ruochen then changed his move and hit Qiu Yu's head with the blade.

Bang!

Qiu Yu's head was cracked, and his head caved, then, he bounced away.

Just as Qiu Yu bounced away, Zhang Ruochen hit his belly, and his sword pierced his body, causing him to bleed.

Boom!

Qiu Yu fell to the ground.

However, the Abyss Ancient Sword failed to cut Qiu Yu's body in half as Qiu Yu's backbone seemed to be extremely solid.

Zhang Ruochen immediately understood that Qiu Yu's backbone was the trunk of the Divine Phoenix Tree, and he could only kill it if he cut off the trunk.

Qiu Yu's body had completely turned into wood. He was pressed onto the ground by the Abyss Ancient Sword, and he couldn't move at all.

Two saint ancestors of the Fire Tribe tried to save Qiu Yu, but they were suppressed by Ling Xiu's mind power.

"Isn't the body of a true god invincible? They're both at Absolute Ground Realm, so why did Qiu Yu only ward off three moves of Zhang Ruochen?"

"What do you mean warding off three moves? He didn't ward off any moves."

"Zhang Ruochen was suppressing Qiu Yu the entire time with ease."

...

Qiu Yu couldn't feel more humiliated and furious. He only wanted to hide himself forever. He was the Divine Phoenix Tree, yet he was not only robbed of his fiancé but also defeated by Zhang Ruochen within three moves.

Countless people would laugh at him in the future for that.

Zhang Ruochen knew that he couldn't kill Qiu Yu with the Abyss Ancient Sword, so he put his sword back and picked up Qiu Yu as if he were a dead dog, throwing him into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Zhang Ruochen then stuck the Abyss Ancient Sword into the ground and said, "I'll sacrifice the Divine Phoenix Tree for the heaven and earth."



# Chapter 1410 - Return Of The Empress

Chapter 1410: Return Of The Empress

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Pray to the sky and earth.”

The cultivators of the Sacred stood in all directions and yelled at the same time. The deafening voices filled the entire Mount Tianmu.

Then everyone reached out at once, sending Holy Qi into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Bright golden light shone from within.

If one looked from ten thousand miles away, one would see that the Peakless Mountain had turned entirely golden. A strong beam of power kept seeping out of it.

In an instant, Qiu Yu was returned to his original shape by the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. He turned into a huge flaming divine tree. Faint divine power poured out of the tree, but he still couldn't escape from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Qiu Yu's words of compromise came from within the divine tree. “Zhang Ruochen... Spare my life and I'll listen to you from now on.”

Hearing this, the powerful Saints who'd once been close to Qiu Yu felt disdain.

Even an ordinary Saint had their own reputation and ego, viewing them as more important than their own life.

As the divine parasol tree and the future world spiritual root of Kunlun's Field, Qiu Yu was actually begging his enemy. This was unacceptable for many cultivators.

The world spiritual root wasn't only a medium to connect the World Spirit and the rules of the world. Even more, it represented an entire world's will.

Most of the cultivators present couldn't accept having Qiu Yu represent the will of Kunlun's Field.

"I don't need you to work for me."

Zhang Ruochen spoke coldly from under the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. Then he raised his head and slowly lifted his hands. He prepared to open up the world gates of the Universe World so the Divine Sky-connecting Tree could absorb the parasol tree's power.

But when he looked up, he saw 33 brilliant stars gleaming in the sky.

That was...Chi Yao's Star Soul Constellation.

The other cultivators on the ground also sensed the sparkling constellation in the sky. Their hearts all trembled.

"The Empress... The Empress is returning to Kunlun's Field..."

One Saint Elder of the Fire Tribe was overjoyed. After letting out a long scream, he prostrated himself respectfully on the ground and kowtowed to the constellation. "Empress, a true god."

Even a Saint Elder was kneeling. The other cultivators of the Fire Tribe naturally kowtowed as well.

The next moment, boundless divine might poured out of the 33 stars. They transformed into starlight and fell to the ground, shrouding the land of Peakless Mountain.

"Greetings, Empress!"

"Greetings, true god!"

All the cultivators at the peak of Mount Tianmu were terrified. They prostrated themselves on the ground. No one dared to go

against a deity.

Below the mountain, Shi Qianjue, the Fire Lord, Death Zen Elder, Vice Leader, Murong Yefeng, and the golden Ni who were fighting all stopped. Under the divine might, even they knelt on the ground.

Actually, as long as a deity didn't target a Supreme Saint, they could fight back against the deity with their cultivation and willpower. At least, they could stay upright.

But the Supreme Saints present could all feel that divine might wasn't all that came from the constellation. There was also the anger of a god.

No one was stupid enough to go up against a deity.

Plus, kneeling to a god wasn't embarrassing.

Whoosh!

A beam of seven-colored divine light flew from the 33 stars. They landed above Mount Tianmu and consolidated into Empress Chi Yao's figure.

She stood on a seven-colored cloud. She wore a divine robe and her black hair was piled on her head. She had eyes more beautiful than the stars and she radiated with a mighty and divine aura.

Only one person in this space didn't kneel. It was Zhang Ruochen.

“Chi Yao...”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were bloodshot. He stood on Mount Tianmu, leaning on his sword. He used his strong willpower to go against the divine might.

Unfortunately, his cultivation and Spiritual Power were too weak compared to a god. He couldn't counter Chi Yao at all. His legs kept trembling as if they were about to bend and fall to the ground.

Cold disdain appeared in Empress Chi Yao's eyes as they locked onto Zhang Ruochen. “You actually dared to destroy

the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. You are so courageous.”

Every divine sound that traveled through strengthened the divine might that Zhang Ruochen suffered from.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen roared. A decisive look appeared in his eyes. He swung his sword and with a poof, broke his own two legs.

Thud.

Without the support of his legs, Zhang Ruochen fell heavily to the ground.

All the cultivators present were impressed inside, but they also laughed inwardly that Zhang Ruochen was so stupid.

Didn't he see that the Supreme Saints were all prostrated on the ground? It was not embarrassing to kneel before a deity. Why must he break his own legs?

Inside the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, Qiu Yu was ecstatic. He laughed, saying, “Zhang Ruochen, I told you before that fighting against the entire Kunlun's Field is death. Now, the Empress has returned, you and those crazy Sacred rebels will all die. Haha...”

Qiu Yu was laughing, but halfway through, he couldn't laugh anymore.

He saw that someone else was still standing beside Zhang Ruochen, having fended off the Empress' divine might.

More accurately, she wasn't a person but a beautiful Ghost King.

There was a blood moon's print on her forehead. She extended a snowy-white finger and pressed lightly on Zhang Ruochen's legs.

In that instant, Zhang Ruochen's broken legs were reconnected.

He didn't feel the divine might anymore and stood back up. It was clear that Ghost King Bloodmoon was helping him block Chi Yao's divine might, so he could remain standing.

“She can be so composed before a god and protect Zhang Ruochen. What kind of existence is this?”

“No wonder Zhang Ruochen dared to destroy the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and attack Peakless Mountain. He has strong support behind him.”

“That can’t be a god too, right?”

...

The imperial court, Sacred followers, Demonic Sect, Fire Tribe... All cultivators present were incredulous. They all looked at Ghost King Bloodmoon, trying to guess her identity.

Ghost King Bloodmoon met Empress Chi Yao’s eyes. Two gusts of divine might interwove in the space between them. Zhang Ruochen could see clearly that cracks had actually appeared in the space. It was about to turn into spatial fragments.

After the test, they didn’t attack further. Instead, they pulled back their divine might.

“I thought you would die in the Heaven World,” Ghost King Bloodmoon said. “I didn’t think that you would return to Kunlun’s Field so soon. It seems that the saintly road has already been paved between Kunlun’s Field and Heaven World.”

Empress Chi Yao stepped on the seven-colored cloud with 33 stars above her head. “Why are you protecting Zhang Ruochen?” she asked.

Ghost King Bloodmoon’s voice was cool. “I’m naturally protecting him because I see his potential. How about you give him to me?”

“Impossible,” Empress Chi Yao said.

“What if I insist on saving him?” Ghost King Bloodmoon asked.

“This is Kunlun’s Field and my Star Soul Constellation is in the sky. It can provide me with unlimited divine power. Are you sure you want to start a divine war with me for a Saint?”

Ghost King Bloodmoon was fearless. “Once we begin a divine war, I can promise that all beings within one million miles will die completely. There are a lot of Saints and Supreme Saints gathered here, right? If they all die, what will you use to compete in the Heaven World? You’ve already been there. You should know that our power isn’t important there at all. What’s important is their abilities.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon and Empress Chi Yao both had their concerns, so they didn’t start a divine war. They could only compromise and agree to each other’s conditions, signing a divine contract.

Of course, only they could hear their conversation. The outsiders didn’t know what they were discussing at all.

After signing the contract, Ghost King Bloodmoon finally said to Zhang Ruochen, “Bring the pill and alcohol old guys and go to the Heaven World with me right now.”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows. “No. I must bring all of the Sacred into the Universe World first and then leave with you.”

“That’s impossible. I’ve already signed a divine contract with that Empress of yours,” Ghost King Bloodmoon said. “I can only save your one life.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were determined. “Chi Yao will never spare them if they remain in Kunlun’s Field. If I don’t send them into the Universe World, I’ll never go with you.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon grew unhappy. “Zhang Ruochen,” she said coldly, “you should understand something. Before a deity, no mortal has any voice. You can only submit, unless you wish to die here.”

“So what if I die? So what if I live?” Zhang Ruochen seemed indifferent.

“If you choose death, you are undoubtedly a coward. If you choose life, you at least have a fighting chance.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon walked leisurely to Lord Mingjiang. While speaking, she flattened her jade-like hands into a flat palm and cut down on Lord Mingjiang’s neck.

“You... What are you doing? Are you forcing me?”

Zhang Ruochen roared in anger. He tightened his grip and lifted the Abyss Ancient Sword. He rushed toward Ghost King Bloodmoon.

But he only took one step before he couldn't move anymore. He couldn't stop Ghost King Bloodmoon at all. He could only watch as she cut off Lord Mingjiang's head.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen truly understood what helplessness was like. He'd never wished more for the power to fight against a god.

Ghost King Bloodmoon was very cold. She walked toward Mu Lingxi now and flattened her hand into a palm sword again.

Roar!

Zhang Ruochen howled and his entire body shook. He wanted to escape from Ghost King Bloodmoon's restraint, but he couldn't.

Ghost King Bloodmoon's palm didn't fall down. She just placed it on Mu Lingxi's neck and said indifferently, “Remember the helplessness you feel at this moment. It's not enough to have the heart and courage to go against a god. You also need the ability.

“Before destiny, everyone is a chess piece. If you wish to live and protect your family, friends, and lover, you must make yourself stronger and become the most useful chess piece. Now, you are a pretty good chess piece to me, so you are qualified to speak with me and have my protection.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon walked back to Lord Mingjiang and put his head back.

Lord Mingjiang instantly turned into a complete body again. Fear colored his eyes. “Greetings, true god.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon didn't even spare him a glance. She continued speaking to Zhang Ruochen. “Unwilling to accept this, right? There's no helping it. This is how cruel reality is. If you don't want to be someone else's chess piece, you must continuously become stronger. When you're strong enough,

you might be able to jump out of the chess board and become one of the players. Now, do you choose life or death? Do you choose to be a coward or to have a fighting chance?"

Zhang Ruochen stared coldly at Ghost King Bloodmoon without speaking.

Ghost King Bloodmoon continued, "Don't worry. Empress Chi Yao can't kill the cultivators of Sacred Central Empire, because she must gather all the power above the Half-Saint Realm in Kunlun's Field to do something. This is also why she wouldn't let you bring all the Sacred cultivators into the Universe World. That is her bottom line."

"What is she doing?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ghost King Bloodmoon didn't keep it a secret. "The same thing that I want you to do," she answered frankly.

Zhang Ruochen finally realized that what the Moon Goddess wanted him to do was even more important than he'd expected. In that case, he had more room for negotiation.

Even if all lives were only chess pieces before a god, Zhang Ruochen still had to save the lives of the Sacred Central Empire cultivators. This was his responsibility.



# Chapter 1411 - Heavenly River and Merit Star

Chapter 1411: Heavenly River and Merit Star

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ghost King Bloodmoon made another godly pact with Empress Chi Yao as Zhang Ruochen insisted.

Based on the new pact, monks from Sacred Central Empire who had become half saints needed to stay in Kunlun's Field and follow Chi Yao's orders.

Certainly, Empress Chi Yao also conceded that she wouldn't target or kill them on purpose.

Zhang Ruochen also spent another day bringing all the monks who hadn't reached half-saint level into the Universe World.

"Your highness, we from Guarding Dragon Pavilion have special missions, so we can't get into Universe World in the first place."

After finishing that, the Vice Leader left Peakless Mountain with the members from Guarding Dragon Pavilion.

"Your highness, you've already tried your best. You don't need to feel guilty. We'll definitely come back if you become a God in the future, and we'll follow you forever."

"Empress Chi Yao is a God, so she will never break her promise. No need to be worried about us, your highness."

The previous officials of the Sacred all came to say goodbye to Zhang Ruochen.

In the end, only Blackie, Mu Lingxi, the Crazy Alcoholic, Gu Songzi, and Ghost King Bloodmoon stayed.

Blackie patted Zhang Ruochen's shoulders and said, "You're only a saint, yet two Gods negotiated because of you. You're the first person in history who has accomplished that. Nothing to be upset about."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed, and he said, "I'll have to become a God, no matter what it takes. There's no point living if I can't become a chess player."

Before, Zhang Ruochen only had one purpose in life, to seek vengeance on Chi Yao.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had another, which was to control his fate and become an equal player against Gods.

The Sun and Moon Crystal Coffin gradually opened, and white light gushed out of it. A goddess whose skin was glowing walked out. She was unbelievably beautiful.

The light rain pouring from the sky covered her body, making it dim.

"Moon Goddess."

the Crazy Alcoholic, Gu Songzi, Ghost King Bloodmoon, Mu Lingxi and Blackie all bowed toward her.

Zhang Ruochen stayed silent for a while, but then, he also greeted her. "Moon Goddess."

He couldn't blame Moon Goddess for what had happened today as nobody had expected Chi Yao to be back this quickly.

Moon Goddess had only recovered part of her godly power, so she was still pretty feeble. She'd done a great job signing a pact with Chi Yao and saving Zhang Ruochen and the monks from Sacred Central Empire.

She was the only one in Kunlun's Field who could balance Chi Yao's power.

Moon Goddess had done her part no matter what.

Moon Goddess was floating above Sun and Moon Crystal Coffin. She looked almost exactly the same as Ghost King

Bloodmoon, but she looked more beautiful and aloof as if she didn't belong to this world.

Even the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi didn't dare look at her and they found it blasphemous just looking at her a bit longer.

Moon Goddess looked to Ghost King Bloodmoon and pointed at her forehead.

Whoosh!

The ghost body of Ghost King Bloodmoon was dispersed and turned into ghost Qi, going into the finger of Moon Goddess. Obviously, there was no need for Ghost King Bloodmoon to be here anymore.

“Let's head to Heaven World now.”

Moon Goddess flicked her fingers, and then, moonlight covered Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi, Blackie, the Crazy Alcoholic, and Gu Songzi.

After the moonlight disappeared, they had already vanished from Saint Wood Mountain.

All the disciples from Demonic Sect changed while groveling on the ground. “Safe trip, Moon Goddess.”

“Safe trip, Moon Goddess.”

...

A hundred thousand years ago, Kunlun's Field was a subsidiary mortal realm of Heaven World, so there was always an ancient saint road connecting the two worlds.

Gods were able to reopen the ancient saint road using their godly power.

Empress Chi Yao went to Heaven World to negotiate with other Gods a year ago.

The new saint road between Kunlun's Field and Heaven World was built based on the old saint road.

Just as Moon Goddess led Zhang Ruochen and the others waiting outside, the entry to the saint road was also opened.

Half saints, saints, saint kings and supreme saints from Kunlun's Field all entered the saint road, heading toward Heaven World.

Unless they were great beings with very special missions, the most powerful monk in Kunlun's Field was only at the Ninth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm.

Heaven World was deep in the universe, and it was at the center of all the other worlds. It was incredibly far from Kunlun's Field. It would take a normal saint from Kunlun's Field at least a hundred years to get there.

There was a tumbling Heavenly River around Heaven World, and inside the river were bizarre rules flowing.

Heaven World was circular, and there were only stars floating around Heavenly River, making a simple dyke.

At this moment, Moon Goddess, Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi, the Crazy Alcoholic, and Gu Songzi were all standing outside Heavenly River on a star that had a diameter of five thousand miles.

Carved on the star were lots of sophisticated formation inscriptions, and inside the metal palaces and formation towers lived many saint soldiers and saint generals.

The Crazy Alcoholic was a saint king who had seen a lot, yet his eyes popped looking at everything around him. "Gosh! There's a river floating in the universe, and the river is too wide for us to see the other side."

Moon Goddess said, "This is the river that protects Heaven World. It's called Heavenly River, which is one hundred and eighty thousand miles wide. The water inside is called weak water. Don't even try to cross the river, otherwise, you'll be killed instantly.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm, but he was amazed deep down.

What kind of power makes Heavenly River float around Heaven World? And what kind of a place is Heaven World?

Whoosh!

A giant water pillar gushed out of Heavenly River, and then, the water pillar formed a giant wearing armor. Godly might spread from his body.

The giant that was formed by weak water smiled. "It's been a hundred thousand years, and you're finally back to Heaven World. Congratulations, Moon Goddess."

Moon Goddess nodded and said, "Give me a heavenly boat. I need to cross Heavenly River."

"Wait a second, Moon Goddess. I need to check the identities of the others first."

The weak water giant took out a mirror and turned it toward Zhang Ruochen and the others. The light pillar fell on Zhang Ruochen in the end.

The weak water giant put back his mirror and said, "Moon Goddess, the saint standing behind you has a world in his body. If I let him in, I'll break the heavenly rules. I can't bear the consequences."

Moon Goddess turned around and looked to Zhang Ruochen. She said, "The monks in a world can't go to Heaven World if there's no God in the world."

Zhang Ruochen knew what Moon Goddess meant. He opened his arms and closed his eyes.

Moon Goddess pointed at Zhang Ruochen's head to seal his Universe World with her godly power.

"Can he enter Heaven World after I seal his world?" Moon Goddess asked.

The weak water giant said, "Based on the rules of Heaven World, all creatures need to put their names on the 'Merit Record' first."

"They'll follow the rules," Moon Goddess said.

"Thanks for understanding," the weak water giant said.

Every mortal realm of Heaven World had a 'Merit Record,' which was stored in Merit Star.

Merit Star was at the edge of Heavenly River. It wasn't a circular planet. Instead, it was shaped into levels, and on each level was a 'Merit Record.'

There were eight thousand nine hundred and forty levels of Merit Star, making it eight thousand nine hundred and forty miles tall.

Each level was one mile tall.

On the first level was carved 'Kunlun's Field,' and there was only one name: 'Chi Yao.'

Gu Songzi rushed toward the first level and prepared to write his name on it.

Moon Goddess said, "You've been abandoned by the God of Kunlun's Field, so you can't write your name on 'Merit Record' of Kunlun's Field."

Moon Goddess walked to the fourth level and stopped there.

She saw 'Guanghan Field' on the level. She frowned and said, "'Guanghan Field' has fallen to the fourth level already? What happened to Guanghan Field in the past hundred thousand years? It seems I've done the proper preparations."

Zhang Ruochen squinted and asked, "There're eighty-nine hundred and forty mortal fields of Heaven World?"

"That's right," Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "The more merits the world earns, the higher it'll be on the level? Is that why Kunlun's Field is on the last level, because it has no merits yet?"

"Correct," Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Will our merits be recorded under Guanghan Field if we put our name on the 'Merit Record' of Guanghan Field?"

Moon Goddess said, "Obviously."

Zhang Ruochen said, "What are merits for? They're not just for ranking, are they? Does the thing you ask me to do have something to do with merits?"

Moon Goddess said, “Put your name on the ‘Merit Record’ first, then follow me to Heaven World. You’ll understand in the future that the merits are thousands of times more important than you could possibly imagine.”

Zhang Ruochen and the others could only put their names on ‘Merit Record’ after being allowed by a God, so they had to join Guanghan Field.

After putting their names on the Merit Record, Blackie discovered something interesting. It said, “There’s a ranking on each level, and the guy who’s ranked first on ‘Saint Merits Rank,’ Wu Hao, has four million, seven hundred thousand merits already.”

The Crazy Alcoholic yelled, “The person who’s ranked first on ‘Saint King Merits Rank’ has three point seven billion merits. What do these merits mean?”

Moon Goddess explained after seeing them surprised, “Merits represent your status in Heaven World, and they also determine how many resources you can have. ‘Merits Rank of Guanghan Field’ doesn’t mean anything. If you can get yourself to the ‘Merits Rank of Heaven World,’ that’ll mean you’re renowned across all the fields.”

Moon Goddess took a look at Zhang Ruochen and said, “If you want to become the chess player, you need to get yourself to the ‘Saint Merits Rank’ of Heaven World first, after which some Gods of Heaven World will want to recruit you.

“Certainly, there’re talents from almost ten thousand fields here. Many of them have bodies of true gods, God’s destiny, and Five Elements Chaotic Bodies. Some talents can comprehend Nine Ancient Ways. It’s not an easy task for you to make it to ‘Saint Merits Rank’ of Heaven World.”

# Chapter 1412 - Supreme Saint Manjian

Chapter 1412: Supreme Saint Manjian

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Riding a Levitation Boat, the Moon Goddess brought Zhang Ruochen's group across the Heavenly River and finally reached the legendary center of the thousand worlds—the Heaven World.

The Guanghan Divine Palace was situated at the peak of a white jade-like divine mountain.

This mountain was called the Moon Goddess Mountain. It hovered thousands of feet in the sky and was shrouded in layers of saintly mist. As the Moon Goddess returned, the mist quickly scattered. Brilliant divine light shone from the Guanghan Divine Palace.

The Moon Goddess was telling the entire Heaven World that after 100,000 years, she'd returned.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's group stood on the ground and looked up at the crescent-shaped Moon Goddess Mountain.

A huge beam of Saintly Way aura flew over from the distance and landed near the Moon Goddess Mountain. It bowed at the Guanghan Divine Palace and announced, "The Scorpion Beast Emperor of Guanghan Field greets the Moon Goddess. Welcome back to the Heaven World."

Then the Scorpion Beast Emperor turned into its human form and walked into the Guanghan Divine Palace.



Gu Songzi's eyes were solemn and he tsked. "The 62nd Supreme Saint. Guanghan Field's heritage is too scary. Can it really be fourth to last of all the worlds?"

The Crazy Alcoholic took quite a hit too. "If you add all the humans and savage beasts of Kunlun's Field, there won't be more than 40 Supreme Saints. It's probably only half of Guanghan Field. Ah! A Saint King can stir up a storm in Kunlun's Field, but after coming to Heaven World, I realize I'm nothing."

Zhang Ruochen was quite calm instead. "Didn't you notice? The entire Heaven World is filled with heavy Spiritual Qi. Under Moon Goddess Mountain, there's even faint Divine Qi. This way, it must be easier to reach the Saint Realm in Heaven World, and easier to reach the Supreme Saint Realm."

"Correct," Blackie said. "Compared to Heaven World, the resources and environment of Kunlun's Field are too impoverished. Those who can reach the Supreme Saint Realm must possess strong willpower, fate Qi, and wisdom. I hypothesize that if the Saints of Kunlun's Field come to Heaven World, they'll definitely improve vastly in a short time. The extraordinary figures stuck in the Pre-Supreme Saint Realm will definitely have a breakthrough."

...

Around two hours later, the Supreme Saints of Guanghan Field walked out of the divine palace. They flew out as beams of saintly light.

Only Supreme Saint Manjian flew to the ground, appearing before Zhang Ruochen's group.

Supreme Saint Manjian was a human around 2.2 meters tall. His entire body was covered with steel-like muscles and he had a thick beard.

Even though he'd collected his saintly might, the aura that he released subconsciously still gave Zhang Ruochen's group quite a lot of pressure.

Sword Saint Manjian studied Zhang Ruochen. A smile appeared in his eyes and he nodded. "So, you have the Five-

Elements Chaotic Body and four Peak Realms. No wonder an Absolute Land Saint can be valued by the Moon Goddess too.”

“Greetings, Supreme Saint Manjian.”

Zhang Ruochen, Gu Songzi, the Crazy Alcoholic, Mu Lingxi, and Blackie all bowed respectfully to Supreme Saint Manjian.

Supreme Saint Manjian knew that the Moon Goddess valued Zhang Ruochen, so he didn't act like an arrogant Supreme Saint. Smiling casually, he said, “Zhang Ruochen, the Moon Goddess wishes for you to cultivate with me from now on. Are you willing?”

“Of course,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Cultivating with a Supreme Saint was a dream for any cultivator. If Zhang Ruochen wanted to get stronger, he naturally needed guidance like this.

Supreme Saint Manjian was always observing Zhang Ruochen. Seeing that he could be so dignified even before a Supreme Saint and remain calm after learning that he could cultivate with a Supreme Saint, Manjian was impressed.

This one had potential.

Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and Mu Lingxi left Moon Goddess Mountain with Supreme Saint Manjian. As for Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic, the Moon Goddess had other plans.

The rules of Heaven World were countless times stronger than Kunlun's Field. The structures of space and material were much more stable too. Thus, even a Half-Saint was only a bit stronger than a regular person here.

A Saint was much stronger than a Half-Saint, but they still couldn't fly.

Supreme Saint Manjian wrapped Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and Mu Lingxi with his own Holy Qi. He flew nonstop for hundreds of thousands of miles. They came to a red mountain range and stopped at a mountaintop with thick Holy Qi.

“This is my saint territory,” Supreme Saint Manjian said. “It's called Red Dragon Saint Territory.”

“How big is the Red Dragon Saint Territory?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Supreme Saint Manjian chuckled loudly. “In the Heaven World, every saint territory is the same size. They’re all 30,000 miles long and wide. As long as you reach the Supreme Saint Realm, you can have a saint territory as your own land.”

“Each Supreme Saint only has 30,000 miles no matter how strong they are?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

“Yes.”

“Then how big is a god’s territory?”

Sword Saint Manjian laughed loudly again. “The rules here are very restrictive for gods, so gods cannot have territories in Heaven World. Only Supreme Saints can, so we have some voice before gods. As for Half-Saints, Saints, and Saint Kings, a god won’t even pay attention to them. But you’re an exception. The Moon Goddess values you greatly.”

It suddenly made sense to Zhang Ruochen. “I understand! The more Supreme Saints a world has, the more cultivation lands they can have in the Heaven World, allowing them to receive more resources, correct?”

“Yes and no,” Supreme Saint Manjian said. “Even though each Supreme Saint has territories of the same size, they also differ in fertility. Stronger Supreme Saints can have richer territories and have hundreds or thousands of times more resources than barren lands.

“Work hard on cultivating! With your body, you’ll definitely be a powerful Supreme Saint when you reach the realm. By then, you can take up the top saint territory and possess the top resources. Even a god would want your help.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were extremely sharp. The thirst in his heart grew stronger. “What exactly does the Moon Goddess want me to do?” he asked again.

Sword Saint Manjian shook his head. “The Moon Goddess didn’t tell me. But not too long after, there will indeed be a big matter. You might be able to help. Your realm is still too low.

Work on cultivating first and try to reach the Heaven Pass Realm as soon as possible.”

With that, Supreme Saint Manjian took out a saint jade badge. He gave it to Zhang Ruochen, saying, “You don’t have any merits now, so you can’t enter many cultivation lands. If you use my saint jade badge, you can at least walk freely through the Red Dragon Saint Territory.”

Zhang Ruochen grasped the badge. He could feel the strong Supreme Saint might inside. If not for his strong willpower, he probably would’ve fallen to the ground when he touched the badge.

Clearly, Supreme Saint Manjian was testing Zhang Ruochen again.

If he wasn’t able to hold the badge steadily, he wouldn’t be qualified to use it.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen could hold the badge confidently, Supreme Saint Manjian was shocked inwardly. He nodded and then left the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

The Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land was the cultivation land that Supreme Saint Manjian gave Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie yelped in excitement. “Heaven World is great. Us three can just have a saint land. This would be unimaginable in Kunlun’s Field.”

Mu Lingxi had a happy smile too. She fluttered her lashes. “It’s not because of you. Why are you so excited? Guanghan Field only values Zhang Ruochen.”

“I don’t want to talk to you. I need to count how many saint medicines and treasures the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land has.” Blackie unfurled its wings. Fire radiated out of its body and it flew up, rushing into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen made a noise of confusion.

Mu Lingxi also widened her pretty eyes. “Blackie can actually fly? Is it really only a Saint?”

“Wait until it returns. Then we can ask it slowly.”

Zhang Ruochen had many questions that he wanted to ask Blackie.

But on the way to Heaven World, Zhang Ruochen's spirits had been low. He'd always been worrying over the safety of the Sacred Central Empire, so he didn't ask.

Now, Zhang Ruochen worked on clearing the negative emotions in his mind. His desire grew stronger. He only wanted to focus on cultivation.

Thus, he entered the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land and immediately sat on the ground. He activated all his Holy Qi and focused on refining the Pill Spirit of the Spirit-Charging Pill.

To go from the beginning to middle of the Absolute Land Realm, Zhang Ruochen had only refined one-tenth of the Pill Spirit. According to his calculations, he could reach the pinnacle of the realm if he refined all of the Pill Spirit.

When Supreme Saint Manjian returned to the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion, he immediately issued a saint order. "One of the 12 lands of the Red Dragon Saint Territory, Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land, belongs to Zhang Ruochen starting today. All Saints and Half-Saints of Guanghan Field must receive permission from Zhang Ruochen to cultivate in the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land."

After the order was issued, all the cultivators in the Red Dragon Saint Territory were alarmed. They were all guessing where the lord of the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land was from. How come they'd never heard his name before?

When did such a lord appear in Guanghan Field?

A middle-aged woman in the True Saint Realm had a sword on her back. She walked quickly into the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion. Bowing to Supreme Saint Manjian, she said, "Reporting to the Supreme Saint, the Chaisang Saint Territory to the south of the Red Dragon Saint Territory was conquered by a Supreme Saint, turning it into their territory."

Supreme Saint Manjian narrowed his eyes. "Chaisang Saint Territory has always had no owner. Now that it's been taken

over by someone else, we won't be able to enter it to pick medicine at will. Go check which Supreme Saint has taken up the land."

"It has already been investigated. It's a human Supreme Saint from Kunlun's Field, Kong Lanyou," the True Saint said.

"When I visited Moon Goddess, I heard that the various Saints of Kunlun's Field would enter the Heaven World," Supreme Saint Manjian muttered to himself. "I didn't think that they'd come so quickly."

A moment later, another True Saint walked in. "Reporting to the Supreme Saint. The Tianshi Saint Territory, west of the Red Dragon Saint Territory, has been taken over by Shi Qianjue, human Supreme Saint of Kunlun's Field."

"Reporting to the Supreme Saint. The Kuli Saint Territory, north of the Red Dragon Saint Territory, has been taken over by Ling Xiu, human Supreme Saint of Kunlun's Field."

Hearing these three pieces of news, Supreme Saint Manjian smiled wryly. "The three ownerless saint territories closest to the Red Dragon Saint Territory have been taken over. It seems that the Moon Goddess guessed correctly. The Saints of Kunlun's Field really were arranged to our region. There's a new world now. From now on, the Six Shatuo Worlds should be known as the Seven Shatuo Worlds."

# Chapter 1413 - Blackie's Secret

Chapter 1413: Blackie's Secret

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen stayed in Yuanxu Mountain Holy Land to refine for a month, and he finally refined the pill Qi of Chongling Saint Pill completely.

His cultivation reached pinnacle Absolute Ground Realm easily.

Zhang Ruochen tried to reach Heaven Pass Realm, but he didn't succeed.

The gap between Absolute Ground Realm and Heaven Pass Realm was like the gap between the heavens and earth. Zhang Ruochen could feel that he was about to touch the heavens, but there was still something preventing him.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and thought, How am I supposed to reach Heaven Pass Realm?

It was not very easy to make a breakthrough after becoming a saint.

Martial Saint Canglan was also stuck in pinnacle Absolute Ground Realm before, and she made it to Heaven Pass Realm after fighting immortal vampires in Northern Territory.

He had been through many more fights of life or death than Martial Saint Canglan, so his understanding of saintly way was far superior to that of someone in the Heaven Pass Realm, so it should be very easy for him to make it to Heaven Pass Realm.

Why did he fail?

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen smelled some fragrance. He raised his head and saw Mu Lingxi ride beside him.

“This is the Calming Tea I made. Do you want to try it?”

Mu Lingxi handed the jade cup over to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Are you afraid that I’ll go mad?”

“No.”

Mu Lingxi’s eyes popped, and she said, “This is Calming Tea, and I got the ingredients from Blackie. I picked the leaves from six kinds of saint pills and spent three days making it using the water from Saint Spring. It not only has calming effects but can also improve your cultivation.”

“Only Heaven World has so many resources. On the contrary, it’s almost impossible to find all six of these saint pills in Kunlun’s Field.”

Mu Lingxi knew that Zhang Ruochen’s enemies were almighty, and that he was bearing stress that was unfathomable to others. If it were her, she would’ve given up a long time ago.

Actually, Mu Lingxi was really worried that Zhang Ruochen might go mad.

Zhang Ruochen surely knew where Mu Lingxi was coming from. He smiled and said, “Let’s share such great tea.”

Mu Lingxi was exhilarated seeing Zhang Ruochen smile. “You first.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the cup, finished half of it, and gave it to Mu Lingxi.

Mu Lingxi finished the rest of the Calming Tea, and suddenly, she seemed to have recalled something. She said, “Some of the half saints and saints from Guanghan Field want to join Yuanxu Mountain Holy Land. Should we admit them?”

“Even saints want to join us?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised.



Mu Lingxi said, “You’ve been refining by yourself, so you certainly don’t know how important a saint land is. Let me give you a lecture on it.”

“By all means.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want Mu Lingxi to be worried, so he tried to act as relaxed as possible.

Mu Lingxi sat down across from Zhang Ruochen, and she covered her legs with the white dress. “There’re only fourteen holy lands in Red Dragon Holy Domain, and each of them was built on a saint meridian. They’re the best places for refining.

“One of the largest saint lands is owned by Supreme Saint Manjian, and he built Red Dragon Saint Palace.

“Only saint kings are qualified to be the owners of saint lands, and under each saint king, there’ll be dozens of, or even hundreds of saints and a huge group of half saints.

“Which is why the refining resources are very scarce in other saint lands, and naturally, many saints and half saints want to join Yuanxu Mountain Holy Land.”

Saint lands were nurtured by saint meridians, so the saint Qi inside was thick. Saint springs could be born inside the mud, and they would breed saint pills, saint stones, and saint jades.

All these resources were what half saints and saints craved.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “How many saint kings follow Supreme Saint Manjian?”

“Fifteen.”

Mu Lingxi stuck out her tongue and smiled. “Are you surprised?”

“Not really,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Mu Ling said, “Even Moon Worship Demonic Sect, the head of all the seven ancient sects, only has several saint kings. Are you really not surprised at all?”

“The refining environment here is more than ten times better than that in Kunlun’s Field. I expected a lot more than fifteen saint kings.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Mu Lingxi, the senior sister who was slightly older than him. However, she always looked like a teenage girl, and she looked exquisite when she smiled as if she were his junior sister.

Mu Lingxi blushed and said, "What are you looking at?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "I'm thinking about why I would have trespassed on Peakless Mountain to break up the wedding on the seventh day. That was too impulsive and reckless, and that didn't even seem like me."

"Then why?"

Mu Linxi was a bit nervous.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, shook his head and said, "Lingxi, you're very gifted, and you have the complete ice phoenix ancient saint body. You're destined to achieve greatness in the future. Do you want me to find you a great master?"

Mu Lingxi was smart enough to understand what Zhang Ruochen meant. "Do you want to send me away? Don't even think about it. I was supposed to marry Qiu Yu, the spiritual root of Kunlun's Field. I was supposed to dominate the world, and now you're going to leave me behind after seizing me?"

Zhang Ruochen looked serious and said, "My enemy is a God. If you follow me, you might end very badly. Are you sure you don't want to think about it?"

"No need to think about it. I won't be able to marry anyone anymore," Mu Lingxi said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "If you can't find someone to marry, then nobody else can."

"It's not about what I want, it's that no one dares marry me. What if you come and snatch me again?" Mu Lingxi said, determined to stick with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was rendered speechless. He said, "No matter. Just refine with me from now on. You'll be in charge of Yuanxu Mountain Saint Land, and you can use all the refining resources in the holy land. As for the saints and half saints

who want to join us, you never know their true intentions, so you don't need to give a damn about them.”

After all the arrangements, Zhang Ruochen took off for Red Dragon Saint Palace to ask Supreme Saint Manjian about refining. He wanted to know what he was supposed to do to make it to Heaven Pass Realm.

Red Dragon Saint Palace was ten thousand miles away from Yuanxu Mountain Saint Ground.

Ten thousand miles was nothing in Kunlun's Field. It'd take Zhang Ruochen less than half an hour to get there.

And it would be quicker if he used spatial move.

However, he wasn't able to do that in Heaven World. Zhang Ruochen had tested it and found that his speed couldn't even reach one-third of the speed of sound here, yet he was originally as fast as absolute saints.

The space structure in Heaven World was incredibly steady, so Zhang Ruochen couldn't even perform spatial move. Even if he used all his strength, he could only move to around ten feet away.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen asked Blackie to fly him to Red Dragon Saint Palace.

There was a large group of half saints and dozens of saints gathering outside Yuanxu Mountain Saint Land. As they saw Zhang Ruochen riding Blackie, they started to talk.

“That has got to be the owner of Yuanxu Mountain Holy Land. Can't believe he's so young.”

“He's riding an owl saint beast. He's got to be somebody.”

Hearing the term ‘owl saint beast,’ Blackie was indignant. It shook its body and almost dived. It yelled, “I'm an immortal bird.”

Whoosh!

Blackie's body bulged, and fire came out, releasing stronger and stronger saintly way forces.

The half saints and saints were all intimidated.

They only started to talk again after Blackie and Zhang Ruochen had disappeared. “What an incredible owl saint beast. Is it a saint king?”

“The owner of Yuanxu Mountain Saint Land has got to be someone big if even his ride is a saint king. Perhaps he’s a child of Supreme Saint Manjian.”

...

Zhang Ruochen said while sitting on Blackie’s back, “Are you an owl? Or a cat? Or an immortal bird?”

“Of course, I am the invincible immortal bird. If it weren’t for Xumi, I wouldn’t have become like this,” Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What happened to you?”

Blackie said, “I used to be an immortal bird, but a hundred thousand years ago, that Xumi sealed my body in Yin and Yang Ocean and made the weapon spirit of the Universe Spiritual Map using my saint soul.

“I don’t know what kind of kinky things Xumi was into, but he made the weapon spirit into the shape of a cat.

“You know that when immortal birds are dying, we can choose to reincarnate, during which our body will be burnt into ashes and we can form any kind of body we want after that.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Are you saying you were thinking about a body that was half immortal bird and half cat?”

“Absolutely not.”

Blackie said, “I wanted to form the most overbearing immortal bird body. Unfortunately, I failed to perfectly control my mind and became something like this.”

“It’s all Xumi’s fault, making me be a cat for a hundred thousand years. Otherwise I wouldn’t have formed a cat head in the end.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “What about the saintly way forces? When you release them, the saint might is stronger than that of supreme saints.”

“I’ve always been very powerful and omnipotent,” Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Really? Then let’s have a fight. If I defeat you, then you’ll be my ride forever. How about that?”

Blackie felt a bit scared as it didn’t dare fight Zhang Ruochen. It said, “Okay! To tell you the truth, I was hit by that Dragon Sun Moon Mix, and there’s a leftover force of the godly weapon left in my body. Even after I was reincarnated, I still couldn’t dissolve the force of that godly weapon, so the power in my body is in chaos.

“When I refine the leftover force of that godly weapon and control it, I’ll revert back to my pinnacle state. I’ll be able to kill hundreds of beings like Supreme Saint Manjian.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Who’s that blonde-haired man with dragon horns?”

Blackie said, “That’s a person of taboo, and he’s not someone we can mess with. I managed to escape Yin and Yang Ocean because he didn’t want to kill anyone, otherwise, anyone who entered that place would have been killed.”

“Anyone?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Right, anyone.”

Blackie said, “I remember Xumi said that Kunlun’s Field was ranked top ten on the ‘Thousand Field Merits Rank’ a hundred thousand years ago, and it had many Gods guarding the field, much more powerful than Guanghan Field.

“I didn’t even know about Heaven World before, and I didn’t know what the rank means until now.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked, and he said, “Kunlun’s Field was ranked top ten a hundred thousand years ago? How powerful was it?”

Blackie said, “Which is why there’s actually a lot in Kunlun’s Field you don’t know about. There’s a lot of forbidden stuff and places. Yin and Yang Ocean is one of them.”

After half a day, Zhang Ruo Chen and Blackie arrived in Red Dragon Saint Palace.

# Chapter 1414 - Destruction Of Another Great World

Chapter 1414: Destruction Of Another Great World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Using the saint jade badge, Zhang Ruochen easily met Supreme Saint Manjian's saint soul body and told him what had happened.

The saint soul body was hundreds of feet tall. As if made up of Holy Qi, the aura it radiated was just as terrifying as his true body.

After hearing Zhang Ruochen's explanation, Supreme Saint Manjian had a shocked expression. "You never had a teacher before?"

"I did, but I haven't seen him in a long time," Zhang Ruochen said. "I've been studying by myself."

"I see."

Supreme Saint Manjian seemed to understand something. "You might not know, but after a Saint surpasses the Absolute Land Realm, more of your cultivation is regarding the Rules of Saintly Way.

"The Heaven Pass Realm is the formation of rules.

"The True Realm is turning the intangible tangible.

"The Supreme Realm is going to the extreme."

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes in confusion.

He'd never heard of what Supreme Saint Manjian was talking about, so it sounded unfamiliar.

Manjian could see that Zhang Ruochen wasn't quite clear about these three realms, so he explained in more layman terms. "The Rules of Saintly Way that you comprehended before are actually formless. They're just lines. Now, you must turn those lines into a shape.

"For example, if you turn the rules into a tower, then you would immediately enter the Heaven Pass Realm. The tower-shaped Rules of Saintly Way would become your Heaven Pass Tower.

"If you form a sword, then it's the Heaven Pass Sword."

Zhang Ruochen understood instantly. "I see. But the Rules of Saintly Way are already combined with one's saint soul and saintly source. How can it be shaped?"

Supreme Saint Manjian chuckled. "Shaping the rules happens inside the saint soul and saintly source."

Zhang Ruochen vaguely understood how to reach the Heaven Pass Realm. He immediately asked, "What does turning the intangible tangible mean?"

Manjian continued to explain. "Even if you shape your rules and reach the Heaven Pass Realm, the rules are still intangible. You must make them into tangible rules. This way, you'll also reach the True Realm and become a True Saint."

"Then what about to the extreme?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"It's simple. You continuously turn Rules of Saintly Way tangible, making them extremely sturdy. They'll become indestructible as if they were made of iron. By then, you would also reach the Supreme Realm and become an Absolute Saint."

Zhang Ruochen felt like the world had opened up. He memorized the phrases "shape the rules," "intangible to tangible" and "to the extreme." Putting his hands together, he bowed to Supreme Saint Manjian. "Thank you for your pointers."

"No problem. Moon Goddess had you cultivate with me. Naturally, I will tell you everything I know. Oh..."



Manjian seemed to think of something. He added, “if you want to reach the Heaven Pass Realm, there’s actually a shortcut.”

“What shortcut?” Zhang Ruochen asked hurriedly.

“In the Red Dragon Saint Territory, there’s a Heaven Pass Cave. It’s a cultivation paradise that a big figure left behind. If you cultivate in there, it’ll be easier to shape the rules. You can save a lot of time.”

Zhang Ruochen bowed to Supreme Saint Manjian again. Then he walked out of the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion.

“I will cultivate in isolation in the Red Dragon Saint Territory to reach the Heaven Pass Realm. You return to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.”

After giving Blackie orders, Zhang Ruochen followed a Half-Saint toward the Heaven Pass Cave.

“He really isn’t willing to waste a minute for cultivation. He’s turning obsessed.”

Looking at Zhang Ruochen’s back, Blackie shook its furry head. Spreading its wings, it returned to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

There was a saint stone island deep within the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion, hovering in the air. This was where Supreme Saint Manjian cultivated.

In Kunlun’s Field, saint stones were rare. Each piece was worth a city and contained extremely thick Holy Qi.

But that island was made completely of saint stones. If the Supreme Saints of Kunlun’s Field saw this, they would definitely feel embarrassed. Compared to Supreme Saint Manjian, they were just poor misers.

Right now, Manjian’s true body was sitting on the island and drinking wine with Supreme Saint Jiuling, another Supreme Saint of Guanghan Field.

Supreme Saint Jiuling wasn’t a human. He was a Jiuling Divine Bird and contained powerful divine beast blood in his body. He was the Supreme Saint of Guanghan Field who had the highest possibility of reaching the Divine Realm.

Right now, Supreme Saint Jiuling had transformed into an elder with black hair and youthful features. He wore a loose robe with nine types of divine birds embroidered on it.

Supreme Saint Jiuling seemed a bit old, but under his white eyebrows, his eyes were filled with sharp light. It was like his eyes could penetrate the heavens and earth.

He smoothed his whiskers. “That’s the Saint that Moon Goddess brought back?”

“Indeed.”

Manjian looked over at Jiuling. It suddenly dawned on him. “I think I understand! You barely come to the Red Dragon Saint Territory once in centuries. Today, I thought you came to discuss swordsmanship. I didn’t think that you’d come to see him.”

“A Saint can be valued by Moon Goddess. Everyone would be curious, right?” Jiuling said, chuckling.

There was a blue-robed girl standing behind Supreme Saint Jiuling. She had a beautiful figure. Her delicate body was inside rings of saintly light, making her seem noble and pure. It felt like one couldn’t get on her level.

This girl was named Su Qingling. She was Supreme Saint Jiuling’s granddaughter and the most talented girl of the entire Guanghan Field. She was also one of the few True Saints who could enter the Saints Merits Rank.

Of course, it was the Saints Merits Rank of Guanghan Field.

A smile appeared on Su Qingling’s face. She didn’t hide her disdain for Zhang Ruochen. “He doesn’t even know how to reach the Heaven Pass Realm. He’s completely clueless. I don’t understand why the mighty Moon Goddess values him.”

Supreme Saint Jiuling understood his granddaughter’s personality. This girl had a very high taste. No more than five Saints in the entire Guanghan Field could meet her standards.

“Little girl,” Jiuling said. “That boy isn’t clueless. His physical body is already a Saint. He isn’t weak at all.”

Su Qingling clearly didn't think a physical body Saint was powerful. Pursing her red lips, she said, "So what? Even if there aren't 50 beings in Guanghan Field who can cultivate their physical bodies to the Saint Realm, there are at least 30 or 40, right?"

"Having a physical body in the Saint Realm is indeed excellent but not enough to meet the Moon Goddess' standards," Supreme Saint Manjian said. "But what if he also has four Peak Realms and the Five-Elements Chaotic Body?"

This time, Su Qingling couldn't keep calm anymore. Shock appeared in her blue eyes. "He actually has the Supreme Complete Body Constitution?"

"That's right," Manjian said. "It's the Supreme Complete Body Constitution."

Supreme Saint Jiuling touched his chin. Smiling, he said, "I didn't look closely just then. I didn't think that he had the Supreme Complete Body Constitution."

The so-called Supreme Complete Body Constitution meant that he'd cultivated his body to the most complete and extreme extent. One had to satisfy three requirements to reach that level:

One, a physical body in the Saint Realm.

Two, reach the Peak Realm in all four levels of the Martial Way.

Three, possess one of the strongest bodies.

The True God Body, Five-Elements Chaotic Body, and Thousand-Bone Body were all types of the strongest bodies. Of course, there weren't only three. Ten strongest bodies had appeared in Heaven World's records.

One could only be known as having the Supreme Complete Body Constitution if one satisfied all three requirements. Having this ability could crush all opponents in the same realm.

"Even Wu Hao, first of the Guanghan Field's Saints Merits Rank, only has a complete body," Su Qingling said. "He's still

a step away from the Supreme Complete Body Constitution.”

A young man stood behind Supreme Saint Manjian. His name was Bu Ji. He was Manjian’s direct disciple.

Before this, Bu Ji’s eyes had been trained on Su Qingling. He had an obsessed look.

When he heard the name “Wu Hao,” Bu Ji finally grew clear-headed. Strong battle intent appeared in his eyes. “Sister Qingling, don’t worry. Even if Wu Hao has a completed body, I can still defeat him.”

Su Qingling rolled her eyes. “Where even is your head? We’re talking about that guy with the Supreme Complete Body Constitution. If you can, go defeat him.”

“Who? Who has the Supreme Complete Body Constitution? I’ll go defeat him now!” Bu Ji clenched his fists. All 144 apertures on his body opened up. Chaotic Saintly Way ripples poured out.

This man looked dumb, but he was actually a pride with a physical body in the Saint Realm.

Supreme Saint Manjian smiled wryly and sighed.

Supreme Saint Jiuling grew serious. “You two must remember,” he said. “No matter how strong the other is, it’s not impossible to defeat them. One’s body is only a part of their abilities. If you can cultivate strong saint spells or have an advantage in Rules of Saintly Way, you can still defeat them.”

Su Qingling nodded, putting up an act. But her eyes were looking in the direction of the Heaven Pass Cave and it seemed like she wanted to try something. She wanted to know if the Supreme Complete Body Constitution really was as powerful as rumored.

Supreme Saint Manjian and Jiuling started discussing something else.

Jiuling’s expression grew serious. “I heard that the Zuling Field battlefield of the western universe has been shattered completely. All the beings have died. Even the god of Zuling

Field has been killed. Yet another large world has been destroyed by Hell World. The next battlefield will definitely be chosen from the Shatuo Seven Fields. I hope it's not Guanghan Field."

Supreme Saint Manjian's expression was dark as well. "Once a large world is chosen as a battlefield, it is destined to be destroyed. Guanghan Field has always been the weakest among the Shatuo regions. We may very well become the sacrifice. Now, there's a sliver of a chance. After all, Kunlun's Field is weaker than us."

"The Zuling Field was part of the Shatuo Seven Fields 30 years ago. In 30 short years, a brilliant world has been crumbled to dust."

Supreme Saint Jiuling spoke bitterly. "I am guessing that the Seven Fields Merits Battle will be held in a short while to officially choose the world with the least potential to become the newest battlefield with Hell World. Then, we must fight with all our might. We can't allow the Guanghan Field to become the next Zuling Field. We must fight for our survival, so our descendants won't become slaves."

# Chapter 1415 - Heaven Pass River

Chapter 1415: Heaven Pass River

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

More than ten saints who had reached pinnacle Absolute Ground Realm gathered outside Heaven Pass Cave. They all prepared to refine in this cave so that they could reach Heaven Pass Realm.

All the monks were quiet, and they were waiting with their eyes closed.

Zhang Ruochen showed the jade token of Supreme Saint Manjian to the elder guarding the cave, then, he walked to the other side and waited.

The elder guarding the cave said, "Heaven Pass Cave is officially open. There're only three spots in the cave, and you're only qualified to refine here after you occupy a spot."

Whoosh!

Suddenly, all the Absolute Ground saints rushed into Heaven Pass Cave as fast as possible.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't in a rush at all. He walked slowly through the gate.

The elder guarding the cave was confused. There were only three spots in the cave, and everyone was rushing inside as quickly as possible. Why isn't that kid in a rush?

Most of the saints who had reached Absolute Ground Realm were disciples of Supreme Saint Manjian. They wouldn't give up such a precious refining opportunity unless they were

directly ordered by Supreme Saint Manjian. Zhang Ruochen could feel the saintly rules in his body become more vigorous, and the four saint sources in his lower abdomen started to gleam more brightly.

The so-called cave was a space bubble.

However, this space bubble wasn't born out of nowhere. Instead, someone had used space inscriptions to carve this microworld.

Heaven Pass Cave was a microworld that had a diameter of three thousand feet, and it was surrounded by a circular light wall.

Zhang Ruochen put his hand on the light wall, and he could feel the complicated space inscriptions inside the wall.

Someone created a cave using space inscriptions. It seems some monks in Heaven World are also practicing space rules, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Aside from space inscriptions, there were also other mysterious inscriptions inside the world light wall, and all those inscriptions formed a formation, merging with the entire cave.

Because of that formation, monks could gather their saintly way rules inside Heaven Pass Cave.

The three refining spots were actually three circular jade stones floating in the sky. They looked like three giant jade plates, and all the other Absolute Ground monks were fighting for those spots.

Zhang Ruochen trampled the floor and flew to the jade stone in the middle.

The two pinnacle Absolute Ground monks who were fighting each other gave each other a look seeing a third person, and then, they performed a fist print against Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, forming a blood-red hand print, which turned into a blood-red cloud and slapped those two saints. They were knocked away like scarecrows.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the jade stone, looked at those who were still fighting, and said, "I want to refine here without being disturbed. Everyone, please leave."

He said it in a low voice, but everyone could hear it clearly.

"There're three spots, yet you want to refine here by yourself? What do you mean?"

"Are you trying to clear this place out?"

"What an arrogant guy. Let's team up and kill him."

...

All the pinnacle Absolute Ground saints performed saint spells in the cave against Zhang Ruochen.

Bang! Bang!

After a short while, all the fourteen pinnacle Absolute Ground saints were heavily injured.

Some of the powerful saints managed to climb out of the cave themselves. As for those who were weaker, they couldn't even move their bodies and ended up being thrown out by Zhang Ruochen.

Outside Heaven Pass Cave.

The elder guarding Heaven Pass Cave was surprised. "What happened to you guys? No way the fight for refining spots was that wretched."

A saint who had his legs broken said while climbing, "Too... he's too powerful... He defeated fourteen saints at the same level with ease. When did Red Dragon Saint Domain get such a powerful being?"

"I shouldn't have fought him for the spot..."

The elder guarding Heaven Pass Cave seemed to recall something. He looked to the stone gate and whispered, "One versus fourteen? And he finished the fight instantly? Where did that guy come from?"

Su Qingling wrapped her arms in front of her breasts, looked to Heaven Pass Cave and smiled. "No wonder he has the



supreme body constitution. Impressive indeed.”

Bu Ji sneered. “I can also defeat fourteen. Nothing major.”

Su Qingling rolled her eyes and said, “You? Are you sure?”

“Of course.”

Bu Ji raised his iron fist and spoke confidently.

“Okay, then go fight him after he finishes refining,” Su Qingling said.

Bu Ji shook his head and said, “I’m already a mid-level true saint. It’ll be bullying him if I fight him.”

“You can suppress your cultivation to his level.”

Su Qingling curved her lips and smiled at Bu Ji. “Are you afraid of fighting him?”

Bu Ji’s eyes bulged. He tore his saint robe apart and showed his muscles. He said, “No way! I’ll fight him first, then I’ll go deal with Wu Hao.”

Inside Heaven Pass Cave.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting on the jade stone floating in the middle, and his mind power had been soaked in his lower abdomen, sensing the saintly rules in his saint source.

There were three hundred and forty-seven saintly way rules in the four saint sources.

Together with time rules and space rules, there were in total three hundred and forty-nine saintly way rules in Zhang Ruochen’s body.

“According to Supreme Saint Manjian, I need to gather all my saintly way rules if I want to reach Heaven Pass Realm, but the saintly way rules in my body are distributed among the four saint sources, time saint look, and space saint look. How am I supposed to gather them?”

It was almost impossible to integrate the saintly way rules in the four saint sources and the two saint looks.

“Do I need to condense the saintly way rules separately in each saint source?”

“I can condense the rules of saintly way in sword way saint source into a heaven pass sword.”

“I can condense the rules of saintly way in fist way saint source into a heaven pass tower.”

“I can condense the rules of saintly way in palm saint source into a heaven pass mountain.”

“The rules of saintly way in Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look into a heaven pass cauldron.”

...

“But what about time rules and space rules?”

It was definitely better to integrate all the rules instead of doing them separately, and besides, Zhang Ruochen would never give up time rules and space rules.

Zhang Ruochen didn't just integrate rules recklessly.

Zhang Ruochen was totally different from other monks, which meant he couldn't use the experience of other monks.

Perhaps the best way was to create a path only for himself.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen recalled the spectacular view of the Heavenly River which was one hundred thousand and eight hundred miles wide. It flowed around Heaven World with stars floating on the sides of the river.

There were mysterious rules of heaven and earth flowing with the water.

Zhang Ruochen was amazed the first time he saw Heavenly River, and he could never forget that magnificent scene.

“Heavenly River... Heavenly River... Why do I have to condense rules of saintly way into something solid. If I can condense them into a flowing river, then I can have endless rules of saintly way.”

Zhang Ruochen then started to integrate rules of saintly way.

After half a month, he successfully integrated his rules of saintly way into a circular river, which connected the four saint sources and two saint looks.

It was a heaven pass river!

Zhang Ruochen successfully made it to heaven pass realm, and then, the saint Qi in Heaven Pass Cave gathered toward him and flowed into the Heaven Pass River.

Zhang Ruochen felt that his power was surging.

At this moment, the Heavenly River flowing around Heaven World started to tumble, and the water flowed much faster.

All the Gods in Heaven World were surprised.

“What happened to the Heavenly River? What triggered it?”

“I’ve deduced what it was. Some feeble power came into being in Heaven World and echoed within the Heavenly River.”

“What’s that power?”

“It’s disappeared. I can’t identify it.”

“If it echoed within the Heavenly River, it’s something major. Perhaps some unique creature was born. Search it and find it.”

...

Traces of godly minds travelled above the Heavenly River, and they stopped after a while.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea what he had caused after forming a heaven pass river, but he was still pleased after reaching Heaven Pass Realm.

Zhang Ruochen only walked out of the cave after stabilizing his realm.

“I thought you were going to refine inside forever.”

Zhang Ruochen heard a hoarse voice right after he walked out of the cave. He then looked to the person who had spoken.

It was a man that was six feet tall, and his muscles looked like gold. His body looked like a mountain.

He was a disciple of Supreme Saint Manjian, Bu Ji.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Have we met before?”

Bu Ji moved his fists and walked toward Zhang Ruochen.  
“Stop talking and fight me.”

# Chapter 1416 - Ning True Saint Dew

Chapter 1416: Ning True Saint Dew

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I won’t fight. No time.”

Zhang Ruochen spoke indifferently before rushing forward. He used a physical technique, preparing to return to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land and continue cultivating in isolation.

“You’re not allowed to leave. You must battle with me and get a clear result.”

Bu Ji’s body arched. All his meridians and Saintly Meridians were pulled taut like a huge bow. Then there was a huge boom like the twang of a bowstring.

The next moment, Bu Ji’s body shot toward Zhang Ruochen like an arrow.

A different look appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face. He stepped down and quickly retreated, avoiding Bu Ji’s crash.

“Your speed is even faster than an Absolute Saint,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“You’re not slow either.”

Bu Ji was extremely fast, but he was comfortable and steadied himself in an instant. “You’re at the beginning of the Heaven Pass Realm, so I won’t bully you. I’ll restrict my cultivation to that realm as well. How about that?”

Zhang Ruochen hadn’t fought with Bu Ji officially yet, but he still knew that the man was a powerful figure. Otherwise, he

wouldn't have been able to make Zhang Ruochen retreat.

"Since you want to fight, then I'll fight with you once," Zhang Ruochen said. "Don't restrict yourself. Go all out!"

"I'm afraid you won't be able to take one hit if I go all out."

Bu Ji kept to his word and directly pushed his cultivation down, controlling it at the beginning of the Heaven Pass Realm.

Whoosh!

The 144 saintified apertures on Bu Ji's body all opened up. It was like 144 stars embedded in his body.

"Your physical body is a Saint," Zhang Ruochen uttered.

Bu Ji clenched his hands into fists and unleashed extreme speed. He flew over to Zhang Ruochen like a golden tornado.

A huge golden fist print formed in the tornado.

Though the other was coming powerfully, Zhang Ruochen didn't move from his spot. He waited until the golden fist print was about to hit him before attacking quickly, punching forward.

Boom.

All the fist force was shattered.

Bu Ji's burly body flew backward. He didn't land until he had flown dozens of feet away. He stumbled back and almost fell down.

Zhang Ruochen stood peacefully in place. He sent out an overwhelming wave of palm prints. Not even a strand of hair flew up.

Supreme Saints Manjian and Jiuling watched their fight from inside the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion. Seeing this kind of result, they exchanged glances and smiled.

Su Qingling was a bit shocked. Biting her lip, she said, "With Bu Ji's abilities, he can't even take a hit from him in the same realm. Wow. He's much stronger than I'd imagined."

...

“Can I leave now?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Bu Ji squeezed his pained fingers. He clearly knew that he wasn't a match for the Supreme Complete Body Constitution in the same realm. “Let's fight again when I restrict my cultivation to the middle stage of the Heaven Pass Realm!” he yelled.

“I'm seriously busy,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I don't have time to play with you.”

If they fought a round in the beginning stage...

And then in the middle stage...

How many rounds did they have to fight?

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to be someone's training partner. He decided to leave.

“Wait.”

Bu Ji stopped Zhang Ruochen again. Revealing two rows of white teeth, he smiled and said, “You just reached the Heaven Pass Realm, right? You must need the Ning True Saint Dew, right?”

“Ning True Saint Dew?”

Bu Ji knew that Zhang Ruochen knew little about the Heaven Pass Realm. Thus, he took out a bottle made of saint jade and held it in his palm.

Bone-chilling icy Qi seeped out of the bottle.

“Cultivators in the Heaven Pass Realm must continue to condense the Rules of Saintly Way to make the rules become tangible and reach the True Saint Realm. The Ning True Saint Dew is a treasure that can help Heaven Pass Saints do that.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the bottle and murmured, “I see.”

Kunlun's Field didn't have the Ning True Saint Dew at all. A Heaven Pass Saint had to take a long time to condense the rules one by one before reaching the True Saint Realm.

This was why even top talents like Wan Zhaoyi, Qing Xiao, and Pei Yutian had to cultivate in the Heaven Pass Realm for a

long while before reaching the True Saint Realm.

Many more Heaven Pass Saints would die from old age before turning their Rules of Saintly Way tangible. They'd never be able to reach the True Saint Realm.

This was also why a True Saint was already a top figure in Kunlun's Field. They could be Saint Leaders of a middle-age clan.

Heaven World had a treasure like the Ning True Saint Dew. It could help Heaven Pass Saints save a lot of time and produce many more True Saints.

Bu Ji saw that Zhang Ruochen was interested in the dew, so he continued, "In the Red Dragon Saint Territory, you need to spend 1,000 saint stones to buy a drop. Plus, if you want to buy it, you also need a certain amount of merits.

"Saints with 10,000 merits can only buy ten drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

"Saints with 100,000 merits can only buy 100 drops.

"This bottle contains 100 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. If you win one round, I'll give you ten drops. How about that?"

In the Red Dragon Saint Pavilion, Su Qingling fluttered her lashes and smiled. "That big dumb guy actually has smart moments. Not bad. There's a good show to watch again."

Zhang Ruochen didn't have any merits now. He couldn't buy the dew even if he had saint stones. If he could win some from Bu Ji, it seemed to be a good thing.

"How many drops of Ning True Saint Dew do you need to go from the beginning of the Heaven Pass Realm to the True Saint Realm?" he asked.

Bu Ji really wanted to continue fighting with him, so he said patiently, "You need at least 100 drops to go from the beginning to the middle stage. From the middle to the end, you need around 300 drops. From the end to the pinnacle, you'll need around 600 drops. From the pinnacle to the True Saint Realm, you'll need 1,000 drops. In total, you'll need around 2,000 drops to reach the True Saint Realm.



“Of course, using the Ning True Saint Dew can only increase your cultivation speed. Whether you can reach the True Saint Realm or not still depends on your comprehension. In other words, it’s not easy to reach the True Saint Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. “Okay, give me ten drops first.”

“Why?” Bu Ji asked.

“You just lost to me earlier,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Oh...I guess.”

Bu Ji furrowed his brows. He thought for a moment and still opened the saint jade bottle. He pressed a hand onto the opening and tossed it up. Instantly, ten specks of light flew out of the bottle.

Each speck of light contained enormous Saintly Way auras and a mesmerizing fragrance.

Zhang Ruochen caught the ten drops. He took one drop out and used his Spiritual Power to check it. Then he put it into his mouth.

When the dew entered his body, it immediately transformed into an icy current. It poured into his Sea of Qi and Heaven Pass River.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen quickly used a technique to condense the Rules of Saintly Way in the Heaven Pass River.

A moment later, the dew was completely absorbed. Some of the Rules of Saintly Way indeed became more solid.

With the effect of the Ning True Saint Dew, I’ll probably need around 500 drops to reach the middle stage, Zhang Ruochen thought.

It wasn’t that Bu Ji had exaggerated the dew’s effect. Instead, it was because Zhang Ruochen had too many Rules of Saintly Way within him. Naturally, he would need more drops of dew than the others, even ten times more.

A regular Saint only had 20 or 30 Rules of Saintly Way.

The Saints at the level of the nine Heirs could comprehend around 100 Rules of Saintly Way.

But Zhang Ruochen had more than 300 rules. This also included time and space, two of the Nine Ancient Ways. This way, he would need more Ning True Saint Dew than other Saints to make them all tangible.

“It really can improve cultivation speed.”

After saying that, Zhang Ruochen swallowed the remaining nine drops. He glanced at Bu Ji and said, “Let’s fight! Ten drops for each round I win.”

“You’re going to refine the drops while fighting me?” Bu Ji asked.

“Indeed.”

Two balls of fire appeared in Bu Ji’s eyes. “You’ll pay if you dare underestimate me!” he roared.

He restricted his cultivation to the middle of the Heaven Pass Realm and attacked.

A moment later, Bu Ji flew back again, falling heavily on the ground.

“I will restrict my cultivation to the later stage and fight again.”

Bu Ji wasn’t satisfied. He climbed up and circulated his Holy Qi. A golden divine lion appeared. It became one with his body. Roaring, it charged at Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen used the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and sent him flying again.

“I will restrict my cultivation to the pinnacle of the Heaven Pass Realm. Fight, fight, fight.”

Bu Ji yelled three times. He activated his power to the extreme. The divine lion image became more solid. The light that it shone with turned the entire Red Dragon Saint Territory golden.

Roar!

The lion's roar even shook the pavilions.

This time, even Zhang Ruochen had to take Bu Ji seriously. His eyes hardened slightly. He actually felt the power of a Beast Emperor on Bu Ji's body.

“That is...a Beast Emperor's saint soul?”

Surprise appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Bu Ji's teeth grew extremely sharp. “Supreme Saint Golden Lion was about to die when fighting with a strong enemy of Hell World. He gave the remnant of his soul to me, giving me his heritage. So I must win this round. For his dignity, I can't lose. I don't believe that I can't beat you, an early-stage Heaven Pass Saint, with my cultivation in the pinnacle.”

Fighting with Hell World was extremely cruel.

Each year, many strong figures from Heaven World would die. But they could leave their heritage behind.

Whoever received their heritage would receive an extremely large amount of power. Not only would they cultivate more quickly, their future path would also be smoother.

Bu Ji received Supreme Saint Golden Lion's heritage. His body also had the Supreme Saint's soul. He couldn't unleash the soul's full power with his current cultivation, but his combat abilities still reached a terrifying level.

“Emperor Lion's Power.”

Bu Ji's hands transformed into two golden lion claws. Terrifying Beast Emperor Qi poured crazily out of his palms, crashing down on Zhang Ruochen.

The space was instantly shrouded by the emperor lion's aggressive Qi.

# Chapter 1417 - Taoist Line

Chapter 1417: Taoist Line

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits shot a glance at Supreme Saint Manjian and said, “Bu Ji has already refined the fragmented soul of Supreme Saint Golden Lion into his own supreme saint fighting soul. I don’t think he’s strong enough to do that.”

“It was me. I helped him,” Supreme Saint Manjian said.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits nodded, as that was what he expected to have happened.

Supreme Saint Manjian said, “However, I was impressed that he could withstand the power of the fragmented soul of a supreme saint. He’s one of my outstanding disciples. I can cultivate him in the future.”

Su Qingling looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Hey, look, the guy with a supreme body constitution is finally devoted to the fight. Do you reckon Bu Ji can make him show his true power this time?”

...

“Dragon and Elephant Prajna.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms, and his bones made cracking sounds. And then, a dragon phantom and an elephant phantom showed up on each side, and two barren savage beasts dashed toward Bu Ji.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen’s claws and Bu Ji’s hands clashed with each other.

Fierce saintly way power emanated and formed saintly Qi waves outside Heaven Pass Cave.

The saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul couldn't compare with the golden lion battle soul that was at supreme saint level, so the golden lion battle soul crushed the dragon phantom and elephant phantom when they touched.

Zhang Ruochen didn't step back, and the saint Qi started to flow fiercely in his meridians and saint meridians, forming a stronger palm force.

Boom!

Bu Ji bounced back like an artillery shell, hitting the wall of a saint palace.

He fell onto the ground against the wall, and he felt that his entire body was about to crumble.

“How was that possible? How? I have the fragmented soul of Supreme Saint Golden Lion, yet your beast souls are only at saint level. How did you defeat me?”

Bu Ji clenched his fist in anger and bitterness.

Bu Ji had a sturdy body and the battle soul of a supreme saint. He didn't need to fear anyone who was at the same level.

However, he was annihilated by a saint who had just reached Heaven Pass Realm, even though he used the cultivation of pinnacle Heaven Pass Realm.

This was a huge blow to him.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The battle soul of a supreme saint is indeed mighty, much stronger than the dragon soul and elephant soul, but battle souls are only there for help. You're really powerful when your strength is strong enough. You've already lost three times, so you should give me thirty drops of Ning True Saint Dew.”

Bu Ji's face blushed. He clenched his teeth and said, “No, let's fight one last time. I'll use my low-tier true-saint cultivation. If you can ward off one full-strength move of mine, I'll give you all the Ning True Saint Dew in my bottle. How does that sound?”

“Pst. You’re shameless.”

A girl giggled.

And then, a blue being showed up in front of Heaven Pass Cave, and she was unfathomably fast.

Su Qingling was dressed in blue like an orchid, standing between Bu Ji and Zhang Ruochen. She said, “What’s the point of that? You might as well just use your real power.”

Bu Ji’s face turned redder. He said, “This is a fair fight.”

Su Qingling rolled her eyes and said, “You’re going to use the power of a true saint, and you call that a fair fight? Don’t you know the gap between Heaven Pass saints and true saints is enormous? And you’re asking a saint who’s just reached Heaven Pass Realm to ward off a full-strength attack of yours? Are you serious?”

Bu Ji said, “Why’re you defending outsiders, Qingling?”

Su Qingling smiled and said, “First of all, we’re all monks from Guanghai Field, so we’re all family to each other.

“Also, I wasn’t helping anyone, just stating a fact.”

Bu Ji dispersed her saint Qi and said, “Then I won’t attack him. It’s not a shame being defeated by someone with supreme body constitution.”

Zhang Ruochen had been observing Su Qingling the whole time. He noticed that she was incredibly fast, and that she might be stronger than Bu Ji.

Guanghai Field was indeed a giant field where there were lots of talents. The two people standing in front of him could already rival those on the ‘Hero Rank.’

Su Qingling stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “I’m Su Qingling from the Nine Spirits Race.”

Bu Ji held his fists and said to Zhang Ruochen, “I’m the twenty-seventh disciple of Supreme Saint Manjian, Bu Ji. Sorry for offending you just now. I should give you thirty drops of Ning True Saint Dew since I was defeated by you three times.”

“No rush.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm and said, “You don’t need to suppress your cultivation. Just use all your strength. I’ll take that strike.”

Both Bu Ji and Su Qingling were dazed.

Su Qingling looked at Bu Ji’s bottle, and she understood that Zhang Ruochen wanted all the Ning True Saint Dew.

“Haha!”

Bu Ji guffawed and said, “You can’t blame me now, Qingling. It’s he who wants to take my strike.”

Su Qingling frowned as she couldn’t understand Zhang Ruochen. Did he reserve his power when he was fighting Bu Ji?

Su Qingling couldn’t help but warn Zhang Ruochen, “The gap between true realm and Heaven Pass Realm is enormous. You’ve got to think about it again. If Bu Ji can’t control his power, you might be injured heavily. This is just a trial battle. No need to be so serious.”

“No problem,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Su Qingling looked at Zhang Ruochen, and she saw how tranquil he was. Her heart skipped a beat.

She had only seen that look from one person, her grandpa Supreme Saint Nine Spirits.

That look was calm and confident. He seemed to have been through thousands of life or death situations, and he had seen all the ways of the world.

His state of mind was at the same level as the supreme saints who had refined for thousands of years.

Bu Ji didn’t use all his power. Instead, he used low-tier true-saint cultivation. Even so, the power ripples on his body surged after activating the supreme battle soul again.

The heaven and earth turned into a giant whirlpool, and the golden lion was standing at the center of the whirlpool.

“Careful! It’s not easy to take this move.”

Bu Ji’s hair waved, and his muscles bulged. Meanwhile, his supreme saint battle soul rushed forward, releasing the power of the Supreme Saint Golden Lion.

Zhang Ruochen also had to use all his strength now.

He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword from his space ring. He held the sword handle tightly, infusing the sword with saint Qi.

Whoosh!

Destruction of thousand patterns burst out of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and used the intent of Sword Seven, wielding his sword and clashing with the golden lion battle soul.

Bang!

Sword Qi and the power of the beast emperor spread everywhere.

Zhang Ruochen and Bu Ji stepped back at the same time.

“It... Was a tie...”

Bu Qingling found it impossible to believe as she’d never thought that supreme body constitution could be that forceful.

Bu Ji was also dazed. He took a look at his hands and Zhang Ruochen who was standing across from him. He squeezed out a smile and said, “No wonder you have supreme body constitution.”

Su Qingling tried to behave calmly. She walked to Zhang Ruochen with her hands behind her back, looked at him and said, “I see you also practice sword way. I saw the sword intent you just mobilized, and I reckon it comes from the Taoist Line, doesn’t it?”

“Taoist Line?” Zhang Ruochen mumbled.

‘Wordless Sword Manual’ was the supreme manual of Taichi Way, and it had been stored in the sword pavilion ever since Taichi Way was founded. It was at least ten million years old.



However, Heaven World was only one hundred thousand years old.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know whether it was because 'Wordless Sword Manual' was spread to Heaven World a hundred thousand years ago, or if it was that there were lots of similarities between the sword way of Taoist Line and 'Wordless Sword Manual.'

Zhang Ruochen asked, "What's the Taoist Line?"

"I see you just came to Heaven World, so you don't know anything yet."

Su Qingling shook her head and said, "There're more than eight thousand fields in Heaven World, and each field is a great power. However, there're some powers that don't belong to any of the fields, and the Taoist Line is one of them."

"The Taoist Line is an enormous power, especially the first holy land of Taoism, Five Elements Temple. Taoist great beings for all the fields gather there and talk about ideas and the experience of refining."

Bu Ji walked toward Zhang Ruochen and looked at his space ring. He noticed that Zhang Ruochen had taken his sword from that ring. Obviously, it was a storage valuable.

"Did Moon Goddess give you that space valuable? I also have a space valuable, but it has a very small inner space. Your ring looks delicate. I reckon the inner space is enormous, isn't it?"

Bu Ji stared at the space ring and took out a storage bag.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the storage bag and released mind power to inspect it.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen let go of the bag and shook his head. The space inscriptions and weapon-refining methods of that storage bag were totally different from what was recorded on the 'Time and Space Secret Guide.'

And besides, they were too primitive.

Obviously, the person who had made the storage bag didn't come from the same line as he did.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are there many monks in Heaven World who practice the space way?”

# Chapter 1418 - Time Divine Pavilion And Space Divine Pavilion

Chapter 1418: Time Divine Pavilion And Space Divine Pavilion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Su Qingling and Bu Ji's eyes contained a surprised look. After staring at Zhang Ruochen for a long while, they finally laughed.

"The Spatial Way is one of the Ancient Ways," Bu Ji said. "How can it be so easy to comprehend? Plus, even if you comprehend the spatial rules, if you don't activate the Time and Space Martial Deity Print, then you won't reach a very high level in space. At most, it will only help your own cultivation."

One could only become a true space manipulator by activating the Time and Space Martial Deity Print and comprehending the spatial rules.

There were two other situations.

The first was activating the Time and Space Martial Deity Print but not comprehending spatial rules in the Ninth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm, thus not melding the spatial rules into the saint soul.

The second was not activating the Time and Space Martial Deity Print but comprehending spatial rules in the Ninth Change and melding them into the saint soul.

Most spatial cultivators had these two situations. They could only be known as Space Cultivators.

“There are very few Space Cultivators,” Su Qingling said. “It’s very impressive for a major world to have one or two. Even the worlds who rank high in the Saints Merits Rank have very few Space Cultivators. As for Space manipulators, you can count them on your fingers. Each one’s appearance causes a commotion.”

“Most of the Space Cultivators in the universe go study and cultivate in the Space Divine Pavilion. That’s also a force independent from the major worlds.”

“Space Divine Pavilion.”

Zhang Ruochen recited it, committing it to memory. Then he asked, “What about cultivators of the Time Way?”

Su Qingling chuckled. “They’re even rarer than spatial cultivators. It’s harder as well. They mostly study in the Time Divine Pavilion.”

“Is it possible for a cultivator to control time and space simultaneously?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji exchanged glances. They both shook their heads.

“It’s practically impossible to grasp two Ancient Ways at once,” Bu Ji said. “Perhaps those cultivators exist, but we can’t find them now.”

Su Qingling nodded her pretty head. “You have to know that any Space or Time Cultivator with some achievements have high statuses in Heaven World. They’re equal to Supreme Saints. The more powerful Space and Time Controllers can even be invited by gods to be their guests.”

Bu Ji nodded fiercely. “I have a spatial pouch. I exchanged it from a Half-Saint Space Cultivator with large amounts of resources. There were also many Saints other than me who went with a lot of treasures to exchange for spatial pouches. But the man only chose to meet with a few. Many Saints were barred from entering.”

“Even a Half-Saint is so arrogant?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Yes, exactly that arrogant.”

“Three hundred years ago,” Su Qingling said. “My grandfather went to meet a Time Cultivator. He wanted to invite the man to the Tianling Saint Territory and put up a time formation. Unfortunately, the man wouldn’t even meet Grandfather. It’s evident that a Time Cultivator is even more arrogant than a Space Cultivator.”

“Put up a time formation for what?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“For cultivation, of course. You know, you can cultivate in a time formation for two months while only one month passes in the outside world. It’s like your cultivation speed has doubled. Some powerful Time Cultivators can even make the time in formations be three, four times faster or even more.”

Su Qingling’s gaze grew into one of yearning. She was filled with curiosity about the mysterious Time Cultivators.

If Supreme Saint Jiuling had been able to invite that Time Cultivator 300 years ago and set up a time formation in Tianling Saint Territory, then her cultivation would probably be at the Saint King Realm now. She wouldn’t be stuck at the peak of the True Saint Realm.

Zhang Ruochen had a slight understanding of the Heaven World’s Time and Space Cultivators now. He also understood one thing: perhaps no one in the Heaven World could create time-space treasures.

After all, only Saint Monk Xumi had been able to grasp both time and space and cultivate them to extremely high levels.

Even in the Heaven World, it was probably difficult to produce another figure as powerful as Saint Monk Xumi. Otherwise, that person would’ve already shocked the thousand fields.

How could Su Qingling and Bu Ji not know?

The value of the few time-space treasures in Kunlun’s Field also seemed shocking.

The Tianlun Mark especially had a time ratio of 1:30.

Before, Chi Yao hadn't become a god and could only have the nine Heirs cultivate in the Tianlun Mark. Now, she could probably send a great amount of cultivators into the Tianlun Mark.

Zhang Ruochen had to think of a way to speed up his cultivation as well.

Time formation...

Zhang Ruochen's eyes brightened. He prepared to flip through the Time and Space Secret Guide after returning. There should probably be a way to create time formations.

Bu Ji handed over the bottle filled with the Ning True Saint Dew. Smiling, he said, "I keep my word. This bottle of Ning True Saint Dew is now all yours."

Zhang Ruochen accepted the jade bottle and nodded. Then he prepared to leave the Red Dragon Saint Territory.

Just then, Supreme Saint Manjian's voice sounded in his mind. "Come to the Red Dragon Saint Palace to see me."

Su Qingling and Bu Ji clearly received the same message. The three of them hurried toward the palace at the same time and saw Supreme Saints Manjian and Jiuling.

"Greetings, Supreme Saints."

The three saluted and bowed to the two saintly images before them at the same time.

"Earlier, I received a divine message from Moon Goddess," Supreme Saint Manjian said. "Tomorrow, the Thousand Saint Conference will be held in the Moon Goddess Mountain to discuss the survival of Guanghan Field."

Hearing this, Su Qingling and Bu Ji both became extremely excited. They said at practically the same time, "So we're going to be able to see Moon Goddess?"

Supreme Saint Jiuling scoffed. "The Moon Goddess is high and mighty. You can't see her just because you want to. The conference tomorrow will be hosted by Elder Wu, Emperor Jimie, and I. As for whether the Moon Goddess will appear or not, that is still unknown."

Then Supreme Saint Jiuling continued, “They’ll probably choose an Heir and priest from among the Saints at the conference. You three should prepare and try to get one of the spots.”

Su Qingling was a bit shocked. “Aren’t Supreme Saints the only ones qualified to be Priests? How come they will choose one among Saints?”

Supreme Saint Jiuling had a berating expression. “This is a special situation. Didn’t I say it before? This pertains to the survival of Guanghan Field.”

Su Qingling and Bu Ji’s expressions grew solemn.

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. Then he asked, “Excuse me, Supreme Saints, what exactly has happened?”

“I can’t explain in a few words,” Supreme Saint Jiuling said. “You’ll understand tomorrow at the conference.”

“Since you’re going to the Moon Goddess Mountain tomorrow, Zhang Ruochen,” Supreme Saint Manjian said, “don’t return to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. Stay in the Red Dragon Saint Territory and rest. If you have time, you can talk to Bu Ji and Su Qingling about the Saintly Way and Sword Way. You’re all the hope of the Guanghan Field.”

“So you’re name is Zhang Ruochen.”

Su Qingling smiled at Zhang Ruochen. Then she added, “If you want to know the reason why the Moon Goddess is holding the Thousand Saint Conference, I can tell you. Do you want to know?”

“I’ll know tomorrow, so whether you tell me or not, it’s not important.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen bowed to the two Supreme Saints again and walked out of Red Dragon Saint Palace.

Su Qingling clenched her fists and ground her teeth. She was so angry that her cheeks puffed up. “Does he have to be so inconsiderate? He’s as cold as a block of ice.”

“He is indeed a strange man. He doesn’t seem to be interested in anything other than cultivation.” Bu Ji shook his head,

feeling like he couldn't understand Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen went inside a cultivation residence of the Red Dragon Saint Palace. He started working on refining the Ning True Saint Dew. He raced against time, just wishing he could speed up his cultivation a bit.

He spent the entire night to refine more than 30 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. He could clearly feel that his cultivation had improved a bit.

I've only cultivated for a night and I already have such obvious effects. The Ning True Saint Dew is indeed a powerful treasure.

While testing the Rules of Saintly Way, Zhang Ruochen exercised his arm.

After combining the Rules of Saintly Way with his Holy Qi, he sent a palm forward. The power unleashed from his palm had actually gotten stronger.

“Come group outside the Red Dragon Saint Palace.”

Supreme Saint Manjian's voice traveled into Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Zhang Ruochen didn't continue to cultivate. He walked toward the Red Dragon Saint Palace.

Before he reached it, he saw beams of Saintly Way ripples rush into the sky. Each one was aggressive. Clearly, there were no weak figures.

When Zhang Ruochen arrived, there were already more than 100 Saints gathered outside the palace. They were all the best of the best among the Red Dragon Saint Territory cultivators.

Clearly, there were requirements for cultivation to join the Thousand Saint Conference.

Regular Saints weren't even qualified.

A fragrant breeze blew past. Then a beautiful figure appeared before Zhang Ruochen. A chiming laugh sounded. “It's only been one night and your cultivation has already improved again. You really are a cultivation fanatic.”



Su Qingling's figure was as delicate as a crescent moon. The arc of her chest was extremely shocking. It sketched a silhouette that invited people to fantasize.

Standing outside the Red Dragon Saint Palace, Su Qingling was the absolute star. Everyone's eyes turned to stare at her curvaceous body.

However, the Saints of Guanghan Field all knew that Su Qingling was very powerful. Plus, she had Supreme Saint Jiuling as her support, so no one got any inappropriate ideas about her.

However, they were all curious about one thing. It was rumored that Su Qingling had very high standards and was very arrogant. Not many Saints of Guanghan Field could meet her eye. How come she was so interested in a Heaven Pass Saint?

# Chapter 1419 - Emperor Jimie

Chapter 1419: Emperor Jimie

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Supreme Saint Manjian walked out of Red Dragon Saint Palace. The saint Qi started to shake as if it was being boiled.

“Supreme saint.”

All the saints standing outside Red Dragon Saint Palace bowed toward Supreme Saint Manjian. As for those lower-level saints and half saints, they were all kneeling down.

Supreme Saint Manjian shot a glance at the rays of evening light and said, “Let’s go.”

And then, Supreme Saint Manjian took out an airship that was only as large as a palm and waved his arm. The airship flew out, floating in the sky.

Whoosh!

A golden airship engulfed in saint light showed up in front of all the saints.

It looked like a lying golden ox that was three thousand feet long, and there were supreme saint inscriptions flowing on the surface of the airship.

The golden airship seemed to be a living being as it was breathing saint Qi in a regular way.

Su Qingling could tell that Zhang Ruochen was very interested in the golden airship. She walked toward Zhang Ruochen and said, “This is an origin saint airship made by Supreme Saint

Manjian, which cost all the resources he had. It's called Ox Saint Airship, and the spirit of this saint airship is a trace of the saint soul of Supreme Saint Manjian.”

“The airship cost all the resources a supreme saint had. How powerful is the saint airship?” Zhang Ruochen was kind of thrilled.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea how many resources Supreme Saint Manjian had before, however, Heaven World had far more resources than Kunlun's Field, and together with the wealth Supreme Saint Manjian accumulated in Guanghan Field, he might be several times richer than the supreme saints in Kunlun's Field.

Su Qingling said, “Ox Saint Airship can easily annihilate a planet with one strike. Saint airships are the bomb when fighting Hell World. Its power can match that of Supreme Saint Manjian, and ordinary supreme saints aren't able to destroy it. The fighting and defense power of Supreme Saint Manjian surged after creating it.

“Many supreme saints in Heaven World want a saint airship of their own, however, many of them can't achieve that because they failed to gather the resources needed.

“There're less than ten supreme saints in Guanghan Field who have saint airships.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “It seems Supreme Saint Manjian is a prominent being in Guanghan Field.”

“Every creature who becomes a supreme saint deserves reverence.”

Su Qingling stared at the Ox Saint Airship, and her eyes gleamed. She wanted to have a saint airship to herself so that she could tour around Heaven World, or even the universe.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What about Supreme Saint Nine Spirits?”

“He went back to Heaven Spirit Holy Domain yesterday. After all, a large number of saints from there are also going to the Thousand Saints Meeting. It would take ordinary saints ages to

get to Moon Goddess Mountain, so they have to be led by a supreme saint,' Su Qingling said.

The top-tier saints in Red Dragon Saint Domain all boarded the Ox Saint Airship, and then, the saint airship ascended into the sky and flew toward Moon Goddess Mountain.

The forces coming from Ox Saint Airship were enormous. Everywhere it passed, the space would tremble.

The half saints and saints from the Crypt of Sacred Central were all thrilled as they saw the Ox Saint Airship flying across Chaisang Saint Domain.

“The forces are enormous. Whose saint airship is it?” A half-saint elder was trembling.

After Kong Lanyou occupied Chaisang Saint Domain, all the monks who were stronger and as powerful as half saints from the Crypt of Sacred Central came here to refine themselves. Other than them, some other powers from Kunlun's Field also reached out to them and became members of Chaisang Saint Domain.

Kong Lanyou was sitting in an ancient saint palace, and her hair looked like a river, waving in the space, containing immense rules of saintly way.

She was also staring at the Ox Saint Airship at the moment, and she was kind of intimidated. She said, “What a powerful saint airship. There're indeed countless great beings in Heaven World.”

The Ox Saint Airship was covered by supreme saint inscriptions, so Kong Lanyou didn't detect Zhang Ruochen's forces. Soon, she closed her eyes and started to refine again.

Moon Goddess Mountain was a crescent-shaped mountain floating a hundred thousand feet above the ground. It was three hundred miles long and made of saint stones and saint jades.

Moon Goddess Mountain looked like a spectacular crescent moon from the ground.

There were sixty-two supreme saints in Guanghan Field, and those supreme saints all came to Moon Goddess Mountain with their best great beings.

Some of the supreme saints also came here by saint airship.

Obviously, supreme saints with saint airships were at a higher level than those without. They looked imperious.

One of the saint airships caught Zhang Ruochen's attention.

That saint airship was enormous, and there was a group of saint airships surrounding the saint airship. The palace was colorful, and exquisite-looking women were walking between palaces. They looked like maids, but each of them was at least at the half-saint level.

Su Qingling also stared at that saint airship and said, "That's Liu Palace Saint Airship that belongs to Emperor Jimie."

Zhang Ruochen asked, "He dares call himself an emperor? That person is a prominent being in Guanghan Field, isn't he?"

"Of course, he is."

Bu Ji walked out, showed up beside Zhang Ruochen and Su Qingling and said, "After Moon Goddess went missing, Emperor Jimie was the only person who managed to unite Guanghan Field and was approved by the Godly Tree, which is why he was crowned as an emperor."

Su Qingling said, "Emperor Jimie is one of the most powerful supreme saints in Guanghan Field, and the other two are Supreme Saint Nine Spirits and Wu Zu. They're the most likely to become Gods, so they have a totally different status in Guanghan Field."

Bu Ji said, "I've received something bad. The thirty-four hundred and eightieth son of Emperor Jimie, Jimie Po, has become a true saint and the most competitive candidate for the priests."

1

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Thirty-four hundred and eightieth son? What does that mean?"

“That means he’s the thirty-four hundred and eightieth son. Anything strange about it?” Bu Ji said calmly.

Zhang Ruochen said, “How did someone have so many children?”

Bu Ji laughed and said, “Emperor Jimie is the master of a world, and he’s lived for thousands of years. He has tens of thousands of concubines in his palace. Isn’t it normal that he has more than three thousand sons and five thousand daughters?”

Su Qingling also found it to be normal. She said, “Emperor Jimie is a supreme being, and his children all carry great bloodlines and body constitution. More than two thousand of his children made it to be saints.”

Bu Ji smiled and said, “He gave birth to more than two thousand saints himself. Emperor Jimie is the model we should look up to. Because of him, the power of Guanghan Field surged.”

Su Qingling then shot a glance at Bu Ji.

Bu Ji immediately shook his head and said, “Don’t worry, Qing Ling. I’ll never follow that.”

“Even if you want to learn from that, you can’t. Your body constitution is nothing compared to Emperor Jimie’s.”

Su Qingling looked very scornful, and then, she turned to Zhang Ruochen and smiled, “Among the children of Emperor Jimie, some of them inherited the talents and bloodline of Emperor Jimie completely. They’ve been receiving the best cultivation, and each of them has reached Peak Realm four times. That Jikong Po is one of them.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t seem to care about it. He didn’t care about being an heir or a priest.

Su Qingling tried to find any topics that Zhang Ruochen might be interested in after seeing Zhang Ruochen remain so nonchalant.

Suddenly, her eyes gleamed, and she said, “Do you know that you’ll be rewarded greatly if you become an heir or a priest?”

“What kind of reward?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Su Qingling said, “Ten thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew.”

Zhang Ruochen’s interest was piqued. He asked, “Really?”

Su Qingling said, “My grandpa told me, so of course it’s true. You should know that Nine True Saint Dew can not only help Heaven Pass saints refine rules of saintly way, but also help true saints and absolute saints.

“You need one thousand saint stones to buy a drop of Nine True Saint Dew, so you need ten thousand saint stones to buy ten thousand drops of it. No matter how powerful a saint is, he or she doesn’t have that much wealth.

1

“Besides, if you want to buy ten thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew, you need to have ten thousand merits. Even the person who’s ranked first on the ‘Saint Merits Rank’ doesn’t have that many merits.

“Which means this is the opportunity of a lifetime, and everyone will try to get that position.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes started to gleam. If he could actually get those ten thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew, he would have a much easier time becoming a true saint.

Bu Ji sighed. “The heir belongs to Wu Hao for sure. We can only fight for being a priest. Those who’re fighting for it are all prominent beings, and now, Jikong Po is also in the race.”

“Didn’t you say that you’re going to defeat Wu Hao? Why did you admit defeat before you even fight him?” Su Qingling smiled.

Bu Ji’s face immediately blushed as he couldn’t even argue against that.

“The Thousand Saints Meeting is about to start. Get in, supreme saints and saint kings,” Supreme Saint Nine Spirits said.

And then, the supreme saints and saint kings all flew toward  
Guanghan Godly Palace like traces of light.

As for the saints, they weren't qualified to enter the palace yet.



# Chapter 1420 - Thousand Saint Conference

Chapter 1420: Thousand Saint Conference

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Saints who hadn't entered the conference venue were all gathered at the edge of Moon Goddess Mountain. They couldn't enter the hinterland.

Zhang Ruochen surveyed them quietly. He realized that every Saint who could come to Moon Goddess Mountain was at least in the Heaven Pass Realm. There were close to 10,000 Saints.

This was a very shocking number.

It seemed like a large number, but they stood at the top of Guanghan Field's pyramid. They'd pulled through from among millions. They were the strong figures who'd survived thousands of large battles.

Each person was a sovereign of a place and could stand their ground.

If some force destroyed Moon Goddess Mountain and killed all the Saints there, it would be a catastrophe for the entire Guanghan Field.

Of course, there were the strong even among the strong.

Right now, the Saints present formed small groups.

The person in the center of each group both had strong abilities and a terrifying background.

Some Saints appeared around Su Qingling and Bu Ji to make small talk.

Zhang Ruochen stood in a corner by himself. He studied the people at the center of the groups.

One of them was a handsome man with long hair. There was a large group of Saints around him. Even Heaven Pass and True Saints had eyes of reverence when seeing him.

The beautiful female Saints would even walk up to him and show off their beauty in different ways as if trying to attract his attention.

Just then, that handsome man sensed someone watching him. He glanced in Zhang Ruochen's direction. He realized it was only a weak Heaven Pass Saint, so he shook his head and looked away.

“That's Wu Hao, first of the Saints Merits Rank.”

Su Qingling appeared behind Zhang Ruochen at some point. She followed his eyes to Wu Hao.

“Very strong,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Su Qingling nodded. Her pretty eyes grew serious. “Indeed very strong. You should know that you need 500,000 merits to enter the Saints Merits Rank. So, most of the people on the list are Absolute Saints who've lived for centuries.

“But Wu Hao has only cultivated for around 100 years and already has 4,700,000 merits. He far surpassed those senior Absolute Saints and powerfully got the first place of the Saints Merits Rank.”

“How many merits does Bu Ji have?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“He probably only has 500 or 600 thousand. But... Entering the Saints Merits Rank as a True Saint is already very good.”

Su Qingling thought for a moment and continued, “According to the information from Grandfather, the Heir is undoubtedly Wu Hao. As for the Priest, they will probably choose from the True Saints in the Saints Merits Rank.”

Zhang Ruochen had already decided to fight for the 10,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. Naturally, he would care about this.

Actually, if he asked the Moon Goddess for 10,000 drops, she would definitely give it to him. But if a Saint made an exchange with a goddess, he would always be at a disadvantage.

Today, he asked the Moon Goddess for 10,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

Tomorrow, he would pay an even greater cost.

1

Plus, Zhang Ruochen didn't like asking others for help. If he could get something with his own abilities, he definitely wouldn't plead to others.

“How many True Saints could enter the Saints Merits Rank?” he asked.

“Including Bu Ji and I, there are only four. The other two are Spiritual Lady Ling Mi of the Stone Spirit Tribe and Wen Shucheng, one of the Tree God's heirs.

“Ling Mi is a piece of Bright Moon Saint Stone who developed a consciousness and turned into human form. She has an undying spiritual body and can easily convert Spiritual Qi into her own power. If you go up against her, you must not get fooled by her looks. She's actually very strong.”

It was clear that Su Qingling had strong animosity towards Ling Mi. This animosity was a woman's natural animosity.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and quickly found Ling Mi.

She was a beautiful woman shrouded in saintly mist. She stood at the edge of Moon Goddess Mountain. Her skin was snowy white and translucent, without any flaws. Her entire being radiated with a cool aura.

It was only a hazy figure, but she was suffocatingly beautiful.

There were many youthful male Saints gathered around her, but no one dared to get close. They were really appreciating

her from afar and not daring to approach her.

When Su Qingling saw that Zhang Ruochen was looking at Ling Mi, she immediately stood before him and blocked his view. She pointed in another direction. “Do you see the guy holding a bamboo scroll? That is Wen Shucheng, the heir of the Tree God.

“He cultivates Spiritual Power. From the moment he was born, he started studying and cultivating the Life Way under the Tree God’s trunk. Now, his Spiritual Power has reached the middle of the 54th level. He’s equal to a True Saint for Martial Saints.”

The beginning and middle of the 54th level for Spiritual Power was equivalent to the True Saint Realm.

The end and pinnacle of the 54th level was equivalent to the Absolute Saint Realm.

“Don’t think that he looks gentle and scholarly, and cultivates the Life Way. He’s actually very strong. He has high attainments in the Life spells. Bu Ji once fought with him and was restricted within ten exchanges.”

Bu Ji walked over then. Hearing that, his eyes flared. “My cultivation is only in the middle of the True Saint Realm. Wait until I get to the pinnacle. I’ll kill him if we fight again.”

Su Qingling scoffed. “Unfortunately, you don’t have the chance to reach the pinnacle. You’ll lose to him today.”

Bu Ji was about to refute that...

Suddenly, Supreme Saint Jiuling’s voice came from the direction of the Guanghan Divine Palace. “All Saints of Guanghan Field, you may enter now.”

Hearing this voice, all the Saints present used their fastest techniques and charged toward Guanghan Divine Palace.

The Guanghan Field had a high-matter plane. Even a Saint couldn’t unleash too fast of a speed.

Plus, the Moon Goddess’ divine might pressed down on Moon Goddess Mountain. The Saints suffered from even more pressure, so their speed was even slower.

Even so, Wu Hao's speed was still shocking. He was the first to reach Guanghan Divine Palace. He was miles ahead of the second person.

Seeing this scene, all of the Supreme Saints present nodded.

“Wu Hao is a top talent produced by Guanghan Field. With his talent, there's even hope for him to enter the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ of the entire Heaven World.”

“With Wu Hao as the leader, we'll have a chance for the Saints round of the Seven Fields Merits Battle.”

...

Elder Wu was one of the three giants of Guanghan Field. He stood at the uppermost position, but it was dark there. Even light was swallowed when it flew close.

Thus, no one could see Elder Wu.

However, hearing the compliments from the Supreme Saints, the Saint Kings of the Wu Family were all happy.

Without a doubt, the Saints on the Saints Merits Rank would be the first to arrive.

Whoever arrived first would naturally choose a better position for themselves. They could also show off their abilities before the Supreme Saints. It was a chance to display themselves.

Zhang Ruochen didn't show off purposely. He just went forward with a normal speed and arrived with a group of Heaven Pass Saints. He sat somewhere on the side.

Anyway, it wasn't like whoever arrived first would become the Priest.

There was no need to be so rushed.

Extremely strong Supreme Saint might burst from the venue of the Thousand Saint Conference. The Saints of the Heaven Pass Realm all sat in their seats, terrified and not daring to breathe heavily.

If they were lower Saints, they would probably be sent to the ground from the aura.

Perhaps this was also why lower Saints weren't allowed to participate in the conference.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Guanghan Divine Palace up ahead. The palace loomed. It radiated with impressive divine light. Any being who stood before it was like an ant looking up at the heavens.

That was where the Moon Goddess lived.

Perhaps, she was inside the palace and looking down at the Saints now.

Every Saint had the same thought, so they all sat properly. They worked to show off their best side. If the Moon Goddess liked them, they could rise up through the ranks.

Supreme Saint Jiuling sat at the front. White hair flying, he announced, "Today, we have gathered everyone to Moon Goddess Mountain to tell everyone something very important. It pertains to the survival of Guanghan Field.

"Not long ago, one of the battlefields in the western universe, Zuling Field, was destroyed. Next, the Heaven World will create another battlefield among the various worlds of the west to continue fighting against Hell World. The new battlefield will be chosen among the Shatuo Seven Fields."

Boom!

An uproar burst forth as soon as Supreme Saint Jiuling spoke.

"Zuling Field only became a battlefield 30 years ago and it's already been destroyed. Has the battle between Heaven and Hell World intensified even more?"

"We cannot let Guanghan Field become the newest battlefield. Once it does, it will definitely be destroyed. Our descendants are still living there. They shouldn't be killed."

"If Guanghan Field follows in Zuling Field's steps, we'll be cultivators without a motherland. The most pitiful of Heaven World are the beings without a home."

"We must protect Guanghan Field even if we risk our lives. We must not let it become the newest battlefield."

...

Seeing that everyone was willing to risk their lives to protect Guanghai Field, Supreme Saint Jiuling nodded in satisfaction. “Those present are some of the strongest beings of Guanghai Field,” he said. “If you wish to protect it, everyone must work together to win the Seven Fields Merits Battle.”

# Chapter 1421 - The Puppet Fights Back

Chapter 1421: The Puppet Fights Back

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Most of the saints who were present had gone through the ‘Seven Fields Merits Battle’ thirty years ago, so they knew what was going to happen.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits said, “The battle will be divided into four separate battles, Gods Merits Battle, Supreme Saints Merits Battle, Saint Kings Merits Battle and Saints Merits Battle. The fields will be ranked based on their merits, and the field ranked last will be chosen as the battlefield.

“Guanghan Field is ranked second last in Shatuo Seven Fields, so we’re in a very dangerous position.

“We need to try our best to get to first place. If we can get first place, we won’t be ranked last, and we can escape being the new battlefield.”

1

Suddenly, there came an earth-shattering voice. “Fight for Guanghan Field to the death!”

Zhang Ruochen heard a melodious voice, and that voice sounded apathetic. “Do you understand the rules of Seven Fields Merits Battle?”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit dazed. He looked to Guanghan Godly Palace, nodded and said, “Is this what you wanted me to do for you? Join Seven Fields Merits Battle?”



“Not just joining, but helping Guanghan Field win first place in the Saints Merits Battle.”

He heard the voice of Moon Goddess again.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If Guanghan Field gets first place in the Saints Merits Battle, it’ll prove the potential of the field and won’t be the next battlefield, won’t it?”

“That’s right,” Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Okay! I’ll try my best.”

Moon Goddess said, “I need to tell you something. Kunlun’s Field is also a member of the western universe. They’re arranged in Shatuo Heavenly Domain after entering Heaven World. They’re ranked last in Shatuo Seven Fields, so it’s likely that it’ll become the new battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help clenching his fists.

Moon Goddess said, “Why? Do you regret it?”

“You’ve already asked me once, and I’ll give you the same answer. I don’t,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Moon Goddess continued, “I fought for Kunlun’s Field before, and I almost died in the battle. Actually, it doesn’t matter which field you’re fighting for. In the end, we’re all fighting against Hell World.”

“No matter. Since I’ve agreed to help you, I’ll try my best. As for the fate of Kunlun’s Field, that’s a matter for the future.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Now I understand what you said on Saint Wood Mountain, and that it’s impossible for Chi Yao to let me take away the top-tier great beings from Sacred Central Empire. That’s her bottom line, and the line for Kunlun’s Field.”

“Also, they have many families and friends in Kunlun’s Field, so it’ll be a good thing for them to fight for the people in Kunlun’s Field.”

It was Moon Goddess who had saved Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi and tens of thousands of soldiers from Sacred Central Empire.

Certainly, Zhang Ruochen needed to return the favor.

This time, Zhang Ruochen was standing against Kunlun's Field in a matter of life or death, but what could he do about it?

Even if he wanted to fight for Kunlun's Field, he couldn't leave his name on the 'Merits Record' of Kunlun's Field as he was a member of Guanghan Field now.

Zhang Ruochen said, "If I help Guanghan Field win first place in the Saint Merits Battle, can you do something for me?"

"Are you asking for a reward or negotiating with me?" Moon Goddess asked.

No saints were allowed to negotiate with Gods. The best they could do was to ask for some rewards from a God, and anything a God bestowed would make a saint go mad as they would worship it.

Apparently, Zhang Ruochen sounded more like he was negotiating instead of asking for rewards.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't intimidated at all. He said, "It all boils down to how you regard it. After all, you're a God, but I'm only human. It's okay if you say no, and I'll still fight for Guanghan Field."

Moon Goddess was rendered silent as she found Zhang Ruochen to be so reckless that he dared offend a God. However, she had to comply with Zhang Ruochen's request as she needed Zhang Ruochen more than ever.

Undoubtedly, the chess piece was fighting back at the chess player this time.

If the chess player compromised, the chess piece might get more rebellious in the future.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits sat at the top of the meeting and said, "According to Moon Goddess, we need to pick an heir and a priest among the saints.

"The strongest saint will naturally be chosen to be the heir and lead all the saints from Guanghan Field. He or she needs to try

his or her best to get more merits. We've decided that Wu Hao will be the heir. Any objections?"

No one dared raise any objections as this was decided by three of the most prominent supreme saints.

And besides, Wu Hao was invincible among all the saints, so no one dared challenge him.

1

"No objections," said all the saints.

Wu Hao was standing near the center of the meeting, and he looked upset as he saw no one challenge him.

And then, Supreme Saint Nine Spirits said, "The priest is the representative of the God. It can temporarily replace the heir during Merits Battle, and if the heir makes a bad judgment, the priest can also exercise its right to correct its errors. Priests and heirs check each other.

"The heir will be the strongest absolute saint with the greatest potential, and the priest will be the strongest true saint with the greatest potential.

"When someone becomes a priest, he or she will be awarded ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

"I'll pick the priest from the true saints in the 'Saint Merits Rank.' Any objections?"

All the supreme saints sat in their chairs and consented to Supreme Saint Nine Spirits' suggestion.

Not even supreme saints had any problem, so no other saints dared question that.

A young man wearing golden armor stood up and said, "Since the priest needs to be the true saint with the greatest potential, why are only true saints from the 'Saint Merits Rank' being considered?"

Everyone reckoned the young man was incredible.

Zhang Ruochen looked to that golden-armored man, and he was Jikong Po, the thirty-four hundred and eightieth son of Emperor Jimie.

“Great question.”

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits looked pleased. He said, “If any true saint thinks he or she can defeat the four true saints on the ‘Saint Merits Rank,’ you can give it a try.”

“I’ll join.”

Jikong Po walked out, holding a golden dragon spear that was ten feet long.

“I’ll join as well.”

“Worth trying for ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew.”

And then, Su Qingling, Bu Ji, Wen Shushen, Qin Bi and six other pinnacle true saints also walked to the center of the Thousand Saints Meeting.

Those who dared compete for being a priest were all the best talents Guanghai Field had.

The six pinnacle true saints were only slightly less gifted than Su Qingling and the others. Each of them was strong enough to fight absolute saints.

There were eleven of them in total.

Supreme Saints Nine Spirits said, “Any more volunteers?”

Some of the true saints really wanted to give it a go, but they also sighed secretly when they saw those eleven volunteers as they knew they weren’t their match.

Zhang Ruochen was still waiting for Moon Goddess’s reply as he could see that Moon Goddess left that position for him.

If Moon Goddess didn’t agree to his terms, he wouldn’t go compete for being a priest even if he didn’t want those drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

“I can help you with one thing, but make it reasonable. It’s not a good idea to anger a God,” Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen stood up with a straight face and said, “I’ll also join.”

Zhang Ruochen walked to the center of the meeting as all the saints stared at them with surprise.

“What? How does a Heaven Pass saint dare compete to be a priest?”

“And he just reached Heaven Pass Realm.”

“This is the worst time to show off. He’s acting like a clown.”

...

Many saints started to laugh at Zhang Ruochen as they reckoned he was humiliating himself.

Some of the true saints who were competing for the priest position twisted their lips to stop themselves from smiling.

Jikong Po looked at him coldly and said, “He’s beyond himself here.”

The supreme saints present all looked at Zhang Ruochen seriously as their judgments were much better than those of saints and saint kings. They could tell that Zhang Ruochen was extraordinary.

Emperor Jimie’s eyes glinted, and he asked Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, “Is that the kid Moon Goddess brought back?”

“That’s right.”

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits nodded.

Emperor Jimie smiled. He originally had no interest in the fight among saints at all, and he didn’t even care whether Jikong Po could become the priest or not. However, Emperor Jimie’s interest had finally been piqued.

“The fight for becoming a priest has officially begun.

“Whoever seizes this saint sword first will be the priest.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits held up the saint sword, flicked his fingers and knocked the saint sword out.

Whoosh!

The saint sword flew out and landed on top of Guanghan Godly Palace.

Everyone was shocked seeing that.

Moon Goddess was living in Guanghai Godly Palace, so it'd be blasphemy if they went to the top of the godly palace to get the sword.

This was also a test for monks' guts, state of mind, and willpower.

# Chapter 1422 - Priest Competition

Chapter 1422: Priest Competition

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A deity should not be offended.

This was a deep-rooted view in all beings.

Now, they had to offend a deity in order to fight for the priest's position. This made the hearts of all the Saints tremble.

But Zhang Ruochen didn't feel any hesitation. With a Luan and phoenix's shadow appearing under his feet, he rushed out quickly.

The remaining 11 True Saints froze. Then they also used their fastest speed to charge toward Guanghan Divine Palace.

“That saint sword is mine. No one can fight with me.”

Ji Kongpo's feet stepped on two Kun shadows. His speed was actually faster than Zhang Ruochen and soon surpassed him.

In addition, Su Qingling and Ling Mi were extremely fast too. They left later but arrived sooner and were almost at the same level as Ji Kongpo.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was only in the beginning of the Heaven Pass Realm. Compared to the top prides of Guanghan Field, he had no advantage in speed.

“Even some guy from the Heaven Pass Realm wants to fight for the priest position? Get out of the way. Don't block me.”

There was a muscular three-meter-tall man behind Zhang Ruochen. He charged over, legs pushing powerfully. He sped

up greatly and sent out a blue-green metal fist, punching Zhang Ruochen's back.

Before the metal fist arrived, a terrible sound of wind and thunder entered Zhang Ruochen's ears.

This muscular guy wasn't a human but a Taigu Remain. Not only was his physical body a Saint, but he was also filled with Chaotic Qi.

More importantly, he'd reached the pinnacle of the True Saint Realm.

If a Heaven Pass Saint were hit by his fist, he'd be heavily injured or even dead.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen's body twisted. He turned back and formed a fist print with his hands, blocking behind him.

Boom!

The fist strength sent Zhang Ruochen barreling toward Guanghai Divine Palace. He arrived at the palace even before Ji Kongpo, Ling Mi and Su Qingling.

"He could actually block my punch with half of my strength. No wonder that guy dares to get into this. He does have some abilities." That muscular guy was a bit dazed.

The Saints who weren't participating in the priest competition were also shocked.

"The Red-Eyed Blue Wolf can fight with a beginner Absolute Saint for a long while without losing. It's a bit unbelievable for a Heaven Pass Saint to take his punch."

"How come I feel like the Red-Eyed Blue Wolf is on his side? That punch was clearly to help bring him to the Guanghai Divine Palace, hehe."

...

The Guanghai Divine Palace was more than 400 meters tall. It was majestic and beautiful, spraying with divine light. The steps, walls, and pillars were all made out of high-purity saint stones and jade. If one looked carefully, one would discover



that the stone and jade were carved with delicate patterns, such as flying birds, fairies, dragons, stars, etc.

But standing below Guanghan Divine Palace, one felt extreme divine might.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's cultivation, he still felt like a divine mountain was pressing on him. He could only climb up slowly.

Ji Kongpo, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling had also rushed to the Guanghan Divine Palace. They also suffered from the divine might's suppression.

“Even a Heaven Pass Saint wants to get onto Guanghan Divine Palace? Get down here.”

Ji Kongpo was very decisive. He attacked Zhang Ruochen directly. The gold-scale snake spear transformed into a dozen beams of golden light. They stabbed forward at once, enveloping Zhang Ruochen's entire body.

To Zhang Ruochen, it was like a dozen golden snakes bared their fangs, snapping at him.

He was forced to stop and take out his Abyss Ancient Sword to block them.

Hundreds of beams of Sword Qi solidified instantly. They gathered into a shield, crashing against the dozen snake apparitions.

Thud, thud.

A string of explosions sounded in the space between Ji Kongpo and Zhang Ruochen.

One had to admit that Ji Kongpo was even stronger than Bu Ji, who was in the beginning of the True Saint Realm. No wonder Bu Ji felt pressure when he heard that Ji Kongpo had entered the True Saint Realm.

“He actually blocked Ji Kongpo's fatal strike. This Heaven Pass Saint isn't simple.”

“Ji Kongpo has always been able to defeat people of the same realm with one strike. Now, he's an entire level above his

opponent but he couldn't defeat him. This is miraculous.”

...

Ji Kongpo's physique was very strong. He'd reached the Peak Realm four times and also saintified his body. Compared to Wu Hao's Complete Body, he was only a bit weaker. He was basically a Pre-Complete Body.

Right now, Ji Kongpo was also surprised. Even though he didn't use all his power because he'd underestimated his enemy, barely any True Saints could take that fatal hit, let alone a beginner Heaven Pass Saint.

Because of this delay, Ling Mi and Su Qingling had already reached 30 meters. In addition, Wen Shucheng and Bu Ji had caught up too. Ji Kongpo didn't dare to dally anymore and stopped attacking Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Kongpo used his gold-scale snake spear as support and flung himself up. He shot to 30 meters instantly and swung the spear at Su Qingling.

“What an annoying guy.”

Two saint swords flew out of Su Qingling's forehead. One crashed against the gold-scale snake spear. The other went for Ling Mi.

Since she was held back by Ji Kongpo, she couldn't let Ling Mi rush up either.

The three instantly got tangled up.

“Qingling, let me help you.”

Bu Ji activated his strong martial soul. Like a huge golden lion climbing up Guaghan Divine Palace, he quickly charged to the edge of the battle ring.

Ji Kongpo was clearly weaker than Ling Mi and Su Qingling. He was forced out of the battle ring and crashed into Bu Ji, who'd charged over.

Thus, the two started fighting.

Zhang Ruochen circled around the battle ring and continued climbing. He soon reached the 100-meter mark.

The four who were fighting clearly realized that someone had surpassed them. They immediately stopped fighting and pursued quickly.

The higher they got, the stronger the divine might became.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was the least afraid of divine might. It could be said that the higher he was, the bigger his advantage became.

Now, he was already 200 meters up and had the biggest advantage. Thus, he used his fastest physical technique. As long as he maintained this advantage, the position of priest was definitely his.

The Saints from the conference below were in an uproar.

“Am I seeing this correctly? A beginner Heaven Pass Saint has actually surpassed the absolute geniuses of Guanghan Field—Ji Kongpo, Ling Mi, Su Qingling, Wen Shucheng, and Buji—and rushed to the front?”

“That Heaven Pass Saint could actually block the Red-Eyed Blue Wolf and Ji Kongpo’s attacks. How could he be an average man?”

“Who exactly is he? Which Supreme Saint is he under?”

“Even if this man doesn’t get the saint sword, he’s made a name for himself today.”

Wu Hao looked up, focusing on Zhang Ruochen. An interested expression appeared. “Everyone, watch carefully. There is divine might weighing down around Guanghan Divine Palace.”

“If I’ve guessed correctly, the higher one’s cultivation, the stronger the suppression from divine might.”

“The higher you climb, the stronger the suppression is as well.”

The Saints nearby all had expressions of realization. They all lamented that Wu Hao’s observation skills were advanced.

“This way, it does seem fair.”

“No wonder Ji Kongpo, an early True Saint, could fight for a while with Ling Mi and Su Qingling, at the peaks of the True Saint Realm. This is the reason.”

“Even if that Heaven Pass Saint suffers from less divine might, it’s still incredible that he could break free from a group of top talents.”

Moments later, Zhang Ruochen was already at 300 meters.

Below him, Ling Mi and Su Qingling were right behind. They were already at 250 meters.

Ji Kongpo was slightly behind Ling Mi and Su Qingling. Looking at the uppermost Zhang Ruochen, heavy fury appeared in his eyes. He let out long screams.

He felt humiliated to be surpassed by a small character that he’d overlooked before.

Today, even if he couldn’t become the priest, he would still force that Heaven Pass Saint down from Guanghan Divine Palace.

“Ling Mi,” Ji Kongpo called. “If I help you, will you give me half of the 10,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew you receive?”

“Sure.”

Ling Mi agreed to Ji Kongpo’s conditions because she could also see that if they didn’t work together, the Heaven Pass Saint might take the saint sword.

Ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew was a small matter, but she had to get the position of priest. She couldn’t let the fate of the Guanghan Field be in the hands of a Heaven Pass Saint.

Ji Kongpo stood three feet behind Ling Mi. He formed a huge Kun print with his hands and sent it out. Eighteen rings of Qi appeared, hitting Ling Mi’s back.

The next moment, Ling Mi sped up. She charged up like a beam of white light.

“Qingling, I’ll also help you.” Bu Ji rushed up from behind. He activated his Supreme Saint martial soul and also sent out

18 beams of Qi. Su Qingling rushed forward, catching up to Zhang Ruochen.

“Thanks! If I get the Ning True Saint Dew, I’ll give you half.” Su Qingling’s lovely laugh sounded.

Ji Kongpo and Bu Ji didn’t give up on fighting for the position of priest. They also climbed up with all their might.

380 meters high.

Ling Mi attacked Zhang Ruochen. A translucent finger pointed out from the white saintly mist.

In that moment, all the rules changed with her finger as the center. They distorted.

Zhang Ruochen felt an extremely dangerous aura. Thus, his Holy Qi circulated fiercely and harrowing black light spread from the Abyss Ancient Sword. He cut down on Ling Mi with all his might.

Boom!

The blade of the Abyss Ancient Sword crashed against Ling Mi’s finger. Metal and stone clashed, producing a loud explosion that shocked the world.

The next moment, black and white light flooded in all directions.

# Chapter 1423 - Amazing

Chapter 1423: Amazing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen stepped back dozens of feet after warding off that move. Luckily, he didn't get injured, so he kept climbing up.

Ling Bi looked a bit weird in the saint mist. And then, she climbed up while attacking Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

Su Qingling showed up beside Zhang Ruochen, smiled and said, "I'm only doing this to become priest."

Su Qingli released great sword intent, controlling the two saint swords to attack Zhang Ruochen and Ling Bi at the same time while climbing up with full strength.

Su Qingli was highly-achieved in sword way. Although she didn't practice 'Wordless Sword Manual,' her attack power was just as strong as that of sword saints.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dare underestimate Su Qingling, but he didn't used the power of time and space, so he performed the sword intent of Sword Seven nine times.

Whoosh Whoosh!

Nine shadows showed up, and the nine moves almost attacked at the same time, knocking away Su Qingling's saint sword.

What Zhang Ruochen performed was the entire Nine-Life Sword Technique, and his sword techniques had enormous power. After combining it with Sword Seven, it had abstruse power.

“Fantastic sword techniques. It seems your sword intent has reached the saint level. We have to have a trial fight with each other once after this.”

Su Qingling smiled and blinked at Zhang Ruochen seductively.

Su Qingling was rushing at the front, and she was already four thousand feet high, and she was only hundreds of feet away from the saint sword.

The fight at the top of Guanghan Godly Palace was fierce.

However, some people noticed a weird scene as Wen Shushen, the descendant of the Tree God, was still standing at the bottom of Guanghan Godly Palace.

He groveled toward the godly palace, and he looked respectful and regal.

After that, Wen Shushen stood up, looked to the sky and said, “Looks like I can still make it in time.”

Wen Shushen pointed forward.

Whoosh!

More than ten golden vines showed up around his body, and those vines were gleaming like ten godly ropes growing along the wall of Guanghan Godly Palace.

Bang!

The six pinnacle true saints were wound around by the golden vines, and they were dragged down from the godly palace, falling on the ground.

Only Jikong Po, Bu Ji, Ling Bi, Su Qingling and Zhang Ruochen remained at the top of Guanghan Godly Palace.

However, they were also interfered with by the golden vines.

“What an annoying guy to be attacking us from the distance.”

Bu Ji yelled in anger and broke the golden vines. However, the golden vines immediately grew back, and they became sturdier.

“He practices his mind power, and he has comprehended the way of life. Distant attack is his strength,” Ling Bi said.

Jingkong Po sneered and said, “If I were only one hundred feet away from him, I could pierce a hole in his body with my spear.”

“Then why don’t you go?” Su Qingling chuckled.

All the saints from Guanghai Field were shocked.

An absolute saint said, “I thought that Wen Shusheng was as powerful as Su Qingling. I never expected him to fight more than ten great beings at the same time.”

Wu Hao smiled and said, “Wen Shusheng is the best at long distance attacks, compared to all his peers, but it’s inaccurate to say he’s much more powerful than Su Qingling and Ling Bi. They’re being checked by Wen Shusheng because they don’t want to jump off Guanghai Godly Palace to fight him in short distance.”

The older saints all nodded, as they agreed with what Wu Hao said.

Wen Shusheng wielded a vine, which spread toward a saint sword, winding around it.

Just as everyone thought that Wen Shusheng would seize the saint sword, a ball of blue flames burned the golden vine.

Sizzle!

The golden vine was engulfed in flames, and then, it was burnt to ashes.

“How is that possible? The golden vines were made by Wen Shusheng’s mind power and life rules. How did a ball of flames burn the golden vines into ashes?”

All the saints and saint kings looked to the Heaven Pass saint who wielded the flames.

Even some of the supreme saints who hadn’t been paying attention to the fight also looked to the top of Guanghai Godly Palace.

“Divine Fire Jingmie. Interesting.” A supreme saint smiled.



Wen Shusheng was also a bit surprised. And then, he mobilized the other golden vines and attacked Zhang Ruochen with them.

There was a three-foot-long thorn at the top of each vine.

The seven apertures on Zhang Ruochen's hands opened, and Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out, burning all the golden vines to ashes.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and dashed toward the saint sword.

"I've underestimated you. You're a force to be reckoned with after all."

Jikong Po yelled, and he tried to stab Zhang Ruochen's heart with his golden snake spear. "Annihilation."

Meanwhile, Su Qingling, Ling Bi and Bu Ji all performed their attack skills against Zhang Ruochen who was the closest to the saint sword.

Su Qingling mobilized all her saint Qi and wielded two saint swords that were ten thousand patterns saint weapon, utilizing half the power of the saint weapons.

Ling Bi took out a dragon pearl and held it in his hand. Suddenly, a giant ice dragon flew out of the spirit pearl.

"Step aside, Zhang Ruochen, I need to perform the greatest power of the supreme saint battle soul."

Bu Ji yelled, and golden whirlpools gushed out. The battle soul of a golden lion that was a hundred feet long was formed behind him, releasing great forces of a supreme saint.

If Zhang Ruochen didn't step aside, he would be completely encircled.

Zhang Ruochen didn't do that. Instead, he summoned Buddha sarira and held it in his palm, triggering its original power.

Whoosh!

A Buddha shadow and a dragon shadow showed up at the same time, clashing with the attacks of the four great beings.

Boom!

The original power of the sarira warded off the attacks from the four great beings for a second.

Carnivorous Holy Flower that emerged from Zhang Ruochen's back grabbed the handle of the saint sword and dragged it out of the crack of the saint stone.

In the next second, the attacks from the four great beings broke the defense of the sarira, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

However, Zhang Ruochen had already jumped off Guanghai Godly Palace, which was four thousand feet tall.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen landed back in the center of Thousand Saints Meeting, kneeling on the ground with one knee, a saint Qi wave spreading from his body.

Zhang Ruochen then put the Carnivorous Holy Flower back in his body and raised the saint sword.

An elementary level Heaven Pass saint had seized the saint sword!

Everyone was astounded.

Everyone saw that Heaven Pass saint fight the most powerful true saints from Guanghai Field, and he managed to ward off the attacks from four true saints for one second.

How did a Heaven Pass saint get so powerful?

Jikong Po, Su Qingling, Bu Ji and Ling Bi all stood at the top of Guanghai Palace. One of them was aggressive, one was pretty, one was masculine and one was ethereal. All of them were amazed.

Wu Hao stroked his chin and finally looked excited.

This was the look he'd only have when he spotted someone at the same level.

Emperor Jimie smiled. "Not bad. With him and Wu Hao, we'll stand a better chance in the Saint Merits Battle."

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits nodded and said, “The priest of the Saint Merits Battle is Zhang Ruochen. The Thousand Saints Meeting is over. All the saints can leave except the heir and the priest.”

After the saints left, Wu Hao, Zhang Ruochen and the other two saint kings stayed in the meeting room.

Those two saint kings were the heir and the priest of the Saint King Merits Battle.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits gave the two saints the award and briefed them on some issues before they were asked to leave.

Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao walked forward and bowed at the three supreme saints. “Supreme saints.”

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits nodded and took out two saint jade bottles from his sleeves.

Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao took the saint jade bottles and put them away. Without a doubt, there were ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew inside.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirit said, “The battlefield you’re going to for the Saint Merits Battle is Zuling Field, and your enemies will be the Luosha race from Hell World. The battle will last for three months, and you’ll know the rules for the battle when the Saint Merits Battle begins. I’m just telling you this for you to be better prepared.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and asked, “Wasn’t Zuling Field destroyed already?”

Supreme Saint Nne Spirits was very patient. He said, “Zuling Field is indeed broken into fragments, and some of the fragments have been turned into ashes and have entered an Apocalyptic period, which is why the saint kings from Luosha race have already moved away.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What’s an Apocalyptic period? What’s Luosha race? Why did all the saint kings move away?”

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits smiled. “You can ask Qingling about it, and she’ll tell you the answer. I need to brief you on something more important first.”

# Chapter 1424 - Heir And Priest

Chapter 1424: Heir And Priest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Supreme Saint Jiuling continued speaking. “You are not allowed to bring any special battle treasures above the Saint King Realm to Zuling Field. For example, Saint Figure Runes.

“In other words, you can’t use someone else’s power directly.

“Of course, treasures that you’ve already combined into your body or Supreme Saint and divine relic ancient weapons can be brought onto the battlefield. Only one person is an exception.”

“Who?”

Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao asked this at almost the same time.

“The Priest.”

Then Supreme Saint Jiuling continued, “Each field in the Shatuo Seven Fields will choose a priest. The priest can bring a weapon blessed by a deity, but this weapon can only be used once.”

“Since the priest can only use it once, when should he use it?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“The Zuling Field has already entered the state of being the end of the world battleground,” Supreme Saint Jiuling said.

“The Saint Kings of both parties have already retreated.

However, if a Saint King from the Luosha Race was hidden in

Zuling Field, it would be a disaster for the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields.

“The divine weapon of the priest is used in reaction to these uncertain variables.

“In addition, if the Heir is too domineering and makes an extreme yet wrong decision, the priest can use the divine weapon to...kill him.”

When he said that, Supreme Saint Jiuling stared deeply at Wu Hao.

Wu Hao’s expression didn’t change, but fear flashed past his eyes.

“For now, only the seven Heirs and priests know of the existence of the divine weapons,” Supreme Saint Jiuling said. “Don’t tell the other Saints. This is the only way we can win against uncertainties.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the saint sword in his hands. He felt a terrifying energy wave inside the sword. “This is the divine weapon?”

“Indeed.” Supreme Saint Jiuling nodded.

Zhang Ruochen carefully put the saint sword into his spatial ring for safekeeping.

“The merit battles for the Saints, Saint Kings, Supreme Saints, and deities occur simultaneously. Thus, after you enter Zuling Field, everything is on you. Don’t think about having someone come help you. You have extremely heavy responsibilities on your shoulders. You must unite for the survival of Guanghan Field. Work to kill more Luosha and gain more merits.”

Supreme Saint Jiuling was extremely serious. His tone was grave as well.

“Supreme Saint, do not worry. May the Moon Goddess rest assured as well. With Brother Zhang and I here, we’ll risk our lives to win more merits.”

Wu Hao clapped Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder and laughed brightly.

Then Supreme Saint Jiuling told them that the merits battle would start around ten days later.

After Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao retreated, the three giants of Guanghan Field sank into silence.

Half a beat later, Emperor Jimie spoke first. “Thankfully, Kunlun’s Field has joined Heaven World. Otherwise, Guanghan Field would definitely be last and become the next sacrifice.”

“The gods of Heaven World allowed Kunlun’s Field to join us, probably already planning to let it become the next battlefield,” Supreme Saint Jiuling said. “After all, there are many great treasures hidden there. Even a god would be tempted.”

Elder Wu’s voice rang out. “Everyone, do not underestimate Kunlun’s Field. One hundred thousand years ago, Kunlun’s Field was fifth on the Ten Thousand Worlds Merits Rank. They almost became the top sovereign of the western universe. Even if they’ve gone through a 100,000-year-long dark age, they’re still formidable. If they have some hidden tactics and have more merits than us, it will be a catastrophe for Guanghan Field.”

Emperor Jimie and Supreme Saint Jiuling both nodded solemnly. “No matter what, we have no way out of this merits battle. We must try our best and win, even if we lose our lives.”

After the Ten Thousand Saint Conference ended, all the Supreme Saints of Guanghan Field left for the saint territories with large amounts of Six Saints to the Sky Wine and Hua Divine Pills.

They had to develop more Saints within ten days.

Each new Saint meant a slightly higher chance for victory.

All the Saints and Saint Kings who’d attended the conference stayed in the Tongyou Saint Territory that the Moon Goddess was in. They waited quietly for the merits battle to start.

After flying down Moon Goddess Mountain, Wu Hao brought Zhang Ruochen to where the Saints were staying.

Along the way, Wu Hao asked, “Brother Zhang, you must be the Saint that the Moon Goddess brought back, right?”

“I indeed came to the Heaven World with the Moon Goddess,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“You’ve just entered the Heaven Pass Realm and are already on the same level as Ji Kongpo. Do you have the Complete Body Constitution or the Supreme Complete Body Constitution?”

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking and shot him a look.

Wu Hao smiled. “I’m sorry if I’ve offended you! This is your privacy. I shouldn’t ask so casually. Come, the Tongyou Saint Territory is my land. I have to welcome you extravagantly no matter what. You’ll let me, right?”

Wu Hao was very intelligent. Zhang Ruochen couldn’t really figure him out.

Thus, he didn’t know if Wu Hao’s actions were because this was his personality or if he was afraid of the divine weapon.

Of course, Wu Hao was the Heir. Zhang Ruochen had to humor him regardless, so he followed the man to the welcoming banquet.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t Wu Hao’s only guest. He’d also invited Su Qingling, Ling Mi, Wen Shucheng, Bu Ji, Ji Kongpo and the others. There were 100 people in total. Each one was a top Saint of Guanghan Field. More than half were Absolute Saints.

The wine they drank was the Six Saints to the Sky Wine that the Crazy Alcoholic brewed.

Zhang Ruochen also learned from the banquet that the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi stayed in Tongyou Saint Territory.

The territory leader was Elder Wu, one of the top three heads.

It was also because of Elder Wu’s full support that they could produce so much Six Saints to the Sky Wine and so many Hua Divine Pills in a short period.

After drinking a few rounds, Ji Kongpo suddenly stood up. Eyes flashing sharply, he roared and smashed his bronze cup on the ground. He walked toward Zhang Ruochen, saying, “I couldn’t defeat you at the Guanghai Divine Palace and that’s the biggest insult of my life. But that was because of the divine might’s suppression. I couldn’t unleash my full powers. Do you dare fight me again now? One against one in a fair fight.”

Ji Kongpo was practically undefeatable in the same realm. There were very few who could take three of his hits.

Thus, he viewed the Guanghai Divine Palace battle as a humiliation.

Zhang Ruochen sat calmly at his table. “Why should I fight with you?” he asked indifferently.

“Are you afraid of defeat?” Ji Kongpo jeered.

“I’ve lost many times in my life,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Why would I be afraid of defeat? Only people who’ve never lost like you would be scared and think defeat is humiliating.”

Su Qingling was sitting beside Zhang Ruochen. She suddenly stood up and said coldly, “Ji Kongpo, what’s wrong with you? You want to fight? Then I’ll fight with you.”

“None of your business. This is a conflict between Zhang Ruochen and I. I want to defeat him fairly so he knows my true abilities.”

Immense saintly power poured out of Ji Kongpo’s body, shaking the Spiritual Qi in the surroundings.

That moment, Wu Hao, who was sitting at the front, put down his bronze cup slowly. “Ji Kongpo,” he said calmly.

“Apologize to the priest.”

That instant, the entire banquet fell silent.

It was clear that Wu Hao’s words held power among the various Saints.

Ji Kongpo was indeed scared of Wu Hao. “I just want to challenge him,” he said. “What did I do wrong? Why should I apologize?”



“Is it not wrong to offend the priest, someone higher than you?” Wu Hao asked. “You don’t even follow the rules. Wouldn’t it be adding to the mess to bring you to the Saints Merits Battle? Apologize. This is the last time I’m saying this.”

“What if I don’t apologize?”

Ji Kongpo was such a proud figure. He found it embarrassing to tie with Zhang Ruochen. How could he apologize and admit his mistake?

Boom!

A huge handprint fell from the sky.

The next moment, a dozen-meter-long ditch shaped like a hand appeared in the center of the banquet hall. Ji Kongpo was all bloody and sprawled out at the bottom of the ditch, trembling without stop.

All the Saints present gasped sharply. They looked toward Wu Hao at the front.

Wu Hao was still sitting calmly. He put his hand away and scoffed. “Don’t think that I’m too scared to teach you a lesson just because you’re Emperor Jimie’s son. The merits battle pertains to the survival of the entire Guanghan Field. We must be united. If anyone dares to cause trouble like Ji Kongpo, don’t blame me for being cruel.”

Then Wu Hao raised his cup and specifically nodded in Zhang Ruochen’s direction. “Everyone, continue drinking.”

Bu Ji sat on Zhang Ruochen’s other side. Looking at Ji Kongpo at the bottom of the handprint ditch, he felt a chill. “Wu Hao is so f\*cking strong!” he said telepathically to Zhang Ruochen and Su Qingling. “He just attacked casually and disabled Ji Kongpo.”

Zhang Ruochen could see that Wu Hao’s attack had been to help him get closer with Zhang Ruochen while also intimidating him.

His expression didn’t change. He raised his bronze cup and took a sip.

“You’ve really lost many times?” Su Qingling asked curiously.

“Is that strange?” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Su Qingling chuckled. She bit her sexy red lip. “You have the Supreme Complete Body Constitution. Shouldn’t you be undefeatable? Who can defeat you?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “If you win, that only means that your enemy was too weak. Only by losing does it mean that you faced a truly strong opponent.”

“Of course, losing is a good thing. At least, it means that you’re still alive and have a chance to turn it around. But on the merits battle, there is no victory or defeat. There’s only life and death.”

# Chapter 1425 - Law of Nature

Chapter 1425: Law of Nature

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the party, Su Qingling took Zhang Ruochen to the library of Tongyou Saint Domain and took books from the shelf.

“‘Hell Luosha Race.’”

“‘Merits Battle and Merits.’”

...

Su Qingling was wearing a long blue robe, covered with a light fragrance. She was standing under the shelf, and she clapped her hands and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

“‘Luosha race is one of the three lower races from Heaven World. They can get stronger and stronger by just eating other creatures, and human flesh and blood are the best to them.’”

“‘Males in Luosha race look horrendous, but they’re incredibly strong. As for the females, they’re ethereal, and if a monk isn’t careful enough, he’ll be tempted and killed.’”

Zhang Ruochen had enough mind power to immediately finish reading ‘Hell Luosha Race’ in its entirety.

And then, Zhang Ruochen started to read ‘Merits Battle and Merits.’

The battle between Heaven World and Hell World was called a Merits Battle.

The more monks from Hell World a monk from Heaven World killed, the more merits he and the field he belonged to won.

The more merits a field earned, the higher it would be ranked on 'Thousand Fields Merits Rank,' and it would never become the battlefield in the fights against Hell World.

Su Qingling said, "When a large field is established and designated to be the battlefield, there're two stages.

"For example, when Zuling Field is chosen to be the battlefield, it'll go through the first stage called primary battlefield stage.

"At this stage, the supreme saints of each side will have the battle outside the domain, and the armies led by saint kings will battle inside the large field.

"The Luosha armies from Hell World want to eat the flesh and blood and seize the resources in Zuling Field.

"As for the armies from Heaven World, they want to kill as many creatures of Luosha race as possible to earn merits. And the monks from Zuling Field want to protect their own large field."

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Why do the supreme saints fight outside the domain instead of the large field?"

Su Qingling chuckled and said, "The supreme saints have tremendous power. Imagine a group of supreme saints going all out in Zuling Field. It'll only take a couple months for them to turn Zuling Field into ruins.

"Then Luosha race can't get the flesh and valuables they want, while Zuling Field will lose billions of lives. It's just the same as fighting in a lifeless astral domain then.

"There's no point in doing that since it's a lose-lose.

"Inside the large field is the battlefield for creatures under supreme saints."

Zhang Ruochen felt that Heaven World was doing this to deliberately sacrifice weak fields like Zuling Field. "Why doesn't Heaven World fight back against Hell World. Why didn't it just start a War of Gods with Hell World?"

Su Qingling sighed and said, "If Heaven World were stronger than Hell World, it would've done it a long time ago instead of

giving free rein to Hell World.”

“As for a War of Gods, it happened once before.”

“It was a hundred thousand years ago, and the War of Gods swept through the entire universe, killing more than half the Gods from Heaven World and annihilating over one thousand large fields. Hell World also suffered a huge blow.

“It’s been a hundred thousand years, and neither has fully recovered from that yet, so nobody wants to initiate a War of Gods.”

Zhang Ruochen was rendered speechless, as he felt pathetic.

He now understood better what Moon Goddess had said. The reality was brutal, and everyone was just a puppet. If he wanted to protect his family, friends, and loved ones, the only thing he could do was to make himself stronger.

Su Qingling said, “Let me tell you about the second stage of the battle, the Apocalyptic Stage.

“At this stage, the entire large field has crumbled, and all the valuables saint kings are interested in have been seized. Even the space structure of the large field becomes extremely unstable and can’t handle the power of saint kings anymore.

“By then, saint kings of both sides will exit the battlefield. Only saints and half saints remain to rob the resources in the large field.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist and he could feel that his muscles were getting tense. He asked, “Why did they have to designate a large field to be the battlefield? Why did the Gods from Heaven World do that? Don’t they think it’s too cruel?”

Su Qingling said, “They have no other options! Even if they don’t do it, Hell World will still keep attacking the subsidiary fields of Heaven World, leading to deaths and destruction. It’s better for them to designate a place to be the battlefield, which can actually mitigate the losses.

“Heaven World and Hell World fought each other randomly at the beginning, and after tens of thousands of years, they’ve come to a tacit agreement like this.

“Certainly, this is a law of nature as the large fields chosen to be battlefields are the weakest fields with the least potential.

“The strong can decide the fate of the weak. This is the rule in the entire universe.”

It was cruel and realistic, but it was the truth.

Zhang Ruochen calmed down and said, “Now that the battlefield has been opened, and there’ll be billions of lives lost, there’ll be a result of the battle, won’t there?”

Su Qingling nodded and said, “Indeed, but Heaven World has always lost more often than it’s won. For example, we’re in the western universe, and there’re always ten battlefields. Every time a field is destroyed, there’ll be another one.

“Heaven World usually only wins three battles out of ten, and the so-called victory only means Heaven World lost fewer monks than Hell World.”

Having asked the necessary questions, Zhang Ruochen read all the relevant books and left the library.

All the saints who participated in the Thousand Saints Meeting stayed in Tongyou Saint Domain, and each saint had their own refining mansion.

Zhang Ruochen came to the mansion that belonged to him, and a half saint was already waiting outside. He bowed at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Lord Saint, my lord asked me to tell you that the world treasury of Guanghan Field will be opened in three days. As the priest of the Saint Merits Battle, you can get into the treasury first and pick any three valuables you want.”

“Who’s your lord?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Your friend, the heir of the Saint Merits Battle,” the half saint said in a revering way.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “Remind me in three days.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Ning True Saint Dew and entered the refining mansion. He drank it and started to refine and absorb it.

After three days, Zhang Ruochen had successfully refined three hundred drops of Ning True Saint Dew, and his cultivation had improved again.

He was almost at the middle level of the Heaven Pass Realm.

“Why is time so pressuring?”

If Zhang Ruochen had enough time, he could use the ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew to become a true saint.

Once he became a true saint, he wouldn't be afraid of anyone under saint kings.

However, he didn't have that much time now.

Zhang Ruochen recalled 'time formation,' but he shook his head.

Time formation was so abstruse that he wouldn't be able to comprehend it now.

Zhang Ruochen heard Blackie transmitting voices to him.

“Zhang Ruochen, I've arrived outside your refining mansion with that girl Mu. Come out now.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned, stopped refining and walked out of the mansion, and he saw Mu Lingxi and Blackie outside.

“Pleasantly surprised to see us?”

Blackie jumped about and walked to the mansion.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed its wing and dragged it out. He said, “Why are you guys here?”

Mu Lingxi said, “I'm going to the merits battle.”

“Are you kidding? No way you're going there with your cultivation,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Mu Lingxi said, “What about my cultivation? I'm already a mid-class saint, and I can fight even a Xuanhuang saint. Why're you talking like I can't go to the battlefield? Also, all the saints from Guanghan Field need to go to the Merits Battlefield, including me.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don't you know how dangerous the Merits Battlefield is? Perhaps half of us will die there, and

we'll be eaten by the saints from Luosha. There's even a chance that all of us die."

"Then why're you going?" Mu Lingxi asked.

"I don't have a choice," Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers, and then, he grabbed Mu Lingxi's hands and dragged her toward Moon Goddess Mountain. "Follow me to Moon Goddess and ask her to disqualify you. There's no way I'm letting you go to the Merits Battlefield."

Zhang Ruochen stopped after taking only three steps forward. He looked around and found that everything around him disappeared as an invisible force covered the sky and land.

Mu Lingxi looked ahead in a daze.

Moon Goddess showed up right outside Zhang Ruochen's refining cave. She looked ethereally beautiful, and her body was curved perfectly as if she didn't belong to this world.

Moon Goddess raised her hand, and white light spots emerged around her palm.

Whoosh!

The light spots flew toward Mu Lingxi and merged with her body.

Mu Lingxi's cultivation surged until she reached Absolute Ground Realm.

Moon Goddess said to Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi, "Zhang Ruochen, this is all I can do. Mu Lingxi better go to Zuling Field. If she's lucky, she might get a nice opportunity."

Zhang Ruochen stared at Moon Goddess and said, "What opportunity?"

"Go read the records about Zuling Field. You'll find your answer there."

Moon Goddess vanished after finishing her last word.

Meanwhile, the scene around them became visible again.



# Chapter 1426 - Encountering Time And Space Crystals Again

Chapter 1426: Encountering Time And Space Crystals Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Coming to the library again, Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi started flipping through records related to Zuling Field.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen found something important. After reading, he smiled. "I see."

"You found it?"

Mu Lingxi walked over. She picked up the book in Zhang Ruochen's hands. After reading a part of the content, her eyes brightened. "Ice and Fire Phoenix."

The Ice and Fire Phoenix was a Supreme Saint from Zuling Field. It was rumored that it had the "Extreme Yin Nether Ice Force" and "Divine Fire Jingmie." Its cultivation was infinitely close to becoming a god.

After its death, the god of Zuling Field personally buried it in the Phoenix Nest.

Only beings with the Ice Phoenix or Fire Phoenix blood could find the Phoenix Nest and open it. Otherwise, the Phoenix Nest would be destroyed with Zuling Field and never appear.

"The Moon Goddess must be talking about this," Zhang Ruochen said. "If you go to Zuling Field, there's a tiny chance that you can receive the inheritance from a phoenix Supreme Saint. But you might also lose your life."

Mu Lingxi hugged the book tightly. Her eyes were determined. “No need to dissuade me anymore. I must go to Zuling Field.”

There was something else that Mu Lingxi didn't say out loud. Zhang Ruochen, she thought. I must follow your steps no matter what. Otherwise, one day, you'll still have a young body while I will have aged. How can I still stay beside you by then?

“You have the right to decide for yourself. I won't force you.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped dissuading her. He walked out of the library with his hands behind his back.

Wu Hao stood outside the library. His long hair fell on either side of his face. Seeing Zhang Ruochen walk out, he said, “Brother Zhang, I heard that you were at the library so I hurried over to find you.”

“Heir, how can I help you?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Right then, Mu Lingxi walked out too and stood beside Zhang Ruochen.

Wu Hao glanced at Mu Lingxi. His expression unchanged, he said to Zhang Ruochen, “The World Treasury of Guanghan Field has opened. As the Heir and priest of the Saints Merits Battle, we're qualified to enter beforehand and choose any three treasures.”

The merits battle was a matter of life or death to Guanghan Field. Opening the World Treasury was a very normal thing.

After all, the stronger the participants were, the bigger the chance for victory.

The World Treasury was a combination of all the resources of the Supreme Saints. It was collected in Tongyou Saint Territory.

After Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao entered, they were shocked by the treasures, even with their level of experience.

Zhang Ruochen saw more than 1,000 Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. There were weapons and armor. Each one was a top treasure in a major world.

“Middle-grade Saint Pill, the Gold Raven Pill. This is the legendary item that even Saint Kings dream of having.”

The Spirit-Charging Pill that Zhang Ruochen had refined was also a middle-grade Saint Pill. However, there was a big difference compared to the Gold Raven Pill.

In the Heaven World, one Gold Raven Pill could be exchanged for a dozen Spirit-Charging Pills.

The Spirit-Charging Pill itself was already the most precious pill of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. It was evident just how valuable the Gold Raven Pill was.

Zhang Ruochen opened a box. There were a dozen rune scrolls folded inside it.

“Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes widened. He felt a bit shocked.

In legends, the power from one activated Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune could kill an Absolute Saint. There were a dozen runes here.

Zhang Ruochen picked one up without hesitation. Then he went to check the other treasures.

“Hundred-Saint Blood Armor.”

Zhang Ruochen discovered five Hundred-Saint Blood Armors. Four of them were damaged. Though an alchemist had repaired it, the saint soul within could never be fixed.

It was clear that these four pieces of armor wouldn’t be able to unleash the Hundred-Saint Blood Armor’s strongest power.

Only one was undamaged.

“Thankfully I came to choose beforehand. Otherwise, the five Hundred-Saint Blood Armors would definitely have been chosen by the Saint Kings of Guanghan Field. I wouldn’t have the chance.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the undamaged Hundred-Saint Blood Armor and poured his Holy Qi in.

Whoosh!

The armor instantly shone with bright bloody light. It transformed into a boxing glove and lay on Zhang Ruochen's right hand. It was translucent with clear edges. It looked like it was made out of bloody jade.

There were honestly too many treasures in the World Treasury. It was dizzying. Basically, every item was worth a million, but Zhang Ruochen could only choose one.

“Which one should I choose? For attack weapons, I have the Abyss Ancient Sword, Buddha's sarira, and Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. For defense, I have the Ten-Saint Blood Armor and Hundred-Saint Blood Armor. What else do I need?” Zhang Ruochen never thought that he would be so indecisive.

Thus, he closed his eyes and released his Spiritual Power. He investigated each corner of the World Treasury, searching for the treasure most suitable to bring onto the merits battlefield.

Suddenly, he sensed weak spatial ripples.

His eyes flew open with a shocked expression. “There's a spatial treasure here?”

Zhang Ruochen walked in the direction of the spatial ripples. Finally, he stood beside a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon shield.

There were a dozen extremely valuable gems embedded onto the shield—divine blood stones, dragon pearl shards, special bone fragments...

The spatial ripples came from one of the white stones.

“Time and Space Crystal. It's actually a Time and Space Crystal.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't hold in a soft laugh. He extended a finger, pressing onto the stone. He activated his Holy Qi and sent it in.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen's palm had reached into the Time and Space Crystal.

The inside of the crystal was around 20 meters in length, width, and height. The time ratio was 4:1 compared to the outside world.

The Time and Space Crystal that Emperor Ming had given Zhang Ruochen was ten meters in length, width, and height. The time ratio was 3:1.

Could it be that Time and Space Crystals are formed naturally, so the inner space and time ratio aren't set? Then are Time and Space Crystals also mined like other crystals and saint stones?

What kind of mine can produce Time and Space Crystals?

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure it out, so he stopped thinking about it for now.

Anyway, if he could find a Time and Space Crystal, his cultivation speed would be four times faster than before. This was great news.

Wu Hao appeared soundlessly behind Zhang Ruochen. "Brother Zhang, have you chosen?"

Zhang Ruochen acted calm. Grabbing the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon shield, he held it and said, "Done!"

Wu Hao looked at the three items that Zhang Ruochen had chosen. An odd look flashed past his eyes. "The Hundred-Saint Blood Armor and Monument Shield are both defensive treasures. The Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune can only kill an Absolute Saint. With your cultivation, you can escape easily even if you can't kill an Absolute Saint Luosha. It doesn't seem to be useful."

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune in his hand. "It's for someone else."

The beautiful girl who'd stood beside Zhang Ruochen outside the library appeared in Wu Hao's mind. He smiled in realization. "I see. I didn't know Brother Zhang was so sentimental."

Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything. He walked straight out of the World Treasury.

Wu Hao stared at Zhang Ruochen's back. An odd smile appeared in his eyes as he murmured to himself, "I thought that you'd have no weak spots, but you also can't resist the beauty."

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to hide things before Wu Hao or be so cynical, because he never viewed Wu Hao as his opponent.

The only person who Zhang Ruochen viewed as his opponent was Chi Yao.

There was still a big gap between them. But Zhang Ruochen believed that one day, he would play a game of chess with Chi Yao as the chess piece manipulator. He would win the game that Emperor Ming had lost back then.

Walking out of the World Treasury, Zhang Ruochen handed the Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune to Mu Lingxi.

Other than the Heir and priest, the Saints and Saint Kings of Guanghan Field had to go into the World Treasury according to their cultivation level.

Thus, even if the World Treasury had a dozen Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Runes, it would all be gone by the time Mu Lingxi could go in.

This made the Nine Overlapping Heaven Trial Rune that Zhang Ruochen brought out seem extremely valuable.

Mu Lingxi clutched it like a little squirrel who'd stolen some candy. She smiled sweetly. "I won't be polite with you. I'll take it!"

Zhang Ruochen took out Ten-Saint Blood Armor and gave it to Mu Lingxi. "You won't need to choose a defensive treasure when you enter the World Treasury. The Ten-Saint Blood Armor is enough for you."

For the Immortal Vampires, even True Saints and Absolute Saints only used Ten-Saint Blood Armor. Even then, not everyone had it.

Only the top figures of the Immortal Vampires were qualified to use Hundred-Saint Blood Armor. It wasn't only because it was valuable. Even more so, it was because it greatly exhausted Holy Qi to activate the Hundred-Saint power. Saints couldn't withstand it at all.

Back at the Heir Banquet, the third prince of the Qingtian Tribe had put on the Hundred-Saint Blood Armor, but it had only been like a super-defensive armor. He couldn't unleash even 1/1000th of the power.

After all, the Hundred-Saint Power was like the power of 100 Saints. The Holy Qi exertion was also equal to the exertion of Holy Qi from 100 Saints.

Zhang Ruochen dared to choose the Hundred-Saint Blood Armor because his Sea of Qi was 10,000 times more vast than regular people. He also had four saintly sources, so he could use the Hundred-Saint Power for short-term fighting.

Zhang Ruochen left the World Treasury and returned to his cultivation residence. He didn't want to waste a single minute. He wanted to improve his abilities a bit more before entering Zuling Field.

# Chapter 1427 - Reflection of the Battlefield

Chapter 1427: Reflection of the Battlefield

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen took out the Monument Shield and started to study it after walking into his refining mansion.

The shield looked like a turtle shell. It was concave with dozens of jewels inlaid around the edge. Each of the jewels was precious with special energy ripples inside.

Inside the shield were twelve hundred inscriptions. Some of them were defense type inscriptions, while others were of lightning and fire.

Zhang Ruochen infused his saint Qi into the Monument Shield, and on its surface emerged light.

Zhang Ruochen didn't take off the time and space crystal.

Whoosh!

Just as he infused the time and space crystal with saint Qi, he disappeared from the mansion and entered the crystal's inner space.

"I used to treat the time and space crystal as a spiritual place of monks, so I kept absorbing the spiritual Qi from the crystal and drained the energies. I can't make the same mistake again."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his saint Qi in the inner space and infused the red boxing glove with it. Hundred Saints Blood Armor showed up and covered him.



Zhang Ruochen could feel a hundred traces of mindpower rushing toward him.

That was the mindpower of a hundred saints.

Meanwhile, a hundred traces of knowledge and saintly way comprehension flooded Zhang Ruochen's mind.

They were the bits of knowledge of a hundred saints.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had reached Heaven Pass Realm and his mind power was almost at level fifty-four, he almost fell down.

“Terrifying...”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth and supported himself with his arms while infusing the Hundred Saints Blood Armor with his saint Qi. He wanted to activate the legendary power of the hundred saints.

Both the mindpower and blood armor of the hundred saints were very hostile. They were attacking Zhang Ruochen's mind as they tried to render him a slave to the armor.

Howl!

Zhang Ruochen had great willpower, and his state of mind was at supreme-saint level. He suppressed the mindpower of the hundred saints, shouted and stood up again.

Whoosh!

The Hundred Saints Blood Armor started to gleam, and inside the blood-red light were a hundred saint shadows with different shapes crowding the inner space of the time and space crystal.

Zhang Ruochen also started to picture the shadows of a hundred saints. They were practicing different martial ways and saint spells. Some of them were sword techniques, some of them were fist techniques, some were breathing fire, and some were releasing light pillars from their eyes...

A hundred saints were flaunting their techniques!

Zhang Ruochen had only activated the first level of the power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor, so each of the saint

shadows was a lower-class saint.

Even so, the combined power of the hundred lower-class saints and Zhang Ruochen was enormous.

The second level of power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor was the combined power of a hundred mid-class saints.

The third level of power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor was the combined power of a hundred upper-class saints.

...

“It really isn’t an easy task to control the power of a hundred saints. I can barely support the first level of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor.

“If I become a true saint, I might be able to use the second-level power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor.”

After testing it, Zhang Ruochen realized that he could only use the first-level power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor for fifteen minutes, and after that, he felt feeble because of the huge consumption of saint Qi.

“It needs too much saint Qi. I’m not going to use the power of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor unless I have to. I’ll stick to Ten Saints Blood Armor.”

Zhang Ruochen was able to activate the supreme form of Ten Saints Blood Armor, and its forces were still impressive.

And besides, Ten Saints Blood Armor also had tremendous defense power, and he could easily use it for a fight under saint kings.

Sizzle!

Zhang Ruochen retracted saint Qi, and the Hundred Saints Blood Armor turned back into a boxing glove on his right hand.

After that, Zhang Ruochen put all his efforts into refining the Ning True Saint Dew in the inner area of the time and space crystal.

Zhang Ruochen managed to refine one hundred drops of Ning True Saint Dew every day, and his cultivation surged. He

reached the mid-level of Heaven Pass Realm very soon.

In the next twenty-something days, Zhang Ruochen refined more than two thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew, and he reached the upper-level of Heaven Pass Realm.

After that, Zhang Ruochen had to walk out of the time and space crystal as the Saints Merits Battle was about to begin.

He'd find a chance to improve his cultivation after getting to Zuling Field.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of his refining mansion, and he could feel the saintly way ripples around him. There were countless saints gathering here.

The saint Qi that came out of their bodies turned into traces of light that surged through the clouds, forming tumbling saint clouds.

Zhang Ruochen released his mind power to inspect it, and he found that Guanghan Field had a hundred thousand saints.

They all gathered here.

This was a scene Zhang Ruochen would have never expected to see before coming to Heaven World.

Mu Lingxi looked kind of grave. She said, "Incredible! Guanghan Field is ranked second to last in the Shatuo Seven Fields, yet it already has a hundred thousand saints. What about Great Demon Ten Square Field that's ranked first? Kunlun's Field doesn't even have half the saints Guanghan Field does. How are they going to fight this fight?"

Mu Lingxi came from Kunlun's Field, so she didn't want Kunlun's Field to become a battlefield, a sacrifice for Heaven World and Hell World.

However, Kunlun's Field didn't even stand a chance.

Blackie seemed chill. It said, "The half saints in Guanghan Field refine in Heaven World, so they have much better resources and an environment than those from Kunlun's Field. Naturally, it's much easier to become saints, saint kings and supreme saints here."

Mu Lingxi looked to Zhang Ruochen, and she found that Zhang Ruochen was remaining calm.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Blackie and said, “Are you joining the Saint Merits Fight, Blackie?”

Blackie looked disdainful and said, “I’m already an invincible being. How can I join the Saint Merits Battle? I’ll join the Supreme Saints Merits Battle if I need to join, but...”

“But what?” Mu Lingxi asked.

Blackie said, “But Moon Goddess received me before and told me not to join the Merits Battle. I’ll stay in Heaven World with the old guy who makes pills and the other who makes wine. I’m too powerful, making me the trump card of Guanghan Field, so I need to remain hidden.”

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi didn’t believe what Blackie said.

It was possible that Blackie’s cultivation was higher than saints, but it wouldn’t be a great power if it joined a higher-level merits battle.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi gave each other a look and shook their heads.

“Look, that’s the reflection of the Saints Merits Battlefield.”

Suddenly, a huge light screen showed up in the sky above Tongyou Saint Domain.

It was the reflection of Zuling Void World.

It used to be a prosperous large field where thousands of races and trillions of creatures lived.

But now, the large field had crumbled, and most of the field continents had turned into dust. The dust looked like lifeless rocky stars.

There were four giant fields, fragmented continents floating in the astral sky.

Each of the field fragments was twenty million to thirty million miles long as if they were four giant continents floating in the universe.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his mind power to watch the reflection of Zuling Field, and the closer it was, the more he could see.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen looked to a human city in the west. The city was in ruins, and a Luosha monk was eating a human head. It looked brutal and bloody.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned red as he couldn't control his emotions. He wanted to kill.

“Luosha race is ruthless! Let's kill them all in Zuling Field!”

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

“They dare eat human beings... I'll annihilate them!”

...

All the saints were able to see the fight in Zuling Field using their mind power. Certainly, everyone focused on the major cities in Zuling Field instead of those barren fields.

Emperor Jimie flew over, arriving above the saints and standing under the reflection. “The Saints Merits Battle is about to begin. You guys have seen what happened to Zuling Field. If you don't want Guanghan Field to fall, kill as many Luosha as possible to earn merits.”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

Everyone yelled, and their voices echoed throughout Tongyou Saint Domain.

Emperor Jimie continued, “Have you seen the reflection of the battlefield? There's a reflection in the sky of each saint domain of Shatuo Seven Fields, Guanghan Field, Kunlun's Field, Great Demons Ten Square Field...

“Which is why all the creatures in the seven fields can also see you, including the monks from other fields in Heaven World, even Gods. They can see every one of your fights, so make their expectations worthy. Kill and show the power of Guanghan Field!”

“If Guanghan Field wins Merits Battle, I’ll give my best valuables to the brave soldiers who contribute the most.”

Just as Emperor Jimie was giving a speech, the reflection also showed up in the sky above Kunlun’s Field. The monks from First Central Empire and savage beasts in Savage Barren Secret Region all raised their heads and looked to the sky.

The battle reflection also showed up above Guanghan Field.

...

Power determined who became the saviors of a large field and banes of Hell World. Everyone in the seven large fields could see it.

Saints Merits Battle officially began, and led by the three supreme saints from Guanghan Field, a hundred thousand saints walked toward the saint road to Zuling Field.

# Chapter 1428 - Saint Army Of Seven Fields (1)

Chapter 1428: Saint Army Of Seven Fields (1)

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Before entering the Saint Road, Supreme Saint Jiuling gave every Saint a storage bag.

There was a map and two treasure bottles in the bag.

The map had the four remaining pieces of Zuling Field. According to the position of the pieces, they were known as the west world, east world, south world, and north world.

The two bottles were used to collect the blood and saint souls of Luosha.

One didn't need a Luosha's body to exchange for merits after killing it.

Actually, one only needed to collect a drop of blood or shred of saint soul. The Merits Record had a consciousness and could determine whether one had killed that Luosha or not.

"One last reminder," Supreme Saint Jiuling said. "The Saints Merits Battle is three months. There is a Merits Record wall in the four remaining pieces of Zuling Field. If you find that wall, you can go to exchange for merits at any time.

"Also, not only do you have to be careful of the Luosha Race from the Hell World, but you also have to be careful of your opponents on the battlefield. They may very well attack and steal the blood and Saint souls you've collected."

"Haha."

A laugh that carried strong Supreme Saint might filled the air. Then a massive white Saint cloud flooded over like layers of waves.

Around 150,000 Saints charged out of the cloud and landed on the ground.

They were in neat rows. Most of the Saints carried a sword and their auras were extremely cold and harsh.

Four of the figures stood above the 150,000-Saint army. Their saintly might was comparable to Supreme Saint Jiuling, Emperor Jimie, and Elder Wu.

One of them had a human's body but had seven silver dragon heads. He was the Seven-headed Dragon Lord, a powerful figure from Blade Hell Field.

The seven dragon heads laughed at the same time. "I don't really like what Supreme Saint Jiuling has said. The Shatuo Seven Fields are entering the battleground together to fight against the Hell World and kill enemies together. How could we attack our own people?"

Supreme Saint Jiuling scoffed. "If you hadn't secretly attacked Zuling Field at the merits battle 30 years ago, Zuling Field might not have become the battleground."

"Zuling Field wanted to become Blade Hell Field's enemy," the Seven-headed Dragon Lord said. "What could we do? But Guanghan Field is on the same side as Blade Hell Field. How can you two be compared?"

...

Su Qingling stood to the right of Zhang Ruochen and said to him, "They're the Blade Hell Field, one of the Shatuo Seven Fields. They're much stronger than Guanghan Field.

"Thirty years ago, the Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field united against Zuling Field. They killed many of Zuling Field's Saints and Saint Kings at the merits battle. Even Guanghan Field suffered from their attacks. They're very cruel and heartless. You must be careful of them on the battlefield."

"That's too cruel!" Mu Lingxi said.



Su Qingling studied Mu Lingxi and smiled brightly. “Little girl, the merits battle is much crueler than you can imagine.”

“Thank you, Sister Su, for your reminder.”

Mu Lingxi smiled, but her sparkling eyes also looked up and down at Su Qingling, studying her.

The Saints of Guanghan Field clearly hated the Blade Hell Field. Each cultivator’s eyes shone coldly.

A moment later, the Purple Mansion Field, friendly with the Blade Hell Field, also arrived at the entrance of the Saint Road.

The Purple Mansion Field was even stronger than the Blade Hell Field. It ranked second among the Shatuo Seven Fields. There were 300,000 Saints, which was three times Guanghan Field’s number.

The Saint army of Purple Mansion Field grouped with the Blade Hell Field directly. They produced an extremely domineering aura. All of the Saints’ lights connected, almost transforming into a Saint sea.

A purple-robed elder from the Purple Mansion Field stood in the air and smiled. “Jiuling, how about our three worlds work together against Kunlun’s Field?”

The Seven-headed Dragon Lord from the Blade Hell Field stood out again. “Kunlun’s Field was once in the top ten of the Ten Thousand Worlds Merits Rank. There are many incredible treasures hidden there. We can only reasonably go in and steal the treasures by turning it into a battlefield.”

“Kunlun’s Field is so weak,” Supreme Saint Jiuling said.

“Your two fields can destroy them alone. There’s no need for Guanghan Field to get involved.”

The two Supreme Saints of the Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field didn’t invite them again.

After all, Supreme Saint Jiuling was right. Kunlun’s Field was too weak. With those two worlds’ abilities, they could easily take Kunlun’s Field down.

They'd invited Guanghan Field to tell them that their main target wasn't Guanghan Field this time. They hoped that the Guanghan Field wouldn't view them as an enemy.

“Three hundred thousand Saints. The Purple Mansion Field is too strong.”

Zhang Ruochen's spirits grew heavy.

The other Saints of Guanghan Field only had one mission: to kill more Luosha and earn more merits.

But the Moon Goddess had given Zhang Ruochen another mission: to become first of the Saints Merits Rank.

The Purple Mansion Field, merely the second on the rank, was already so crazily powerful.

Just how strong would the top world, the Great Devil Ten Square Field, be?

Becoming number one of the Saints Merits Rank was more than ten times more difficult than Zhang Ruochen had thought.

A while later, the Saint army of Kunlun's Field came to the entrance of the Saint Road too.

The Supreme Saints leading them were the Chaotic Military Lord and Living Buddha.

They were only juniors among the Supreme Saints. They couldn't even be compared to the top figures of the Purple Mansion Field, Blade Hell Field, and Guanghan Field.

However, the number of Saints far surpassed Zhang Ruochen's expectations. There were actually around 60 or 70 thousand.

It was clear that Chi Yao had activated the Tianlun Mark. She'd used 30 times faster speed to produce so many Saints.

Of course, 60 or 70 thousand Saints was still far from the number that the Guanghan Field had. It was practically impossible to survive between the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field.

Zhang Ruochen discovered many familiar figures among Kunlun's Field army.

The Saint Lady, Martial Saint Canglan, Qiu Yu, Corpse Emperor Tianming, Chu Siyuan, Xue Wuye, Monk Lidi, Wan Zhaoyi, Sword Saint Jiuyou, Moon-Burial Sword Saint, Pei Yutian, Chen Wutian, Buddha Xinshu, Han Qiu, Le, Senior Brother Qingxiao, Second Senior Brother Zhu Hongtao, Third Senior Brother Wan Ke...

All of the Saints of Kunlun's Field were in the army. It included Zhang Ruochen's enemies, friends, senior and junior brothers, and soulmates.

The Saint Lady discovered Zhang Ruochen's figure among Guanghan Field's army. At first, she grew thoughtful. But when she figured out the reason, she sighed softly.

The Saints of Kunlun's Field also saw Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi.

"Zhang Ruochen has actually joined Guanghan Field and will represent them on the merits battlefield. Doesn't he know that if Guanghan Field wins, Kunlun's Field will lose?" Qiu Yu stood among the army and roused everyone's emotions, targeting Zhang Ruochen.

"The only world we have a possibility of defeating is Guanghan Field."

"Zhang Ruochen is a traitor. He betrayed Kunlun's Field. He is our mutual enemy."

"Don't let me see him on the merits battlefield. Otherwise, he'll be the first I kill."

"What are you yelling about?" Second Senior Brother Zhu Hongtao roared. "My junior brother was forced out of Kunlun's Field by the Empress. He had no choice but to join Guanghan Field. It's not his own... Who attacked me..."

He was attacked secretly before he could finish speaking. A bloody hole appeared in his back.

The Saints of the Kunlun's Field were in an uproar. Anyone who dared to speak up for Zhang Ruochen was insulted and attacked.

Finally, the Chaotic Military Lord released his saintly might to control everyone, making them quiet down.

Zhang Ruochen was quite calm. His expression didn't change, as if he couldn't hear the insults.

Slowly, the armies of the Great Devil Ten Square Field, Eight Ministry Field, and Tianmu Field also came to the entrance of the Saint Road.

Among them, the Great Devil Ten Square Field was the strongest. They actually had 500,000 Saints. They far surpassed the Purple Mansion Field, which was second.

The Eight Ministry Field was strong too. They had around 260,000 Saints.

Tianmu Field was between Daoyu Field and Guanghan Field. They had around 130,000 Saints.

It could be said that Great Devil Ten Square Field was first tier. Purple Mansion Field and Eight Ministry Field were the second-tier teams. Hell Blade Field, Tianmu Field, and Guanghan Field were third tier. Kunlun's Field was fourth tier.

Was the Moon Goddess joking? The Great Devil Ten Square Field is terrifyingly strong and she actually wants me to lead Guanghan Field to number one? Zhang Ruochen had a headache.

However, the Moon Goddess must have had her reasons for wanting Zhang Ruochen to try his best to become first. Perhaps she knew a secret and was worried that Guanghan Field would be last.

Zhang Ruochen started thinking about how they could become first of the Saints Merits Battle.

It was clearly impossible if he used standard methods.

After all, no matter how strong he was, he was only one person. How could he compare to the killing rate of hundreds of thousands of Saints?

Zhang Ruochen shook his head continuously. Finally, he gave up, thinking, I'll think about this headache-inducing problem when we enter the battlefield.

An extremely divine voice sounded in the sky. “The Saint Road is open.”

A huge vortex appeared before the various Saints. Finally, it transformed into a circular door that was 100 meters wide.

Standing outside the door, one could see a long saintly path behind it.

The other end of the path connected to a red-yellow planet. That planet was above the four remaining pieces of Zuling Field. It was thousands of miles from the ground.

Two hours later, the various Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields all arrived at the stone planet.

That divine voice sounded again. “Send the Saints of the seven worlds into the merits battlefield.”

With that, the two Supreme Saints of Tianmu Field—one man and one woman—flew to the sky above the Guanghan Field Saints.

The handsome male Supreme Saint fluttered his sleeves. The 100,000 Saints of Guanghan Field flew uncontrollably toward the four remaining pieces below. They fell toward the ground like raindrops.

The four pieces were too vast. All the Saints of Guanghan Field were scattered. Even the two closest Saints could be thousands of miles apart. They couldn’t regroup for a while.

At the same time, the Saints of the other six fields all fell toward the four world fragments as well.

# Chapter 1429 - First Encounter With The Luosha (2)

Chapter 1429: First Encounter With The Luosha (2)

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Around 1,000 miles from land, there was a wall of light from a world. When Zhang Ruochen went through it, an explosion sounded in his chest.

Boom.

An invisible force shattered the Saint Image Rune that Yan Liren had given him.

I really can't bring things like Saint Image Runes onto the merits battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen didn't find it too regrettable. After all, that Saint Image Rune had already become tattered. He could only use it once or twice more at most.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was observing where Mu Lingxi was.

The distance between them kept expanding. They were already 100,000 miles apart. He couldn't detect her location even with Spiritual Power.

He could only estimate that Mu Lingxi was southeast of him. They'd also both fallen in the southern world of Zuling Field.

The Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields were attacked from the ground as soon as they passed the wall of light.

Rip!

A barrel-like bolt of purple lightning flew out of a towering mountain. It charged into the sky and attacked a Saint, ripping his body apart.

An almost three-meter-tall Luosha man hurled a golden spear. It carried an evil force. It flew 800 miles into the sky and pierced a Saint's body.

...

The bloody battle had erupted before they had even stepped onto the battlefield. A few Saints were caught by surprise and died suddenly.

Zhang Ruochen was also attacked. A Luosha cultivator threw over a 100-meter-tall boulder, crashing toward him.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes. Two beams of light shot out from his eyes, hitting the boulder.

Kaboom.

The boulder exploded into shards of rock and fell to the ground.

"So powerful. He can actually penetrate a boulder with the light from his eyes."

There were 12 Luosha cultivators on the ground. They realized that Zhang Ruochen was a fierce figure and that they couldn't defeat him, so they retreated immediately.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground, creating a dozen-meter-wide ditch.

That ditch happened to be right before the 12 Luosha.

"One Saint and 11 Half-Saints. Not bad." Zhang Ruochen scanned them and nodded lightly.

The 12 Luosha were all male. Just as the records said, they were extremely ugly.

The Luosha in the Saint Realm had a pair of bony wings. His eyes were even bigger than Blackie's, but his nose was very

flat, like a gorilla's. Revealing a mouth of messy teeth, he roared, "Kill him!"

The 11 Half-Saints attacked at the same time. They grabbed their heavy weapons and charged at Zhang Ruochen.

The Luosha Saint unfurled his bone wings and flew backwards quickly, wanting to escape.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen exhaled. His breath turned into a windstorm and flew out with hundreds of wind blades. It ripped the 11 Luosha Half-Saints into shreds in an instant.

"A middle Saint wants to escape right before me?"

Zhang Ruochen used his mind to make the Abyss Ancient Sword fly out.

"Master, I'll do it."

The Holy Carnivorous Flower's voice sounded within Zhang Ruochen.

A vine rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's back. It whipped at the Luosha Saint. Merely this one hit broke the body in half, even shattering the saint soul.

Then the Holy Carnivorous Flower curled around the Luosha Saint's corpse. It dragged it back and threw it before Zhang Ruochen with a heavy thud.

Zhang Ruochen pulled out a bottle. He extracted a drop of blood from the 12 corpses and placed them into the bottle.

"The merits of a Half-Saint go from 10 to 1,000.

"A Saint's merits go from 1,000 to 100,000.

"This means that the weakest lower Saint is 1,000 merits. The strongest Absolute Saints are 100,000 merits. Those are probably the ones who can fight with Half Saint Kings. Regular Absolute Saints are probably only a few dozen thousand merits.

"Collecting merits is faster by killing stronger Luosha."



Zhang Ruochen observed his surroundings. He discovered that this was a primitive forest and there was a human tribe nearby.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower turned the 12 Luosha cultivators into fertilizer. It was absorbing it now.

Zhang Ruochen entered the tribe area but saw that all the humans had been killed. More accurately, they'd been eaten. White bones were all over the ground.

There was a big cauldron on the altar of the tribe. There were a dozen women and kids cooking inside. Their flesh was overdone now and a meat fragrance wafted out.

Seeing this scene made Zhang Ruochen's scalp go numb. "Get out of here!" he growled.

The sound wave flooded out in all directions, shattering the rocks and turning the trees into dust.

The Luosha hiding underground were all thrown out from the reverberations.

There were more than 30 Luosha cultivators here. Some were Half-Saints; others were Fish-Dragon cultivators. Some of the Luosha were women and each one was beautiful. They had delicate figures and white skin. Their eyes were unusually mesmerizing.

One of the most beautiful Luosha women was a ninth class Half-Saint. She cast a hallucination spell and walked toward Zhang Ruochen. Her white clothing slid to the ground by itself, revealing a sexy and enticing body.

"You dare to try to fool me with these low-level hallucinations?"

Zhang Ruochen punched forward, breaking apart the Luosha woman's head.

Then he stabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword into the ground. Dense Sword Qi automatically flew out of the blade, penetrating the Luoshas.

A moment later, only corpses remained on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen collected their blood and handed the corpses to the Holy Carnivorous Flower to eat.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked by the scene before him. He couldn't recompose himself. He activated the Five Elements Chaotic Body and manipulated the force of the ground.

Kaboom.

Instantly, a large amount of soil surged out of the ground and covered the entire tribe area.

Zhang Ruochen spent some time to refine the Luosha weapons into the Abyss Ancient Sword. When he stood up, he discovered bits of light flying over from the horizon.

Whoosh!

Five communication runes flew into Zhang Ruochen's hands. They were from Mu Lingxi, Wu Hao, Su Qingling, Bu Ji, and Han Qiu.

They were asking Zhang Ruochen for his location, wanting to meet up with him.

"I'll help Mu Lingxi find the Phoenix Nest first and get the inheritance of the Ice Fire Phoenix," Zhang Ruochen decided.

Other than Mu Lingxi's communication runes, Zhang Ruochen crumbled the other runes into dust and sprinkled them on the ground.

Mu Lingxi told Zhang Ruochen that she was in the Whale River Territory of the southern world.

Zhang Ruochen had made a rough estimate of his location. He took out the map and quickly found the Whale River Territory on it.

"It's 4,300,000 miles away. It's so far."

Zhang Ruochen took out a communication rune and carved some words onto it. Stay in the Whale River Territory. Find a safe place to hide and wait for me.

Then he inserted a bit of Mu Lingxi's Saintly Way aura into the rune and sent the rune out.

“Holy Carnivorous Flower,” Zhang Ruochen called.

The flower transformed into a dozen-meter-long green vine and appeared beside Zhang Ruochen. The flower at the tip was fully blooming. It was beautiful, with a mesmerizing silhouette at the center of the flower. “Master,” it said sweetly. “What orders do you have?”

Zhang Ruochen tossed a storage bag over. “This bag contains Zuling Field’s map and two bottles. Follow the map and take me to the Whale River Territory.

“Collect a drop of blood or a shred of soul from the Luosha that you kill along the way and put them into the bottle.

“Store the Luosha weapons and treasures in the storage bag. Understood?”

“Master, what about you?” the Holy Carnivorous Flower asked.

“I will focus on refining the Ning True Saint Dew and reaching the True Saint Realm.”

After giving the instructions, Zhang Ruochen entered the Time and Space Crystal and started cultivating.

With the Holy Carnivorous Flower’s current cultivation, it could hold its ground even against regular True Saints. Zhang Ruochen was quite reassured.

If it really ran into a difficult opponent, Zhang Ruochen would naturally come to help.

As the Saints Merits Battle started, the Saint King, Supreme Saint, and Deity battles were also going on.

Of course, the entire Heaven World was still more focused on the Saints Merits Battle. After all, everyone was familiar with the abilities of the top Saint Kings and Supreme Saints of Shatuo Seven Fields. They had their detailed information too.

As for the Saints, very few people paid attention to them before. Some excellent prides might appear with the potential of a young Supreme Saint or even god.

The worlds who were eighth, ninth, or tenth from the end of the western universe paid special attention to the Seven Fields Merits Battle because they felt extreme danger too.

If they couldn't continue rising in the ranks, then they would also have to participate in this cruel battle to determine the fate of their world.

The world eighth from the end was called Yushan Field.

The various forces of Yushan Field were watching the scenes from the Saints Merits Battle.

A 2,000-foot-tall saintly image appeared on the ground.

“Everyone, focus especially on the legendary Saints of Kunlun's Field and Guanghan Field. Write their names onto the scrolls. These two worlds may be chosen as the newest battlefield. At that time, we can secretly interact with these geniuses and have them join Yushan Field to strengthen us.

“Joining the Yushan Field will definitely be better than staying in a world that will be destroyed. They wouldn't refuse.”

Supreme Saints from Yuanze Insect Field, ninth from the end, and Ten Thousand Cities Field, tenth from the end, also appeared to give the same order to the forces.

In the Heaven World, the lower you were in the Ten Thousand Worlds Merits Rank, the more dangerous it was. They also needed to take in more talents from other worlds.

Back when Zuling Field was chosen as the battlefield, many Saints, Saint Kings, and even Supreme Saints joined other worlds.

Of course, other than the very excellent geniuses, the others who joined other worlds would have very low statuses. People would roll their eyes and look down on them no matter where they went. The only benefit was that they wouldn't die.

# Chapter 1430 - Half True Half Empty

Chapter 1430: Half True Half Empty

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

In the northern world of Zuling Field...

There was a rock mountain that was almost twenty thousand feet tall in a vast desert, and in the mountain were wind caves, releasing wicked power, covering the mountain with bizarre clouds.

Sword Saint Jiuyou walked to the desert, and he said, "Come out."

Whoosh! Luosha monks rushed out of the wind caves, and there were a hundred thousand of them.

More than sixty of them had wings on their backs. They dashed toward Sword Saint Jiuyou, flapping their wings.

Each of the Luosha who had wings was a saint.

Sword Saint Jiuyou wasn't intimidated at all. He glared at the Luosha monks, and sword Qi gushed out like waves that were hundreds of feet tall and crushed all the Luosha monks.

Meanwhile, Sword Saint Jiuyou grabbed a saint sword and rushed into the group of Luosha saints.

Every time he wielded his sword, a saint was slain.

After two hours, corpses of Luosha monks piled up. There were tens of thousands of them.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was still standing in the desert.

Some of the prominent beings from Heaven World were thrilled seeing that.

“That saint from Kunlun’s Field is powerful. He might be able to fight some saint kings.”

“This man is only a saint. Based on his sword technique, he might’ve finished refining sword eight based on Taoist categorization. Mark his name down, and we will need to recruit him to our Thousand Cities Field.”

...

Zuling Field, the western world.

Chu Siyuan stood at the center of a lake holding a drawing pen that was five feet long and painting on the lake using blood.

“Kill!”

Hundreds of thousands of Luosha troops, including more than eighty Luosha saints, dashed toward Chu Siyuan and enveloped him with crimson devil Qi.

Chu Siyuan infused his mind power into the painting and yelled, “Blood pearls land from the sun, Fires and winds inflame everything.”

In the next moment, the water in the lake turned into oil.

And then, an area of a thousand square miles was engulfed in flames.

After less than fifteen minutes, almost all the Luosha troops had been burned to the ground.

Some of the high-level Luosha saints weren’t killed. They flapped their wings and tried to escape.

“No way you’re getting away?”

Chu Siyuan immediately wrote on the lake using his pen.

Every time he drew, a fire dragon flew out from the lake and rushed toward the Luosha saints. Soon, more than a thousand fire dragons flew in the sky and burned to death all the Luosha saints.

People in some of the large fields in Heaven World were thrilled again.

“That elder’s mind power is very close to level fifty-five, and his accomplishments on painting way are amazing.”

“Why isn’t he a saint king yet? Is he suppressing his cultivation on purpose to join the Saints Merits Battle?”

“Perhaps it’s because the refining environment in Kunlun’s Field is too bad for them to become saint kings.”

“Mark his name down. With his accomplishments on painting way and the resources in Heaven World, it’s only a matter of time before he becomes a supreme saint.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou, Chu Siyuan and lots of other senior beings from Kunlun’s Field had great talents. However, they stayed absolute saints for hundreds of years because of the environment.

Sword Saint Jiuyou’s sword way and Chu Siyuan’s painting way had both reached a remarkable level. They’d been refining for hundreds of years, so there was no comparison between them and those youngsters.

Zhang Ruochen refined in the inner space of the time and space crystal for three months to refine all the Ning True Saint Dew he had.

“I’ve reached half true, half empty realm. I still am one step away from becoming a true saint.”

Heaven Pass River in Zhang Ruochen’s lower abdomen became more solid, and saintly way rules all emerged, flowing in the river.

He was one step away from turning emptiness into truth.

“I’ve underestimated how much Ning True Saint Dew Heaven Pass River needs. I might need another thirty drops of Ning True Saint Dew to become a true saint.

“Other saints only need five hundred drops of Nine True Saint Dew to become a true saint from elementary Heaven Realm, and even a talent like Bu Ji only needs two thousand drops, yet even ten thousand drops are not enough for me.

“Where else can I find three thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and walked out of the space crystal.

Carnivorous Holy Flower grew extremely fast after coming to Zuling Field. The flower at the top had already yielded fruit.

This was the second fruit that Carnivorous Holy Flower bore!

The first time Carnivorous Holy Flower bore fruit, it became the phantom body of the flower.

Now, its phantom body had merged with its real body.

The second time it yielded fruit, it became its flesh.

Certainly, its second fruit had just come into being, so it still needed some time to mature.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “How many drops of blood and saint souls have you collected?”

Carnivorous Holy Flower took out two bottles and handed them to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen inspected the bottles, frowned and said, “Only fifteen hundred and forty drops of blood and two thousand and thirty-two saint souls.”

“My focus is to hurry, master, but I killed Luosha monks when I saw them,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

Zhang Ruochen put away his bottles, took out a map and asked, “Where are we now?”

“Yujin Mountain,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

Zhang Ruochen found where Yujin Mountain was on the map. “You walked two million miles in twenty days. I see you’ve tried your best.”

“But we still have a long way to go to get to Whale River basin,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

“We have to save time... We can use the wormholes. Look, there’s a wormhole connecting the start of Yujin mountain and Whale River basin,” Zhang Ruochen said.



The map clearly marked where all the wormholes were.

Carnivorous Holy Flower said, "Please don't do that, master. All the wormholes in Zuling Field are controlled by Luosha monks. Lots of armies and great beings guard those places.

"I've been to the wormhole to Yujin Mountain, and there're millions of Luosha armies guarding that place, including more than a thousand saints. I can sense more than one absolute saint from that army."

"Even saint kings can't handle their combined strike, not to mention the formation inscriptions around the wormhole.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and said, "Didn't expect so many Luosha monks to be there. It seems it's not an easy task to get through a wormhole."

"That's right," Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

"But it's almost a great number of merits. I don't want to just give up like that. Let's walk back and go check the wormhole space," Zhang Ruochen said.

Carnivorous Holy Flower couldn't refuse Zhang Ruochen's decision. It had to take him all the way back to the wormhole.

Zhang Ruochen rode the Golden Dragon Carriage while collecting the weapons seized by Carnivorous Holy Flower for the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine.

Those weapons were ordinary, so it only took the Abyss Ancient Sword a second to refine three or four of them.

Zhang Ruochen picked up a weapon shaped like an axe, and he felt an incredibly evil force coming from it. He said, "Is that the legendary Evil Sha Qi? It's kind of different from Evil Death Qi, kind of like the Blood Devil Qi of immortal vampires. Seems that the death race is at a higher level than Luosha race and the immortal vampires."

Immortal vampires had great life forces, as they had greater body constitution than human monks, so it was easier for them to sanctify their bodies.

All the males of Luosha race had great godly power at the same level as immortal vampires.

As for the Luosha females, they were gifted in mind power, so it was easier for them to become mindpower half saints or even mindpower saints.

...

Just as Zhang Ruochen rushed to the wormhole of Yujin Mountain, many saints from Hell Blade Field also arrived there because they had received the news that the heir of Hell Blade Field discovered Merits Record Wall in the south, so they were heading there to meet with their heir.

At this moment, they gathered in a canyon twelve thousand miles away from the wormhole, and there were eight hundred and fifty saints.

Two absolute saints and six true saints took the lead.

A male true saint whose face was covered with scales said, "All the monks from Luosha race are nothing except the first marquises. Let's go kill all the Luosha monks guarding the wormhole to get a huge number of merits before meeting our heir."

An absolute saint with six arms said, "Xu Heng, don't think you can be so reckless just because you're ranked top twenty among the true saints from Hell Blade Field. I ran into a second marquis of Luosha race a couple of days ago, and I almost got killed. Do you think you're stronger than me?"

"Really? Even a second marquis is that powerful?"

That true saint called Xu Heng looked shocked.

The six-armed absolute saint nodded and said, "Among those from Luosha race, only saints can be crowned as marquises, and there're ten levels of them."

"Lower-class saints are tenth marquises."

"Mid-class saints are ninth marquises."

...

"Luosha saints who just become absolute saints can only be crowned as third marquises."

“Only the top-tier beings of absolute saints can be second marquises.”

“As for first marquises, each of them is a legend, and they are invincible under saint kings. Only several first marquises have shown up, and I’m pretty sure you’ve heard about them. They’ve killed more than one thousand saints of Shatuo Seven Fields in only a couple of days.”

“There’s one second marquis among those Luosha saints guarding the wormhole, and if we run into a first marquis, we might be annihilated.”

“Let’s be careful. After all, we’ve collected lots of blood and saint souls. We need to safeguard them to Whale River basin.”

# Chapter 1431 - The Luosha Princess

Chapter 1431: The Luosha Princess

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Dawn of that day, the Saints of Hell Blade Field attacked the area of the wormhole.

They didn't charge over directly. Instead, they stood 500 miles away and took out a saint weapon each. They transformed into saintly clouds and made long-distance attacks.

It was clear that Hell Blade Field had paid great expenses to win the Saints Merits Battle.

Of the 850-or-so Saints, more than 100 Saints had Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Destruction of the Thousand Patterns burst forth continuously, collapsing mountains and shattering the ground. The soil and rocks melted into liquid.

Merely the first attack broke through four layers of the Luosha's defensive formation.

Six Arms Absolute Saint stood in a higher position. Looking at the land of thunder and fire, he ordered, "Xu Fang, lead 60 Xuanhuang and Absolute Land Saints and attack from the side like a sharp blade.

"Remember, your motive is not to conquer the wormhole but to test what powerful figures are in the Luosha camp. Thus, you must be prepared to retreat at a moment's notice.

"As for the other Saints, continue to use weapons and attack remotely from the front. You must destroy all of the Luosha's defensive formations."

Xu Fang picked up a translucent spear. Leading 60 Hell Blade Field Saints, he rushed toward the wormhole with extreme speed.

They were very fast. They crossed the broken land in an instant and clashed with the Luosha cultivators, starting chaotic bloodshed.

A battle between two Saints shook the world.

Now, there were a dozen Saints attacking. They were like a dozen Death Gods pushing forward, undefeatable.

Boom!

Boom!

...

With the help of the Saints behind them, the Hell Blade Field quickly broke through ten layers of the defensive formation. They were only a few hundred feet from the wormhole.

The Luosha military camp appeared before them.

Boom!

When the 11th defensive formation was broken down, a pained cry suddenly sounded beside Xu Fang. His heart in shock, he immediately turned and looked to the right.

Around three miles from him, a blue feather had penetrated the forehead of an Absolute Land Saint from Hell Blade Field.

Then that Absolute Land Saint fell heavily to the ground. He wasn't breathing anymore.

"Where did that feather come from? An Absolute Land Saint's vitality is extremely strong. How could he die from one hit?"

Cold sweat beaded on Xu Fang's forehead.

Five hundred miles away, Six Arms Absolute Saint immediately sent a message. "Xu Fang, hurry and retreat."

Xu Fang also sensed an intense feeling of danger. It was like a demon from Hell was approaching him. All his hair seemed to stand up.

"Retreat!"

As soon as Xu Fang uttered that word...

A dozen blue feathers flew out of the Luosha camp. Each feather carried dark red flames.

These feathers seemed to be made out of Rules of Saintly Way. They were extremely penetrative and actually flew at around 100 times the speed of sound.

Only a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon at full power could reach that speed.

When the speed was at this level, no Saint could dodge it. Even those who'd just reached the Saint King Realm might not be able to dodge it.

One hundred times the speed of sound was a dividing point.

Whoever could control attacks at that speed were definitely top figures among Saints.

Poof.

More than 20 Saints fell into pools of blood in a row, turning into corpses. A dozen more Saints had avoided their fatal parts but were badly hurt.

"Run! Hurry and run!" Xu Fang roared.

Just then, three blue feathers flew toward Xu Fang.

No wonder Xu Fang was one of the top 20 True Saints of Hell Blade Field. He was very strong and actually used the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon spear to block two of the feathers.

But the third feather pierced his heart.

The feather carried a flame and burned a fist-sized hole in his saintly robe. A beam of evil energy dug into his body.

In an instant, his entire body turned black and lost all feeling. He fell to the ground heavily.

"That's not a bad strong figure. His flesh must contain extremely strong energy. I'll give him to you!"

A lovely and enchanting voice traveled out of the Luosha camp.

Then, surrounded by a group of Luosha Saints, a 1.8-meter-tall Luosha woman walked out.

That Luosha woman had a very noble aura. She wore a silver-white crystal crown on her head and a pale green robe. It hugged the curves of her body.

Every thread of the robe was made out of a Saint's Saintly Meridians. They shone with saintly light, forming a saintly cloud around her delicate frame.

This robe was known as the Ten Thousand Saints Blouse.

It meant that it could only be produced by taking Saintly Meridians from 10,000 Saints.

After putting it on, one could absorb Spiritual Qi and Saintly Qi and move it into the owner's body.

The robe's speed of absorbing the Qi was also the speed of 10,000 Saints multiplied.

Basically, as long as the Luosha woman wore the Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, she wouldn't have to worry about running out of Holy Qi even if she kept using Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons.

That Luosha woman extended her slender fingers and pointed at Xu Fang's body. A shred of dark red Qi flew out of her palm.

Xu Fang's body returned to its original color.

"Thank you, Princess, for your blessing."

All the nearby Saints bowed down to the Luosha Princess.

She was as beautiful as a fairy. Her skin was like icy snow and her eyes were enchanting. She merely glanced at the 30-some remaining Hell Blade Field Saints.

As if they'd lost their souls, the Saints' expressions all became dazed or they laughed dumbly with lustful eyes.

The Luosha Princess' lashes fluttered as she blinked.

Thud, thud.

The 30 strong Saints all fell to the ground, no longer breathing.

All the Luosha Saints present gasped. They had no clue how the Luosha Princess had killed those Hell Blade Field Saints.

Even they kept their heads down. They didn't dare to look at the princess' eyes, afraid that they would die suddenly too.

“Why are you all still standing there?” the Luosha Princess asked. “Go kill those Hell Blade Field Saints!”

The Luosha Saints swarmed out to chase after the retreating Hell Blade Field Saints.

The Luosha Princess touched her pointy chin with two slender fingers. She had an elegant yet foxy smile. “The merits battle of the Heaven World has started. All cultivators under the marquis level, there's no need to remain in Zuling Field.”

There were two two-meter-tall Saints behind the Luosha Princess. They were very strong but aged.

The black-robed elder on the left bowed and said, “Princess, you are the leading general of the Zuling Field attack this time. Your order is final.”

“Two military orders,” the princess said. “First, the Luosha army will retreat from Zuling Field today. Just keep the marquis figures.

“Second, Black Feather, return to Great Tower Star and have Emperor Feng call three million marquis over. The Heaven World is holding the merits battle in Zuling Field. I want to join the fun too. For the next two months, let all the Saints of the seven fields in this land!”

“Yes.”

The elder named Black Feather retreated.

The Luosha Princess gazed at the intense fight in the distance and smiled faintly. “White Feather, you're a second marquis, right?”

“Yes,” the white-robed elder said.

“There's news from the Whale River Territory,” the Luosha Princess said. “The Merits Records Wall of the southern world seems to have been discovered. I plan on going to check out



what exactly the Merits Records Wall is. If it's interesting, I'll take it. I'll hand this place over to you. As news spreads, more Saints will definitely want to hurry over to the Whale River Territory through this wormhole. If you guard this place, you'll definitely have great rewards."

"But I will be worried if you go to Whale River Territory alone," the white-robed elder said.

"I'm so many times stronger than you. Would I need your protection?"

The Luosha Princess rolled her eyes. Then she flew up and landed on a nine-headed blue bird, flying into the wormhole.

Pulled by the nine dragons, the Golden Dragon Carriage raced across the plains like a streak of gold.

Even if the Saints of the Heaven World or Luosha cultivators discovered the Golden Dragon Carriage, they wouldn't be able to catch up at all. They could only watch it disappear into the horizon.

The Abyss Ancient Sword refined all the weapons. Finally, there were more than 10,000 patterns inside it. It had become a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the hilt and smiled. "It's already more than 5,000 kilograms without activating the runes inside. I can't wait to test just how powerful the Abyss Ancient Sword is at the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon level."

The Golden Dragon Carriage's presence was too powerful. It would definitely alert the Luosha army guarding the wormhole.

Facing the Luosha army directly clearly wasn't a wise choice.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen stopped the carriage more than 30,000 miles from the wormhole.

After putting the carriage away, Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power to investigate in the direction of the wormhole.

Kaboom.

A beam of strong Holy Qi rushed over from the distance. The strong force collapsed a mountain to Zhang Ruochen's right.

What was going on?

Zhang Ruochen put his Spiritual Qi away. He jumped and flew into the clouds. He looked down in the direction of the battle shockwave. A group of Luosha Saints was chasing after more than 100 Heaven World Saints.

“Those cultivators... seem to be from the Hell Blade Field.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He didn't expect that someone had attacked the Luosha army guarding the wormhole before him.

However, the Hell Blade Field Saints seemed to have underestimated the Luosha army's abilities. They were being killed very tragically. Saints kept falling into puddles of blood.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. Nocking the arrow, he pulled back on the bowstring.

Whoosh—

The Shining Sun Arrow flew out, more than 60 times faster than the speed of sunlight. Faster than a streak of light, it rushed out of the clouds and hit a Luosha marquis.

With a boom, the marquis's body turned into a cloud of bloody mist.

# Chapter 1432 - Kill a Third Marquis

Chapter 1432: Kill a Third Marquis

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were guarding weapons of Qingtian Tribe. The more powerful a monk was, the better he or she was able to utilize their power.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't anywhere strong enough to use their full power.

Zhang Ruochen immediately drew the bow a second time after Shining Sun Arrow flew back, and it traveled again, sixty times faster than sound.

Bang!

He drew the bow eight times and killed eight Luosha marquises.

There were more than two hundred Luosha marquises encircling the saints from Hell Blade Field.

There were stronger traces of saintly way forces in the distance, and they kept mobilizing the spiritual Qi using their mind power. They performed their saint techniques and attacked the saints from Hell Blade Field.

The saints from Hell Blade Field were already in despair, thinking that they would be annihilated today, but they didn't expect to be helped by an arrow master. They suddenly had hope for themselves.

There were three third marquises among the saints from Luosha race. One of them had a lion face with silver hair, and

it looked like a Sphinx.

Seeing eight marquises getting killed, the silver-haired Sphinx yelled, “Ni Yue, kill the archer in the dark first.”

After a while, lightning clouds that had diameter of five hundred miles were formed, and there were lightning dragons traveling back and forth.

“What a powerful lightning mind power saint. Impressive saint technique that turned lightning into dragons...”

Zhang Ruochen was a mind power saint of lightning himself, so he knew how incredible ‘lightning turned dragons’ was. He didn’t confront the lightning dragons directly.

Just as the lightning dragon was about to strike him, Zhang Ruochen vanished using spatial move.

Boom!

More than ten lightning dragons hit the ground, turning it into scorched earth covered with smoke.

That was as powerful as an absolute saint.

A thousand miles away...

On the plain where Ziyin grass grew stood a Luosha girl. She was a third marquis, Ni Yue, and her mind power had reached level fifty-four.

Not far from Ni Yue were dozens of Luosha girls, and all of them were exquisite-looking with saint scepters in their hands.

A thirty-year-old Luosha female said, “That arrow man’s life forces are gone now. I reckon he’s dead...”

“Wait...”

Ni Yue was shocked.

She had great enough mind power to detect the feeble space ripples. She immediately waved her saint scepter and wielded a lightning dragon, hitting toward above the Luosha girl who had just talked.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor. He was wearing a bow and holding Abyss Ancient Sword like a death God walking out of the space ripples. He wielded his sword and clashed with the lightning dragon.

Boom!

The lightning dragon crumbled, turning into more than a hundred lightning, filling the space.

The Luosha girl was in no way able to withstand such powerful shocks. Her body was burned. Although she was still standing, she turned into a chunk of charcoal.

Zhang Ruochen stepped on that charcoal and wielded his sword against another Luosha girl.

“No, he has tremendous cultivation. Team up and kill him together,” Ni Yue yelled.

All the Luosha girls who were here were mindpower saints, or even marquises from Luosha race, so they all had tremendous power.

However, the mind power saints weren't good at close combat, so when they were approached by Zhang Ruochen, who was great at martial way, they were helpless.

Zhang Ruochen performed his best body technique, turning into dozens of shadows.

After a second, those shadows gathered and turned back into Zhang Ruochen's body.

Bang!

All the Luosha girls fell on the ground. Some of them had their saint hearts pierced through while others' bodies exploded.

Mind power saints only had saint hearts, not saint sources.

Saint hearts were the origin of power and lives for mind power saints.

Only Ni Yue, the third marquis, was still alive. However, there was a thin scar on her seductive face.

“You survived a move from me. No wonder you’re a level-fifty-four lightning mind power saint. You’re already at the same level as the martial way absolute saint,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Ni Yue looked at the human man that looked like a God of Death.

“Rapid Wind and Lightning.”

Ni Yue released all her mind power and performed an escape saint technique of lightning, trying to run away as quickly as possible.

Whoosh!

She vanished like a trace of lightning.

“You can’t get away.”

Zhang Ruochen was even faster. He showed up beside that lightning and wielded his sword against it, and at the next moment, lots of blood was spilled.

The body of Ni Yue was cut in half, falling onto the ground.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, mobilized his mind power and wielded two traces of lightning, hitting her corpse.

However, Zhang Ruochen had underestimated the power of a saint whose mind power had reached level fifty-four. A trace of great saint soul gushed out of her head.

The saint soul yelled, “I’m a third marquis. Do you really think you can kill me that easily?”

The saint soul absorbed all the spiritual Qi around it, forming an enormous lightning domain.

The entire area was covered by lightning, and there were hundreds of thousands of traces of lightning blinking.

They all dashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

“Can’t believe her saint soul is that powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised standing at the center of the lightning domain, however, he wasn’t scared at all. He

grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword and raised it above his head.

Ten thousand inscriptions emerged on the sword.

The horrific sword Qi turned into a light pillar surging to the sky.

Zhang Ruochen then wielded the sword, tearing the lightning domain apart and annihilating her saint soul.

Boom!

A sword path was created on the ground, like an endless canyon filled with fierce sword Qi.

It might take years for the sword Qi to dissipate.

As long as the sword intent was there, sword Qi would remain.

That was how strong Zhang Ruochen's sword mind was.

Zhang Ruochen was quite able to create a forbidden place with just one move. Any monk who was weaker than half saints wouldn't dare enter that sword Qi canyon.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the Abyss Ancient Sword and said, "This is only half complete power of the sword, and it's already enough to kill a mid-tier absolute saint. What's the power going to be if I can fully utilize it?"

Obviously, a third marquis wasn't enough for Zhang Ruochen to test the real power of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

After collecting the leftover saint soul of that Luosha girl, Zhang Ruochen summoned Carnivorous Holy Flower again.

To Carnivorous Holy Flower, the bodies of those Luosha girls and the souls in the air were the best nutrition. Carnivorous Holy Flower's power would definitely boom after absorbing all those corpses and souls.

Zhang Ruochen released mind power to inspect the battlefield that was thousands of miles long. He found that there were only around seventy saints from Hell Blade Field.

Some of the saints from Hell Blade Field even blew up their saint sources to cover other saints.

“Kill! The more brutal, the better.”

Zhang Ruochen heard from Su Qingling that Hell Blade Field always liked stabbing people behind their backs, and they would do anything just to win the merits battle.

Which was technically not wrong. After all, they were only doing this for their own field.

Zhang Ruochen had already thought it through, that he had to do everything in his power to help Guanghan Field win first place in the Saints Merits Battle.

Sometimes, he needed to be ruthless too for the greater good.

Zhang Ruochen carried an entire field on his shoulders where there were trillions of lives living. Sometimes, he might need to kill ten million innocent creatures for them to survive.

Though Zhang Ruochen wasn't very much attached to the creatures in Guanghan Field, and he wasn't motivated enough to save them. However, their lives were bound to Zhang Ruochen. If Guanghan Field became a battlefield, he had to witness people being killed and a large field being annihilated. He had to witness corpses everywhere and elders and children crying in bloodshed.

Zhang Ruochen was afraid that he would regret not helping them.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen wouldn't jump out to help the saints from Hell Blade World to fight the saints from Luosha Race. He kept using his Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow for distant attacks.

Doing so, he could weaken Luosha race while giving the saints from Hell Blade World more hope and motivation for them to fight the saints from Luosha race.

The monks from Heaven World, Kunlun's Field, Guanghan Field, and Hell Blade World all noticed how Zhang Ruochen killed all those Luosha girls.

There were hundreds of saints from Hell Blade World and Luosha race fighting against each other, so it was pretty difficult not to catch any attention.



Many monks watched that battlefield closely using the battlefield reflection.

“Another great being. He’s wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, and he killed dozens of mindpower saints instantly, including a third marquis.”

“Track him and find out who he is.”

Some monk from Kunlun’s Field identified Zhang Ruochen. He said, “I noticed him before. He was riding the Golden Dragon Carriage. He’s got to be Zhang Ruochen. Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen has left Kunlun’s Field and joined Guanghan Field.”

“Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field have been targeting Kunlun’s Field in the merits battlefield. They killed many saints from Kunlun’s Field. How can Zhang Ruochen be helping them? He should just let the saints from Luosha race kill all those from Hell Blade Field.”

“Zhang Ruochen hates Kunlun’s Field too much. It seems that he’s not going to help Kunlun’s Field on the battlefield.”

The monks from Hell Blade World were all excited. They yelled, “That guy is so powerful. Perhaps Six Arms Absolute Saint and Xueji True Saint will be able to survive the encirclement of Luosha saints.”

# Chapter 1433 - Nine Nine To One Formation

Chapter 1433: Nine Nine To One Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

This Saint-level battle lasted for an entire night. Shockwaves affected 30,000 miles of the vast land. The ground changed from the battle. Scorched earth was everywhere and the sky was covered in black dust. There was no light.

Only three Hell Blade Field Saints were still holding off. They hadn't fallen down, but they were heavily injured.

The Absolute Saint who had six arms now only had one arm. He kept waving his sword, cutting a bright arc of light.

The other Absolute Saint had been forced into his original form—a huge red tiger. He was covered in bloody holes. Saintly blood transformed into streaks of blood Qi that kept scattering out.

There was also a True Saint. She was a middle-aged woman who'd been stabbed through the chest and abdomen. She looked tragic. "I will make you die with me!" she roared powerfully.

With a last burst of strength, extreme speed exploded from her. She rushed into an area where a dozen Luosha marquises were gathered.

Her body cracked apart. Beams of blinding light shot out.

"No, she's going to deactivate her saintly source. Hurry and retreat."

The Luosha marquises all used their fastest speed and retreated. Like a dozen laser beams, they charged in all directions.

Boom.

A True Saint's suicide was honestly too destructive. The entire ground caved in.

Half of the dozen Luosha marquises were destroyed completely. Another half fell to the ground, heavily injured and incapacitated.

The eyes of the Absolute Saint with only one arm turned red. "Xue Ji!" he yelled.

All 850-some Saints had died. Only the two Absolute Saints were still alive. This was too tragic.

The third marquis with silver hair and a lion's face walked out of the evil black mist and sneered. "You two are at a dead end already. Will you deactivate your saintly sources too?"

The two Absolute Saints of Hell Blade Field exchanged glances. Then they activated the remaining bits of power within them to attack the silver-haired Sphinx.

Boom!

The Sphinx took out a metal whip. Shaking his wrist, thousands of runes appeared on the whip. It cracked down on the two Absolute Saints, sending them flying back.

The whip contained terrifying power. It almost shattered the two Absolute Saints.

"Ha."

The Sphinx scoffed. He was just about to attack and kill them completely, but he suddenly stopped. He lifted his eyes abruptly, looking behind the two Absolute Saints.

He saw a figure dressed in Ten Saints Blood Armor. He was standing above the lake of lava and striding over.

The Sphinx's eyes darkened. Dark red ghostly flames appeared on the whip. "You finally appeared. I thought you would keep hiding in the shadows."

“Whether I hide in the darkness or walk to the light, I’m still hunting,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently. “What difference is there?”

The Sphinx scoffed. “Such big words.”

Whoosh!

Another third marquis hurried over. He flew in the sky, holding a dozen-meter-tall stone pagoda in his right hand. There were more than 10,000 patterns on the pagoda.

The other Luosha marquises approached too. They appeared within 1,000 miles, surrounding Zhang Ruochen and the two Absolute Saints.

Of course, the Luosha marquises didn’t dare to get too close. They worried that the two Absolute Saints would deactivate their saintly sources and kill them all.

Within a distance of 1,000 miles, they could both attack and retreat. They didn’t have to worry about desperate suicides.

Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power enveloped the 1,000-mile area. He checked the amount of Luosha marquis. There were actually more than 170 and each one was filled with battle intent. They could attack him with saintly weapons and spells at any moment.

The third marquis in the air had eyes filled with murderous intent. “Did you already kill Ni Yue and the others?”

“Indeed,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“You should die!”

The third marquis activated the half-complete power of the stone pagoda. It grew bigger until it was 100 meters tall and slammed down.

Before the stone pagoda fell, the ground had already caved in.

Zhang Ruochen could dodge it, but he didn’t. Instead, he pulled out the Abyss Ancient Sword and also activated the half-complete power. He cut upward at the sky.

Kaboom!

The stone pagoda, a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, was actually split in half.

Long beams of Sword Qi flew into the sky as if transforming into a heavenly road.

“How is this possible?”

The third marquis’ eyes bugged out. The ancient Nether-pass Stone Pagoda was actually destroyed with one strike. That sacred sword was too terrifying.

Zhang Ruochen flew out from between the two halves of the pagoda. He transformed into a streak of white light and stabbed at the third marquis.

“Sword Seven!”

The sword was 100 times faster than the speed of sound. It was impossible to dodge.

The third marquis’ stone pagoda was already destroyed. He’d lost his defensive weapon. He could only activate all the protective runes on him. More than 20 light shields appeared over his body. They protected him in the center like bronze walls.

Boom, boom.

The light shields kept exploding.

With every shield that shattered, the power from the Abyss Ancient Sword would weaken a bit.

By the time Zhang Ruochen broke through the 20-some light shields, the third marquis was actually able to stop the Abyss Ancient Sword with a print technique formed with all his Holy Qi.

Zhang Ruochen loosened his fingers. Then he formed a palm with both hands and slammed down on the sword hilt.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen and the Abyss Ancient Sword sent the third marquis flying back.

He flew for a dozen miles and the Abyss Ancient Sword finally stabbed through the marquis' print technique. It hit his body, penetrating him cleanly.

Poof.

A basin-sized hole appeared in the third marquis' chest.

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen formed a huge handprint and hit his head. The third marquis' body was instantly turned into a pile of bloody mush.

It only took him the span of a breath to kill the third marquis. The other Luosha marquises didn't even have time to help.

The two Absolute Saints of Hell Blade Field exchanged glances. They could see the shock in each other's eyes.

He could kill a third marquis in just a few strikes and the marquis couldn't even escape. Such skills could only be described as “frightening.”

The Sphinx was also shocked. He retreated into the distance while ordering, “Attack together. Use the composite formation to kill him.”

Of the more than 180 Luosha marquises, 81 rushed out and were within 100 miles of Zhang Ruochen.

They stood in 81 different spots and put their hands together before them. Holy Qi poured out of them wildly. They connected into one formation.

The power from 81 marquises combined. The strength was even stronger than a third marquis.

Kunlun's Field, outside the Yunwu Commandery Palace

Zhang Shaochu stared at the battle in the air and slapped his forehead. “Oh no! Oh no! Ninth Junior Brother is too careless. He actually fell within the Luosha marquises' combined formation! What will he do?”

The important figures of the Heaven World all shook their heads. They thought that Zhang Ruochen and the two

Absolute Saints of the Hell Blade Field definitely couldn't escape.

“This is the Nine Nine to One Formation formed by 81 Saints. Probably only the Heirs of the seven major worlds can destroy it.”

“Wu Hao, Sword Master Dongliu, White-robed Fang Yi, and Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine are the only ones able to destroy the Nine Nine to One Formation. Probably not even the old guys from Kunlun's Field can do it.”

...

Being trapped inside the Nine Nine to One Formation basically meant death. No more than 20 people among the Saints of the seven worlds could defeat it.

But just then, the people discovered with shock that the figure in the Ten Saints Blood Armor actually appeared outside the formation.

“How is that possible? How did he escape from the formation?”

“What the heck? What kind of creature is he?”

“Could he be a Qi spirit cultivator able to pass through formations at will?”

In legends, some special Qi forms could develop a mind and intelligence, forming a human body. These cultivators were known as Qi spirit cultivators.

Of course, they were extremely rare. Sometimes, not even a handful could be born in a major world. Those who could reach the Saint Realm were even rarer.

Only the cultivators of Kunlun's Field knew that Zhang Ruochen had used a spatial tactic to move outside the Nine Nine to One Formation.

Free from the formation's restrictions, Zhang Ruochen immediately started killing in return.

Poof, poof.

“No, hurry and dodge... So fast...”

“You...”

Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, Zhang Ruochen seemed to be cutting down grass. In an instant, he'd killed more than 20 Luosha marquises in the formation.

However, the Luosha marquises also reacted quite quickly. Knowing that the formation was already destroyed, they hurried over to attack.

Unfortunately, not one was able to fend off one of Zhang Ruochen's strikes. In a few minutes, another 20-some marquises were killed. The other 30-some were heavily injured.

Zhang Ruochen was practically undefeatable. The remaining Luosha marquises all ran for their lives, not daring to fight with him.

“He's too strong. The wave tactic can't stop him at all.”

“His cultivation must be at the pinnacle of the Absolute Saint Realm. He's undefeatable under the Saint King Realm.”

...

With extreme speed, Zhang Ruochen pursued the Luosha marquises and killed seven in a row. Two of the marquises actually deactivated their saintly sources to make Zhang Ruochen die with them.

Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Twist and moved the destructive power to somewhere else.

Deactivating saintly sources couldn't threaten them at all.

“Such strong power waves.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen detected a dangerous aura. He stopped killing and opened the Heavenly Eye in his forehead. He looked toward the eastern sky. He saw that the Luosha marquises had actually formed another Nine Nine to One Formation 400 miles away.

Under the full power of 81 marquises, the formation was operating and had sent out a thunder and lightning attack.



It was a dozen-meter-thick lightning bolt. Like a river formed by electricity, it shot at Zhang Ruochen 100 times faster than the speed of sound.

It was too fast. He didn't have time to activate spatial power at all.

With a loud yell, Zhang Ruochen activated the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. Opening his arms, he moved into a bow stance. He grabbed the Monument Shield and activated all the Holy Qi within him, sending it into the shield. He activated the shield's complete power.

Fiery thunder kept pouring out of the shield, clashing against the bolt of lightning.

# Chapter 1434 - Kill Them All

Chapter 1434: Kill Them All

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Even if it was a defense type weapon, it had tremendous power after its complete forces were utilized. After all, it was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon.

The lightning fire formed a huge monument that was three thousand feet tall.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen stepped back dozens of miles, and his Monument Shield had turned crimson as if it were going to melt.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen warded off the lightning light pillars from Nine Nine to One Formation. He balanced himself again and stood on the ground while the Monument Shield cooled down.

“He handled the Nine Nine to One Formation?”

All the Luosha marquises were shocked.

Yushan Field, Yuanze Bug Field and Thousand Cities Field were all amazed by Zhang Ruochen’s power as they reckoned he might be one of the most powerful beings under saint kings.

He was definitely a talent.

“A great being indeed. Let’s see who he is after he takes off his blood armor.”

“Perhaps he’s an elder too. There’re only a few among the young saints who have such power.”

...

The silver-haired Sphinx looked intimidated. He moved his body and rushed to the center of Nine Nine to One Formation like a trace of light.

This time, he would be in charge of the formation.

The remaining Luosha marquises all gathered inside Nine Nine to One Formation as this was their only chance to suppress that monk wearing blood-red armor.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen stepped on a Luan and a phoenix, changing his body, leaving shadows and approaching Nine Nine to One Formation.

Although Nine Nine to One Formation was powerful, it couldn't lock down Zhang Ruochen at all.

When he was only ten miles away from Nine Nine to One Formation, Zhang Ruochen started to infuse the Abyss Ancient Sword with his saint Qi.

The sword started to gleam.

Each trace of light was sword Qi, and they knocked a deep hole in the ground.

Zhang Ruochen activated the full power of the Abyss Ancient Sword, and the sword forces trembled the Luosha marquises on the ground.

The silver-haired Sphinx felt that his head went numb. He yelled, "Perform Nine Nine to One Formation. Kill him now."

The eighty-one Luosha marquises combined their power, shaking the spiritual Qi of heaven and earth fiercely. The saint Qi that gushed out of their bodies turned into a lightning ocean.

The lightning traveled in the sky and the lightning ocean like pillars, painting a scene much like the genesis of a world.

At the next moment, the eighty-one Luosha marquises reached out their palms and pressed forward.

Suddenly, a purple hand that was more than a thousand feet long emerged in the lightning ocean and slapped toward Zhang

Ruochen.

“Kill!” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

The Abyss Ancient Sword that had been fully activated formed the phantom of a giant sword and dashed against the purple hand.

Bang!

The purple hand crushed the Abyss Ancient Sword, and sword Qi slashed the Nine Nine to One Formation, breaking the lightning ocean.

The eighty-one Luosha marquises only managed to ward it off for a moment, and the sword pierced through the screen covering them and hit the ground.

Boom!

All the Luosha marquises were knocked away by the sword Qi waves, and twelve of them were killed on the scene.

“Run! Only Baiyu Second Marquis is able to defeat that guy.”

After that, the silver-haired Sphinx spread his black wings that were ten feet long, rushed into the clouds like a trace of light and ran toward the wormhole.

Other Luosha marquises were all horrified. They flew up and tried to get away from this place as fast as possible.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try and chase them. He yelled, “Carnivorous Holy Flower.”

Carnivorous Holy Flower spread from Zhang Ruochen's back, and the vines became thicker and longer. They pierced through the clouds, and then, tens of thousands of branches grew out and covered the entire sky and land.

People on the ground couldn't see anything going on in the sky. All they could see were vines and leaves, and the lightning and fires on the leaves.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was as powerful as an absolute saint now, so it was an easy task for them to deal with those low-level Luosha marquises.

Blood-curdling screams kept coming out of the vines.

Some of the Luosha marquises had their bodies pierced through by Carnivorous Holy Flower while some were covered by vines and leaves and squeezed to death.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was way better than Zhang Ruochen in massacring.

Several fourth marquises used their saint weapons to break out of the vines of Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Zhang Ruochen drew the Blue Sky Bow with the Shining Sun Arrow on it.

Bang!

Followed by an earth-shattering sound, the Shining Sun Arrow flew out and hit a fourth marquis. That fourth marquis screamed in agony and fell from the sky.

The Shining Sun Arrow had a death force inside which would penetrate the victim along with its blood.

Which meant that the Shining Sun Arrow was the arrow of death.

Bang!

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen shot ten times and killed all the fourth marquises who were trying to run away.

The only one who survived was that silver-haired Sphinx who used his ten thousand patterns saint weapon to ward off the arrow twice.

“He’s just a third marquis, yet he’s able to survive two shots of mine. How powerful is a second marquis?”

The silver-haired Sphinx flew to ten thousand miles away, so it was already outside Shining Sun Arrow’s radar. Zhang Ruochen had to put the Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow away.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the battlefield filled with chaotic saint Qi where there were bodies of saints everywhere. Even

the mud was tainted red by the saint blood.

“I thought becoming a saint was already a huge accomplishment and that saints are revered by countless creatures. However, greater power comes with greater responsibilities. They have to fight for their fields, and in this battle, saints are nothing.”

If he could, Zhang Ruochen would rather seclude himself from the world and live in the forest where he would only drink wine and row, surrounded by beautiful scenes and accompanied by a close female friend.

1

However, the reality could always tear your dream apart.

Zhang Ruochen stopped picturing his ideal life, wielded the Abyss Ancient Sword, and started to refine the saint weapons of saints from Hell Blade Field and the Luosha race.

There were more than a thousand dead saints on the battlefield, and their saint weapons were all incredibly valuable. If he managed to refine all of them, the grade of the Abyss Ancient Sword would surge.

Whoosh!

The Hundred Saints Blood Armor that was covering Zhang Ruochen's body turned back into a boxing glove.

A saint soul dividing self walked out of his body.

That saint soul dividing self formed a real body which looked exactly like Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen let the saint soul dividing self collect the blood and saint souls of Luosha marquises as his real body walked toward the two absolute saints from Hell Blade Field.

The two absolute saints had mostly recovered after taking the saint pills.

The other five arms of the Sole-arm Absolute Saint all grew back. All his arms were glinting with saint light, and lightning sounds came out every time he clenched his fists.

Red Tiger Absolute Saint had already fully recovered. He turned back into human shape as an enormously built man, and beside him was a saint blade wide like a door.

The absolute saint with six arms was thrilled when he saw how young Zhang Ruochen was.

Where does he come from?

“Thanks for helping us,” Red Tiger Absolute Saint said.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at them coldly and said, “No need to thank me. I didn’t intend to help you anyway.”

Both Six Arms Absolute Saint and Red Tiger Absolute Saint had lived for more than five centuries, so they were smart enough to see that Zhang Ruochen was deliberately using Hell Blade Field to weaken the Luosha race. Otherwise, he would’ve fought the Luosha race directly instead of letting Hell Blade Field be annihilated by the Luosha race.

However, Six Arms Absolute Saint and Red Tiger Absolute Saint knew that they weren’t Zhang Ruochen’s match, so they had to play ignorant.

Six Arms Absolute Saint smiled and said, “If it weren’t for you, we would’ve been killed by Luosha race. We owe you a huge favor. Whenever you need us for help in the future, we’ll pay you back no matter what.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t even try to act nice. He said, “Stop talking rubbish. Give me the saint blood and saint soul.”

Six Arms Absolute Saint and Red Tiger Absolute Saint stopped smiling, as that was what they had expected.

Red Tiger Absolute Saint released blazing flames and said, “You’re too tyrannical. Do you really think we’re scared of you?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you give me the saint blood and saint souls, I can spare your life, otherwise, I’ll have to kill you and take them by force.”

“Not that easy. If I blow up my saint source, we’ll all die.”

Red Tiger Absolute Saint wanted to scare Zhang Ruochen off.

# Chapter 1435 - Harvest

Chapter 1435: Harvest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Six Arms Absolute Saint stopped Red Tiger Absolute Saint and smiled again. “Since you saved us, we must compensate you. Red Saint, take your two bottles out and hand it to this friend.”

Six Arms Absolute Saint was clearly very generous. He was the first to take out his bottles and toss them at Zhang Ruochen.

Red Tiger Absolute Saint hesitated slightly. Then he also took out his two bottles and tossed them over.

Zhang Ruochen didn't even look at the four bottles on the ground. “Where are the others?” he asked.

Shock flashed past Six Arms Absolute Saint's eyes. Feigning ignorance, he asked in confusion, “What do you mean? Didn't we already give our bottles to you?”

“Hundreds of Saints from Hell Blade Field attacked the wormhole together,” Zhang Ruochen said. “This battle is so dangerous. How could they carry their bottles with them? Didn't they keep it with you two?”

Six Arms Absolute Saint knew that he couldn't hide it from Zhang Ruochen anymore, so he stopped pretending. His eyes turning harsh, he said, “I must admit that you are indeed very strong. You are like a pinnacle Absolute Saint. However, if I ignite my saintly blood and use a taboo spell, you might not be able to take it either. How about you just take our four bottles and treat it as us owing you? We can shake hands and come to peace. How about that?”



“Lord,” Red Tiger Absolute Saint said, “you must want to go through the wormhole toward Whale River Territory. You can’t fight off the Luosha army guarding the wormhole by yourself. How about we work together? We might be able to make it.”

“You two want to use me to fight off the Luosha army?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Stop dreaming. Fight if you want. Whether you want to ignite your blood or deactivate your saintly source, I’ll accompany you until the end.”

The negotiation failed.

“Since you want to die, then I’ll go easy on you.”

Murderous intent flared in Six Arms Absolute Saint’s eyes. Uttering a strange language, all his blood started burning. The aura radiating from him grew stronger and stronger.

Unless forced into a dead end, no Saint would fight by igniting their blood on the merits battlefield. After all, the side effects were great. They would become extremely weak afterward too.

A weak Saint couldn’t survive on the merits battlefield for long.

But now, Six Arms Absolute Saint had to take the risk.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lowered. He formed a sword print with two fingers and uttered, “Wu Sword.”

The surrounding time stopped in that instant.

Whoosh!

When the flow of time reverted to normal, Zhang Ruochen’s fingers had already passed through Six Arms Absolute Saint’s forehead, killing him.

“That is...the power of time...”

Red Tiger Absolute Saint’s expression changed dramatically. He immediately transformed into a flaming tiger and rushed out, escaping into the distance. He was extremely frightened. He never would’ve guessed that he would run into a time cultivator.

Run! Run! Run!

“Zi Sword.”

Time stopped in that instant again.

It was just that instant when Zhang Ruochen used another finger sword to kill Red Tiger Absolute Saint.

I didn't want to use the power of space and time. Why did you have to force me? Zhang Ruochen shook his head softly. He felt around Red Tiger Absolute Saint's body. He found a storage bag. Opening it, he saw that there were actually more than 1,000 bottles.

Then he found another bag on Six Arms Absolute Saint. There were also more than 1,000 bottles in it.

How can they have so many? It must not be only from the Hell Blade Field Saints. It's possible that they also killed Saints of other worlds and stole their bottles.

Zhang Ruochen used his Spiritual Power to check and calculate.

There were blood and soul remnants from more than 60 million Luosha in the 2,000-some bottles.

With Zhang Ruochen's own abilities, he wouldn't be able to kill 60 million Luosha cultivators even in a year.

He smiled. No wonder the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field would kill other participating Saints. The speed of earning merits this way is much faster than killing Luosha directly.

Of course, most of the blood and souls in the 2,000-some bottles were from Luosha cultivators under the marquis level. Only a few were from marquises.

The higher the cultivation, the more merits they could be exchanged for.

Sometimes, even the blood from 100,000 Luosha cultivators couldn't be compared to the blood from one marquis.

There are around 1,800 drops of blood and 900 soul remnants from marquises.

The saint soul body might be able to collect a lot of blood and souls. This way, I've killed around 3,000 marquises already.

This was a big harvest with great rewards.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen sensed something amiss. He picked up one of the strangely shaped bottles and opened the cap.

It actually wasn't blood or soul remnants in the bottle. Instead, a heavy fragrance wafted out.

"Ning True Saint Dew."

Joy colored Zhang Ruochen's face.

That bottle had been found in Red Tiger Absolute Saint's bag. There were more than 600 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. This was an unexpected find.

Not only could Ning True Saint Dew help Heaven Pass cultivators form their Rules of Saintly Way, they were extreme treasures for True Saints and Absolute Saints. It could increase their cultivation speed.

Zhang Ruochen continued searching. He also found a bottle of Ning True Saint Dew in Six Arms Absolute Saint's bag. There were actually more than 800 drops.

Great. With more than 1,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew, my cultivation will definitely improve further.

Getting an idea, Zhang Ruochen sent an order to his saint soul body, telling him not to only collect the blood and saint souls of the Luosha marquises, but also collect treasures from Hell Blade Field Saints. He might be able to find even more Ning True Saint Dew.

The entire Shatuo Seven Fields, Yushan Field, Yuanze Insect Field, Ten Thousand Cities Field etc... All of the large worlds paying attention to the merits battlefield were in an uproar.

There was no helping it. Zhang Ruochen's performance in that battle had been too powerful. He'd killed almost 200 Luosha marquises by himself. The entire battalion had almost been wiped out.

More importantly, he was still young.

In the Guanghan Field, all the streets were filled with celebration by all the cultivators. “I saw him in the Saint Army of Guanghan Field. He’s our top genius.”

“I received news from a Half-Saint senior from the Heaven World. He’s the priest of Guanghan Field.”

“The priest is undefeatable. Long live the priest.”

“With two powerful figures like the priest and Heir, Guanghan Field will definitely get a good ranking in the Saints Merits Battle. I hope we can get fourth place.”

“The Great Devil Ten Square Field, Purple Mansion Field and Eight Ministry Field of the Shatuo Seven Fields are too strong. There’s no way we can defeat them, but we can try for fourth place.”

Zhang Ruochen’s powerful performance excited all the cultivators and civilians of Guanghan Field. So many youths now viewed him as their idol. So many girls worshipped him now.

1

But the cultivators of Kunlun’s Field were feeling complicated. Some were sighing, some were insulting Zhang Ruochen, and others were still excited and cheering for Zhang Ruochen even though he couldn’t hear it at all.

The cultivators of Hell Blade Field were furious.

“He actually killed Absolute Saints Six Arms and Red Tiger. He stole our merits too. Damn him.”

“Kill him. We must kill him.”

...

The important figures from the Heaven World who were watching the battle weren’t only impressed by Zhang Ruochen’s performance. They were more confused.

“How did he escape from the Nine Nine to One Formation in an instant?”

“Six Arms Absolute Saint already ignited his saintly blood. His abilities shot up. How could he stand in place without

moving and let himself get killed?”

The important figures could see the battle footage, but they weren't at the battlefield personally. They couldn't feel the ripples of space and time.

This was also why they were so confused.

A territory of Yushan Field in the Heaven World...

A Supreme Saint's split body appeared. He was more than 2,000 feet tall. "Immediately send people to the Shatuo Seven Fields and Guanghan Field," he ordered the four Saint Kings in the palace. "Investigate this person's identity and background."

In the saint territory under Yuanze Insect Field, an insect Supreme Saint with gold patterns came out of the ground. It transformed into an old woman in golden clothing.

This Supreme Saint also discovered that Zhang Ruochen was a top genius. She wanted to bring him in, so she issued the same order as the Supreme Saint from the Yushan Field.

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew that the earlier battle would definitely appear in the battlefield footage. Many cultivators would probably notice him.

But he didn't seem to care. The outside world couldn't get involved with the Saints Merits Battle anyway.

After a while, the saint soul body returned to Zhang Ruochen's side and handed him a storage bag. Then the saint soul body melted back into him.

He opened the bag and checked the contents.

"Two hundred and forty-five drops of blood and 79 soul remnants from marquises. As expected, the Luosha also paid greatly to kill the Hell Blade Field Saints."

He continued to count.

The storage bag actually contained large amounts of pills and runes. There were also some strange items—all from the Hell Blade Field Saints. More than half were healing medicines of the Divine Pill grade.

In addition, he'd really found some Ning True Saint Dew. There were more than 2,000 drops.

“A great harvest. Truly, a great harvest. Adding the Ning True Saint Dew from Six Arms and Red Tiger, I now have close to 4,000 drops. It's enough for me to reach the True Saint Realm. Worth it. For the 4,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew, this battle was worth it.”

Zhang Ruochen put all the treasures away and wiped his smile away. Looking in the direction of the wormhole, he murmured to himself, “The Luosha didn't send an army to attack me. Are they waiting for me to go over to them?”

He didn't hurry over to attack the Luosha guarding the wormhole. Instead, he refined the Ning True Saint Dew while waiting for the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine the weapons on the battleground.

He was also waiting for Holy Carnivorous Flower.

More than 1,000 Saints had died on this battleground. He wasn't afraid that there wasn't enough fertilizer. He only feared that the flower couldn't take it all.

# Chapter 1436 - By Himself

Chapter 1436: By Himself

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew back to Zhang Ruochen's hand after half a day.

It had absorbed and refined all the saint weapons, and it had more than thirteen thousand inscriptions on its blade now.

After becoming a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, it takes longer for it to improve, Zhang Ruochen thought.

There were more than a thousand weapons on the battlefield, yet they only added three thousand inscriptions to the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Obviously, the quality of the inscriptions on the Abyss Ancient Sword was higher after becoming a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, so it'd need more and more saint weapons to be upgraded.

The root, vines and leaves of Carnivorous Holy Flower tried to absorb the nutrients from the mud and air, and its cultivation surged.

After half a day.

Carnivorous Holy Flower's cultivation reached pinnacle true-saint level.

It gradually became slower at absorbing nutrients, and the fruit at the top of the vine couldn't grow anymore.

Zhang Ruochen was also refining at the same time. He successfully refined almost five hundred drops of Ning True Saint Dew and got closer to becoming a true saint.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the time and space crystal and said, "Let's go to the wormhole."

"Give me a couple more days, master. I might be able to become an absolute saint if I can absorb all the nutrition here," Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

Zhang Ruochen knew that time was pressuring him. He said, "We came to Zuling Field for fighting and killing. We don't have that much time for refining. We need to get to Whale River basin through the wormhole now."

The merits battle spanned three months, and it had been more than twenty days, so every day he had was precious.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Golden Dragon Carriage and entered it. He mobilized his saint Qi to activate the soul shadows of the nine golden dragons, rushing toward the wormhole.

Zhang Ruochen took out a bottle and sipped Ning True Saint Dew.

Zhang Ruochen needed to refine Nine True Saint Dew on the journey as well as during the fight, and that was how he could become a true saint as quickly as possible.

Carnivorous Holy Flower had to acquiesce and followed Zhang Ruochen. Roots that were dozens of miles long spread from the mud and spread forward as if it had thousands of legs.

Many powers from Heaven World were paying attention to Zhang Ruochen, as they were surprised that he rushed to the wormhole by himself.

"Look, Zhang Ruochen's going to the wormhole by himself. Does he want to fight the Luosha armies alone?"

"Although the armies under marquises from the Luosha have retreated, there're still six hundred something Luosha marquises guarding the wormhole. There's no way he can get through it alone."

"Perhaps he's really in a rush to Whale River basin for merits."



...

Zhang Ruochen fought more than a hundred Luosha marquises by himself and almost killed them all, which was indeed impressive.

However, getting through the wormhole was a different thing, as nobody reckoned Zhang Ruochen could do it. The result was that Zhang Ruochen was defeated but managed to survive.

Chances are, he would get killed.

Zhang Ruochen looked forward when he was only five hundred miles away from the wormhole. There was saint Qi permeating this heaven and earth, and the ground was cracked.

The saints from Hell Blade World and the armies of the Luosha race had a huge battle here yesterday, so there were still lots of bodies on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dare underestimate his enemies. He stopped the Golden Dragon Carriage and used his mind power for inspection.

“Those saints from Hell Blade Field broke eleven defense formations. They helped me clean up a lot of trouble.”

There were many formation inscriptions in this sky and land, making this place solid. No wonder the saints from Hell Blade World were annihilated.

There were also lots of formation inscriptions left underground, and in the distance were complete inscriptions blocking Zhang Ruochen's mind power.

“How many layers of defense formation are there? How many attack formations are there?”

Zhang Ruochen wasn't intimidated by the sheer number of Luosha armies, but he was cautious about the attack formation and Nine Nine to One Formation.

Luosha armies guarding the wormhole also spotted Zhang Ruochen. Beings with great forces emerged from behind the defense formation.

The third marquis who escaped Zhang Ruochen walked out of the guarding formation. He stood on the top of a hill and yelled, "Are you coming to die, human?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't even bother talking to him. He took out Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow and aimed at that silver-haired Sphinx.

The silver-haired Sphinx knew how powerful the Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were. He cursed and rushed back to the formation.

Bang!

The Shining Sun Arrow hit the hollow following the silver-haired Sphinx, and then, a guarding formation emerged, and it looked like a half-transparent light wall where there were chains flowing inside.

The chains in the light wall trembled, forming a whirlpool that warded off the Shining Sun Arrow.

"Quick enough."

Zhang Ruochen reached out his hand and took the Shining Sun Arrow back.

Zhang Ruochen didn't only try to kill the silver-haired Sphinx, but also to test how sturdy the guarding formation was.

It was the first time those marquises from the Luosha race behind the guarding formation saw the silver-haired Sphinx so awkward and scared, so they couldn't help laughing.

The silver-haired Sphinx felt ashamed. His eyes started to gleam, and he shouted, "Kill him!"

Inscriptions showed up five hundred feet above the ground, forming an attack formation.

The sky started to burn under the attack formation. At the center of the attack formation was a shadow that was three thousand feet tall. He looked like a Luosha Demonic God with wings on his back.

Whoosh!

The Luosha Demonic God breathed out a golden fiery ball, trying to bombard Zhang Ruochen.

The heat from the fiery ball was beyond the limits for Carnivorous Holy Flower. Its leaves started to burn, so it had to shrink its body to avoid being attacked by the formation.

Zhang Ruochen stood up, mobilized his saint Qi and reached forward.

“Space twist.”

The diving fiery ball was immediately diverted to several miles away.

Boom!

The ground shook, and golden flames spread everywhere.

The entire area seemed to be engulfed in flames.

“Is he dead?”

All Luosha marquises stared at the flames. Suddenly, nine golden dragons carried a saint carriage out, and they clashed toward the guarding formation at a speed a hundred times faster than sound.

The silver-haired Sphinx clenched his teeth and said, “Do you really think you can break the guarding formation by yourself? Use attack formation again and kill him no matter what.”

The Luosha Demonic God opened his eyes, and two fiery light pillars hit the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the top of the Golden Dragon Carriage and mobilized the space power and said, “Break.”

Walla!

The space was torn apart. A crack that was three hundred feet long and fifty feet wide broke the guarding formation.

And then, the Golden Dragon Carriage rushed in.

Followed by blood-curdling screams, Luosha marquises were knocked away. They couldn't defend themselves against the dragon carriage at all. Some of the Luosha marquises were even crushed to death.

Carnivorous Holy Flower wound itself around the Golden Dragon Carriage and wielded its vines.

Sizzle!

The vines were sharper than spears, piercing through the saint body of a fifth marquis while rushing toward another Luosha marquis.

Carnivorous Holy Flower targeted stronger marquises like sixth marquises, fifth marquises, and fourth marquises. Every time it killed a marquis, it dragged its saint corpse back to absorb its saint blood and saint power.

Zhang Ruochen teamed up with Carnivorous Holy Flower to break the army of Luosha marquises. Suddenly, dozens of marquises were killed.

“We’ve been the ones eating other creatures, never the other way around.”

The silver-haired Sphinx yelled and took out an iron whip that was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon. He utilized all the power in the iron whip and tried to splash Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Carnivorous Holy Flower sensed the danger coming. It also released all its strength, and countless lightning threads gushed out, covering the vines and leaves.

Boom!

The vines and the iron whip clashed with each other.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was inhabiting Zhang Ruochen’s body, so they were closely connected. Zhang Ruochen could feel that Carnivorous Holy Flower was in a very bad position, as the iron whip had already injured it, and the wounds were only getting worse.

Zhang Ruochen jumped up from the Golden Dragon Carriage. Just as he flew in the sky, he summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and wielded it against the silver-haired Sphinx.

The sword Qi turned into a sword light waterfall that was three thousand feet long.

The silver-haired Sphinx was scared. He put back the iron whip and twisted his wrist. The iron whip only grew thicker and thicker like an iron dragon.

Boom!

The power from the Abyss Ancient Sword was enormous, cutting the iron whip into halves, together with the silver-haired Sphinx.

The blood was spilled all over Zhang Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen could easily slay ordinary absolute saints with his Abyss Ancient Sword with his strength.

# Chapter 1437 - Encountering Second Marquis

Chapter 1437: Encountering Second Marquis

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Next, Zhang Ruochen used spatial power again. He used a spatial crack and folded up.

The spatial crack, hundreds of meters long, crashed against the attack formation hovering in the sky. It instantly tore the formation in half. The many formation runes were all broken apart.

The Luosha demon god standing at the center of the formation also cracked apart.

“Space...was actually torn apart...”

“He’s a spatial cultivator. Oh my, he’s actually a powerful figure who cultivates the spatial way.”

...

The Luosha marquises were all stunned. When they looked at Zhang Ruochen again, their eyes were filled with fear.

All the Luosha marquises retreated inside the last layer of the defensive formation. Then they quickly formed three Nine Nine to One Formations.

At the same time, the attack formation on the land was activated. A destructive force flooded over to Zhang Ruochen.

He took out the Buddha’s sarira and held it in his hands.

Heavy Holy Qi poured out of the seven apertures in his left hand and entered the sarira. Power from the saintly source of a

Supreme Saint burst forth instantly.

Whoosh!

Thousands upon thousands of Buddhist runes flew around Zhang Ruochen, forming a ten-meter-wide ball of glowing runes.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen released a spatial territory. He controlled it to be ten meters wide too.

When the power from the attack formation reached within ten meters of Zhang Ruochen, half of it was blocked by the sarira. The others were moved to elsewhere by the spatial power.

Zhang Ruochen held the sarira in one hand and picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword with the other. He strode forward, approaching the last defensive formation.

Boom!

Suddenly, a handprint penetrated the sarira's defensive power and pressed toward Zhang Ruochen's heart.

The handprint was formed by Rules of Palm Way and Saintly Way. There was a black hole in the center of the palm. It was actually eating up the origin power of the sarira.

I finally encountered a top figure of the Luosha race, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The power that the handprint carried was extremely abstruse. It was also very aggressive. Clearly, the other was very advanced in the Palm Way.

At least, Zhang Ruochen hadn't reached that level in the Palm Way yet.

He picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword and cut downward. The sword clashed against the incoming handprint.

Boom!

Overpowering force traveled from the Abyss Ancient Sword, sending Zhang Ruochen back 14 steps. Each step collapsed a portion of the earth.

Sword Qi and palm power filled the air without scattering for a long while.

An elder in a white robe stood across from Zhang Ruochen. The Sword Qi and palm power dissipated automatically when they were within ten feet of him.

This white-robed elder was called White Feather. He was at the peak of the Absolute Saint Realm and a second marquis.

His ancient eyes studied Zhang Ruochen, scanning him, and he nodded. "You are so powerful at your young age," he said. "Not easy."

Zhang Ruochen stabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword into the ground. Massaging his hurting arm, he said, "Your earlier palm technique has already reached the mid-saint spell level?"

"The Sky Swallowing Palm is indeed a mid-saint spell level. However, I've already cultivated for more than 300 years and I've only reached minor completion. I'm still far from completion."

White Feather's voice was raspy as he spoke.

Saint spells were grouped into lower, middle, and upper levels.

With a Saint's cultivation and understanding of the Saintly Way, it was already impressive to reach the highest level of a spell.

Usually, only a Saint King could successfully cultivate a mid-level spell. Only a Saint King's heavy saintly power could cast a mid-level spell too.

White Feather could reach minor completion for a mid-level spell. It was evident that he was more talented in the Palm Way than others.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword again. His aura grew even sharper. "Fight," he said.

Facing a second marquis, he didn't have to use tentative attacks at all. Zhang Ruochen used his strongest power immediately. Beams of strong sword intent formed into swords and converged into a flood of Sword Qi. It flooded over at White Feather.



At the same time, he activated all the runes on the Abyss Ancient Sword. Activating a complete force, he stabbed forward, leaving a trail of sword light behind.

“Your attainments in the Sword Way aren’t low,” White Feather said.

Then he reached his hands out together. A black hole appeared on each hand. There were two vortices of black wind.

“Sky Swallowing Palm.”

He slapped his two hands forward and shattered all the Sword Qi, turning it into wisps of white smoke.

At the same time, the two vortices overlapped. The power strengthened ten times, growing stronger and stronger. All the rocks on the ground were swept into the sky.

Boom!

Two terrifying forces collided. The ground was shattered instantly, a crack that was hundreds of miles long appearing.

White Feather lived on the battlefield and had very rich combat experience. After casting the Sky Swallowing Palm, he immediately used a physical technique and moved to Zhang Ruochen’s side. He struck with a blood-red rune.

“Saint Killing Rune.”

The rune transformed into a beam of bloody light. It flew to a few feet away from Zhang Ruochen and suddenly exploded. It released a mass of blinding red light.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Monument Shield and blocked in the direction of the rune.

However, thousands of lightning bolts flew out of a Nine Nine to One Formation inside the defensive formation. They wove together into 12 lightning giants that charged toward Zhang Ruochen.

He could only pick up the Abyss Ancient Sword and hold it horizontally to block them.

Boom!

Under the collision of the two forces, Zhang Ruochen flew backwards and landed dozens of miles away. His internal organs seemed to have all been dislocated. He felt immense pain.

Snatching this chance, White Feather attacked as soon as Zhang Ruochen landed. White light flowed out of his sleeves. They transformed into two saint clouds and struck out.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes focused. He saw that there was a human-shaped saint skeleton inside each cloud.

The bones were translucent as if made out of jade. The insides radiated with extremely strong saintly might.

If they were still alive, they would definitely be very powerful figures. Even if they hadn't reached the Supreme Saint Realm, they would at least be at the peak of the Saint King Realm.

Zhang Ruochen raised the Monument Shield again. Densely packed thunder and fire flew out of the surface, forming a huge divine monument.

Boom.

The power from the two skeletons shattered the thunder god shield and hit the Monument Shield heavily. Zhang Ruochen was forced back again.

At the same time, the three Nine Nine to One Formations and a dozen attack formations all attacked at the same time. They helped White Feather to kill Zhang Ruochen completely.

After the continuous attacks, the Holy Carnivorous Flower was heavily injured. Zhang Ruochen collected it back into his body.

He kept using physical techniques, dodging the formations' attacks while fighting White Feather. Explosions kept sounding throughout the air.

"Human junior, if you don't use spatial power, you will probably die here."

White Feather knew that Zhang Ruochen cultivated the Spatial Way, so he didn't approach Zhang Ruochen. He just controlled the two saint skeletons to attack.

There were many runes carved inside the saint skeletons. They were refined into human-shaped Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Thus, their every attack was aggressive, like the half-complete power of a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

“You are indeed strong, but it’s not to the point of forcing me to use spatial power. The battle has just begun.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped retreating. He activated the Holy Qi within him, sending it into the boxing glove on his right hand. The glove transformed into the Hundred Saint Blood Armor, covering his entire body.

Then the armor shone with dazzling light. One hundred saint images flew out of the armor. Each one had the power of a lower Saint.

“Power of the Hundred Saints.”

Zhang Ruochen formed a palm print with both hands.

After combing the power from 100 Saints, Zhang Ruochen used the Thousand Hand Dragon Elephant, a move from the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Instantly, thousands upon thousands of divine dragon and elephant shadows appeared. They blasted forward, hitting the two saint skeletons.

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen’s two handprints hit the chests of the skeletons, sending them flying back. They hit the defensive formation’s light shield heavily.

Without giving White Feather the chance to control the two skeletons again, Zhang Ruochen pushed off the ground. He shot forward and was instantly before White Feather. “Dragon Traveling Nine Days,” he yelled.

It was the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

White Feather’s expression didn’t change. He also activated the evil Qi in him, forming the Sky Swallowing Palm and slapping forward.

The two handprints clashed. It produced a shocking noise, like two divine mountains crashing.

The tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was indeed a bit weaker than the Sky Swallowing Palm. But Zhang Ruochen had the support of the Hundred Saints. He was like a war god and actually made it impossible for White Feather to stand steady. He kept retreating.

“Dragon and Elephant Divine Furnace.”

Zhang Ruochen changed his tactic again. His entire body burned with blazing flames. Like a blazing divine furnace, he collided with White Feather again.

The fire burning out of Zhang Ruochen was Divine Fire Jingmie. Combined with the Power of the Hundred Saints and the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, the power was terrifying to the max.

Boom.

White Feather was sent flying. He landed below the defensive formation.

He raised his hands. The metal gloves on his hands had melted and his hands kept bleeding.

“It’s actually Divine Fire Jingmie.”

White Feather’s expression turned grave. He looked back at Zhang Ruochen and couldn’t help but gasp.

Not only was this person extremely advanced in the Sword and Palm Way, he’d actually collected the Divine Fire Jingmie and controlled space. Who exactly was he?

Could he be the Heir of one of the Shatuo Seven Fields?

# Chapter 1438 - God's Fiancé

Chapter 1438: God's Fiancé

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen flew above the Golden Dragon Carriage. He pinched his hands into a palm print, and Divine Fire Jingie gushed out of his palms, forming a huge dragon and a giant elephant, dashing toward Bai Yu.

Bai Yu kept stepping back while making thirteen moves. He spat out blood, and his arms were seriously injured.

“Impressive.”

Bai Yu spread his black wings and tried to fly back to behind the defense formation.

“Nowhere for you to run.”

Zhang Ruochen drove the Golden Dragon Carriage to chase Bai Yu. He slapped forward with his right hand, and a divine fire dragon that was hundreds of feet long rushed toward Bai Yu.

Nine Nine to One Formation was immediately operated, and lots of cold Qi gushed out from the formation, forming an ice-cold godly blade, slashing toward the divine fire giant dragon.

Boom!

The two forces clashed together. The cold blade and the divine fire dragon were dispersed at the same time.

Bai Yu entered the defense formation. After taking a saint pill, he gave an order. “Activate Ziyang Morning Bell to kill him.”

Under the wormhole and inside a rock palace that was a thousand feet tall, purple light was effused, forming mist

bridges that spread everywhere.

More than one hundred Luosha marquises infused the rock palace with saint Qi.

The palace crumbled, and an ancient purple bell flew up.

The purple light immediately covered an area of a thousand square miles, releasing hazardous power ripples.

Ziyang Morning Bell was the guarding saint weapon of an ancient sect in Zuling Field. There were over thirty thousand inscriptions inside the bell, making it heaps more powerful than ordinary ten thousand patterns saint weapons.

It took more than a hundred Luosha marquises to activate Ziyang Morning Bell.

Zhang Ruochen felt the power ripples coming from Ziyang Morning Bell, which was like a saint king awakening.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of space, tearing it apart and dashing toward the last defense formation.

Bang!

The light screen formed by the guarding formation crumbled, and then, Zhang Ruochen and the Golden Dragon Carriage rushed in, clashing with Nine Nine to One Formation.

Boom!

Nine Nine to One Formation was broken, and eighty-one Luosha marquises all bounced away.

“What carriage is that? How is it strong enough to break Nine Nine to One Formation?”

“Run behind the attack formation.”

...

Zhang Ruochen stood at the top of the Golden Dragon Carriage and wielded Divine Fire Jingmie, which spread toward those Luosha marquises.

The Luosha marquises who touched the fire were all engulfed in flames, screaming in agony. After a short while, they were

burned to dust.

Zhang Ruochen fought them while collecting the saint souls and blood.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't devoted to the fight that much as his main goal was to get through the wormhole. The Golden Dragon Carriage moved toward the wormhole quickly.

“Not so easy.”

A Luosha girl who was a third marquis stood under the wormhole, pointed at the Golden Dragon Carriage, and then, those Luosha marquises drove Ziyang Purple Bell toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't scared at all. He spread his arms and released space domain, covering the Golden Dragon Carriage and yelling, “Great Spatial Move.”

The space shook fiercely, and then, Zhang Ruochen and the Golden Dragon Carriage vanished.

Boom!

Ziyang Morning Bell hit the ground, cracking it. And then, it caved in. Some of the Luosha marquises who didn't manage to dodge it in time were severely injured.

The Golden Dragon Carriage then showed up right beside the wormhole.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the ground that was hit by Ziyang Morning Bell, and he had lingering feelings. He was lucky enough to have the power to control space, otherwise, he could've been killed.

This was a dangerous fight indeed.

Walla!

The Golden Dragon Carriage left Yujin Mountain and got into the wormhole.

All the Luosha marquises were dazed seeing that. How did they fail to stop a young man with more than ten formations?

Bai Yu twisted his lips and said, “Tell her highness that a human space monk went through our guarding and got to Whale River basin.”

Dust and flames covered the sky around the wormhole, so people from the outside couldn't see the fight at all. All they saw was Zhang Ruochen driving into the wormhole with the Golden Dragon Carriage.

It was mad that he had managed to fight off a large group of Luosha marquises.

All the monks from Guanghan Field were exhilarated. “Our priest is so unstoppable that he managed to enter the wormhole, breaking the encirclement.”

“Those of the Luosha race didn't even stand a chance against our priest. Not even hundreds of marquises could stop him.”

All the monks from Hell Blade Field were rendered speechless as they were shocked to their core. They were wondering whether their heir was able to do the same thing or not.

“Even hundreds of Luosha marquises failed to stop Zhang Ruochen. Who else is able to fight him on the Merits Battlefield?”

“No wonder Zhang Ruochen was able to defeat Qiu Yu on Peakless Mountain within three moves. Perhaps Qiu Yu couldn't even survive three moves of Zhang Ruochen now.”

“Unfortunately, the feud between Zhang Ruochen and the empress is too deep, otherwise he would've represented Kunlun's Field.”

“The stories between Zhang Ruochen and her majesty are not for us to judge. I heard that they used to be very close eight hundred years ago. If it weren't for what happened after, they would've been the best couple in Kunlun's Field.”

...

Yu Mountain Field.

Saint King Yuanye walked into the saint palace and bowed at the supreme saint sitting in the throne. “Emperor Master, I've



figured out who that young man is. He's Zhang Ruochen, and he was taken back to Heaven World by Moon Goddess."

The dividing self of the supreme saint said, "A descendant of Moon Goddess?"

Saint King Yuanye shook his head and said, "Zhang Ruochen was born in Kunlun's Field instead of Guanghan Field, and what's more, he practices the power of time and space at the same time. He's called the Descendant of Time and Space."

The dividing self of the supreme saint released fierce saint might. Obviously, that supreme saint was very thrilled. He said, "The power of time... and space... Never expected someone like that to actually exist."

Saint King Yuanye said, "There's something more interesting. Based on the information I gathered, Zhang Ruochen has some special connections with the God from Kunlun's Field."

"What connection?" the supreme saint asked.

"Zhang Ruochen was the fiancé of the God," Saint King Yuanye said.

The dividing self of the supreme saint was kind of surprised. He said, "He's related to two Gods, so it's far out of reach for us. Let's tell Yu Godly Ancestor this and ask him to decide."

Meanwhile, all the other large fields had figured out Zhang Ruochen, and they were all amazed.

"Haha, Moon Goddess is such a badass. She seized and brought the fiancé of Kunlun's God to Guanghan Field, but a time and space descendant is so rare. I might've done the same thing."

"Is that the trump card of Moon Goddess? Once that time and space descendant grows up, Guanghan Field might actually surge in the 'Thousand Fields Merits Rank'."

"Can't believe a saint has something to do with two Gods."

Some Gods were astounded by Zhang Ruochen's special identity, including some special powers from Kunlun's Field, like Time Godly Palace and Space Godly Palace.

Many great beings started to pay attention to Zhang Ruochen.  
Outside Zuling Field.

At the other end of the wormhole were lots of Luosha marquises, but they also failed to stop Zhang Ruochen in the Golden Dragon Carriage.

2

After traveling for tens of thousands of miles, Zhang Ruochen came to Whale River basin and didn't stop the Golden Dragon Carriage until he made sure that he wasn't being followed by Luosha marquises anymore.

Whale River was incredibly wide, yet the water flowed quietly. It looked like a lake whose shores were invisible.

There were corpses floating on the river, and the water was also red. The entire river reeked of dead bodies. Obviously, there had been brutal killings in Whale River basin. Is any creature still alive?

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Golden Dragon Carriage and looked at the blood-red river, dazed.

After several fights, Zhang Ruochen had almost run out of saint Qi. Although he was still standing straight, he looked tired.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes to rest a bit as he wanted to recover his energy. And then, he took out a map and put it on the ground.

“Whale River is one million, four hundred thousand miles long. It's situated at the center of the southern world where there're tens of billions of people living. It gave rise to a prosperous civilization.

“Whale River basin is too vast. It might be difficult to find Lingxi.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a signal flare and wrote on it, as he wanted to ask where Mu Lingxi was.

And then, Zhang Ruochen infused it with a trace of Mu Lingxi's saintly way forces and sent the signal flare away.

“I’ll find somewhere safe to recover first.”

Zhang Ruochen put the Golden Dragon Carriage away, and then, he formed a saint soul dividing self and let it stay in place to wait for Mu Lingxi’s reply.

And then, Zhang Ruochen jumped into Whale River, took out Monument Shield, put his fingers on the time and space crystal and entered the inner space.

He spent five days in the inner space of the time and space crystal before he reached his prime again, during which he successfully refined more than six hundred drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

Heaven Pass River in Zhang Ruochen’s lower abdomen became more and more solid, and when the water flowed quickly, it echoed with the rules of heaven and earth.

He was only one step away from being a true saint.

“Time to make it to a true saint. If I can become a true saint, I can fight even Wu Hao or those first marquises.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t wait anymore. He took out a bottle of Ning True Saint Dew and swallowed it.

# Chapter 1439 - True Saint

Chapter 1439: True Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A great amount of Ning True Saint Dew entered Zhang Ruochen's stomach. It immediately transformed into a bone-piercing current. It wrapped around his organs, about to freeze his blood.

Crackle, crackle.

A layer of white ice formed on his skin.

The ice grew thicker and thicker until it transformed into an ice mountain, sealing Zhang Ruochen within.

He held his breath, but the Holy Qi within him kept circulating. Shreds of cold Qi kept moving into his Sea of Qi, joining the Heaven Pass River.

Inside the Heaven Pass River, the more than 300 Rules of Saintly Way kept flowing without stopping. Each rule contained extremely magical power, representing a type of truth from the world.

Each Rule of Saintly Way was cultivated to the extreme and was able to destroy the world.

It was an advantage to cultivate more than 300 Rules of Saintly Way at the same time, but it also made it difficult for Zhang Ruochen to improve.

As time passed, the first rule finally turned tangible and showed completely. It was extremely eye-catching in the Heaven Pass River.

Zhang Ruochen celebrated inwardly and kept going.

A second rule, third, fourth...

The Rules of Saintly Way kept appearing. Soon, more than 100 rules had become tangible.

The light from the Heaven Pass River kept growing brighter and brighter. It flowed faster and faster too.

Even with the obstruction from the Time and Space Crystal, the rules in the outside world still sensed the changes in the rules within Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

As if stirred by an invisible force, the blood-red water of the Great Whale River rippled. Then a whirlpool appeared, sweeping up higher and higher waves.

In the center of the whirlpool, a tornado formed by Spiritual Qi shot into the clouds from the river. It was extremely majestic.

The Rules of Saintly Way evolved even faster within Zhang Ruochen's Sea of Qi.

After around half a day, other than the rules of time and space, all other rules had become real. The Heaven Pass River shone with dazzling light, enveloping the ice mountain on Zhang Ruochen.

I need too much Ning True Saint Dew to consolidate the rules of time and space. No wonder they're the ancient ways.

Zhang Ruochen drank 200 more drops of Ning True Saint Dew. He activated the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture and used all his might to move the icy power within. He continued to consolidate the rules of time and space.

The rules of time and space were like two bottomless holes. They still didn't consolidate after absorbing 200 drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

Continue.

Zhang Ruochen drank 200 more drops and continued cultivating.

...

After refining 1,200 drops of Ning True Saint Dew, two soft sounds finally came from within the Time and Space Saint Figures. Then two Rules of Saintly Way that passed through the entire Heaven Pass River appeared.

The rules of time and space were extremely strong. Instead of flowing with the Heaven Pass River, it seemed to be making the river flow with them.

Crackle, crackle.

A string of explosions sounded within Zhang Ruochen. He instantly entered into the True Saint Realm.

He immediately rushed out of the Time and Space Crystal, broke through the river, and flew into the sky. Spiritual Qi rushed to him crazily, flooding into the 144 apertures on his body and the Sacred Mark on his forehead.

The Spiritual Qi in the surrounding sky was quickly emptied.

But his body was still changing. Thus, Zhang Ruochen opened his spatial ring. He took out more than 1,000 saint stones and made them hover around him.

The Holy Qi contained in the saint stones were extracted and snaked into his body. Some melted into his blood, organs, bones, and meridians. Others melted into the saintly source and Heaven Pass River.

This was a breakthrough in realm and life.

After becoming a Saint, every breakthrough of realm could increase the cultivator's longevity and vitality greatly. This was a change in life.

Clearly, the gap between the Heaven Pass Realm and True Saint Realm was very large. The change in life was great as well. It also had very large requirements for Holy Qi and Saintly Qi.

The saint stones hovering around Zhang Ruochen grew smaller and smaller. Finally, they were dried of Holy Qi and turned into white powder.

Zhang Ruochen slowly floated down and landed on the bank of the Great Whale River. His body shone with saintly light.

The halo formed by 108 rings of light wrapped around him like 108 layers of shields.

After reaching the True Saint Realm, Zhang Ruochen's aura changed too. He wasn't like a mortal anymore. He was spiritual, ethereal, pure, and divine, like a god from the nine heavens.

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward.

A common beam of ice rules flew out of his fingertip. Then the land seemed to be affected by the ice rules and became extremely cold. Large snowflakes fell down within thousands of miles. This portion of the Great Whale River even froze over.

The True Saint Realm is indeed much stronger than the Heaven Pass Realm. No wonder those Saints say that you can't fight across realms after reaching the Heaven Pass Realm. But... To me, crossing into the True Saint and Absolute Saint Realm to fight isn't that hard.

With my current abilities, I can probably crush the Nine Nine to One Formation and second marquises if I charge into the wormhole again. I can destroy them to bits.

Zhang Ruochen clenched his hand. In the near distance, an ice river exploded into a cracked glacier.

The saint soul body flew over from the distance and rushed into Zhang Ruochen's body.

The saint soul body hadn't received news from Mu Lingxi while he'd been cultivating.

He furrowed his brows, a bit worried. Did she run into difficulties?

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel like going back to the wormhole to kill the Luosha marquises. He immediately followed the Great Whale River and flew down. He prepared to capture a Luosha marquis or a Saint from the Shatuo Seven Fields and ask if anything had happened in the Whale River Territory. Perhaps he could find Mu Lingxi's traces.

After flying around 20,000 miles, Zhang Ruochen sensed strong battle ripples ahead. Beams of saintly light shot into the sky, shaking the air.

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eyes and looked in the direction of the battle. Instead of evil Qi, he discovered that it was a group of Saints from the Heaven World.

“It’s Hell Blade Field again... And Purple Mansion Field... That is...”

Seeing that figure, a different expression flashed past Zhang Ruochen’s face. His lips curled up slightly.

There were around 60 Saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. They were all top figures. Three of them had even reached the Absolute Saint Realm.

The Saint surrounded by them was one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens—Qing Mo.

Compared to when she accompanied “Huang Yanchen,” Qing Mo looked very different. Perhaps this was her true appearance.

However, her aura and expressions didn’t change at all, so Zhang Ruochen recognized her instantly.

Qing Mo had now reached the True Saint Realm. Her cultivation speed was very shocking. After getting the inheritance from the God of Food, she became very strong even though she didn’t like fighting. She could fight fiercely with early Absolute Saints.

Absolute Saint Nanmei of the Purple Mansion Field looked to be around 28 or 29 years old. She was a good-looking woman in a glamorous robe. Her eyes blazed. “That silver kitchen knife isn’t something simple. It must be a powerful divine weapon.”

“Kunlun’s Field was once so vibrant and produced many gods,” Absolute Saint Yanju said with cold eyes. “Those gods left behind countless treasures. Clearly, this girl was lucky and received one.”



“There aren’t even five divine weapons in all of Purple Mansion Field. They’re practically all in the hands of Absolute Saints. I can’t believe a mere Saint of Kunlun’s Field can have a divine weapon. If we continue to kill their Saints, we might be able to encounter even more treasures.”

Absolute Saint Yumu’s eyes flashed with murderous Qi. Then he put his hands together into a print. A five-fingered mountain appeared above his hands and slammed down on Qing Mo.

Qing Mo was already badly injured. Her clothes were all dyed red with blood. How could she take Absolute Saint Yumu’s attack?

Crack!

Qing Mo was about to strike with her sword, but the five-fingered mountain broke her arm. Her bone cracked and the slender hand instantly turned into wood. It became green vines.

The silver knife fell to the ground with a thud.

Qing Mo was timid by nature and very fragile. She’d been forcing herself to hold up before, but now, she couldn’t take the attacks anymore. Tears appeared in her eyes and she started crying.

Absolute Saint Yumu picked up the silver knife. Suppressing the weapon spirit inside, his face filled with joy. “A divine weapon. It really is a divine weapon. With this, I can kill even third marquises in one strike.”

Then Absolute Saint Yumu’s eyes turned to Qing Mo. It gleamed menacingly.

Absolute Saint Nanmei said, “Don’t kill her. Her original form is a dark green sacred vine, more than 40 to 50 thousand years old. It’s the best ingredient for a divine pill. The pill’s effect will be reduced if she dies.”

“I don’t want to be turned into a pill. I...don’t...wah...” Qing Mo bit her lip. She looked extremely pitiful as she shuddered and cried, retreating without stop.

Her weak and frightful appearance didn't look like a True Saint at all. Instead, she was as helpless as a rich girl whose home was robbed.

Absolute Saint Nanmei sneered. "A True Saint pretending to be pitiful? You think you can escape like this? Let me tell you. Already 16 Saints from Kunlun's Field have died in my hands since coming to Zuling Field."

"I'm not pretending. Kill me...if you want but... But don't turn me into a divine pill... I'm only a cook..." Qing Mo trembled like a little bird. She kept crying and her voice softened until only she could hear.

"What nonsense are you spouting?"

Absolute Saint Nanmei's eyes darkened. She lost all patience. Reaching out a palm, she formed a claw and reached forward. A dozen-meter-long claw print appeared instantly.

Suddenly, a white arrow flew over in the sky.

Poof.

The arrow penetrated Absolute Saint Nanmei's claw, leaving a bloody hole.

Her dozen-meter-long claw print had already reached Qing Mo. Hit by the arrow, it shattered immediately, turning into shreds of smoke.

# Chapter 1440 - Kill Them All

Chapter 1440: Kill Them All

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Shining Sun Arrow rushed to Qing Mo's front, and it got slower and slower. In the end, it flew around her and surged into the sky.

Absolute Saint Nanshu's hands were bleeding, and a death force started to penetrate her wound, swallowing her life force.

Bang!

Absolute Saint Nanshu cut her arm off immediately.

“Who? Who's there?”

Absolute Saint Nanshu bore the pain from her right arm and stared at Shining Sun Arrow, engulfed in hostility.

The saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field all released their mind power, trying to find the monk who just shot the arrow.

It must have been an incredible being who shot Absolute Saint Nanshu with one shot.

Qing Mo recognized Shining Sun Arrow. Her eyes popped. She looked pleased but kind of worried.

“Could it be him?”

Suddenly, Qing Mo saw Zhang Ruochen wearing blood armor and carrying Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He just showed up on Whale River out of nowhere.

The saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field all saw that being standing on the river. They immediately released their saint soul domains and saint power.

Absolute Saint Nanshu gave out purple saint light and said, “Did you just shoot me?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't even bother talking.

Absolute Saint Yumu glanced at Qing Mo and said, “Did you do that to save her? Are you a saint from Kunlun's Field as well?”

Absolute Saint Nanshu's eyes glinted. She said, “That arrow contains a very special death force. It's got to be incredibly valuable. Is it a godly remains ancient weapon?”

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward on the water and said, “Even if it is, you can't seize it.”

“How dare you say something so arrogant facing all of us saints. You're too confident in your power.”

Absolute Saint Nanshu sneered, took a deep breath, and blood Qi effused from her wound like veins, forming an arm.

Gradually, the blood Qi formed bones, flesh, blood, meridians, and skin. After a while, her arm grew back.

She reached forward.

Boom!

Two giant water pillars ascended from Whale River, forming two giant hands that were three hundred feet long, squeezing toward Zhang Ruochen.

The hands formed by the water in the river even froze the space between the hands.

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of his body and melted both the ice hands.

The water in Whale River tumbled.

Absolute Saint Nanshu was kind of scared. She said, “Is that... Divine Fire Jingmie?”

Absolute Saint Yanjue and Absolute Saint Yumu both looked solemn. They took out their ten thousand pattern saint weapons respectively.

Absolute Saint Yanju took out a saint blade that was eight feet long which gave off bizarre light. There were eight chains winding the blade.

Absolute Saint Yanju pressed the blade, and eight chains flew out, each of which was thick like a bucket and dozens of miles long.

Zhang Ruochen pressed forward at the space in front of him seeing the eight chains dashing toward him, and the chains all bounced back at the saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field.

Bang!

More than ten saints with great cultivation were knocked away by the chains. Even though they had prepared for it, they were still heavily injured.

Absolute Saint Yan Ju knew better than everyone who was present how powerful that move was. If he wasn't standing behind the saint blade, he might've been knocked away already.

Is he really a saint instead of a saint king?

Suddenly, Absolute Saint Yan Ju felt a great pressure on his body, and he couldn't help being horrified.

That young man wearing blood-red armor was already standing in front of him.

Absolute Sint Yan Ju couldn't be more terrified. He tried to run away, yet he found that he couldn't move at all as if his legs were frozen.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen raised his hand above Absolute Saint Yan Ju's head and crushed all his bones, meridians, saint meridians and veins.

He literally just killed an absolute saint that easily.

Absolute Saint Nanshu and Absolute Saint Yumu gave each other a look. Without any hesitation, they performed a secret

technique that improved their power temporarily. Their saint blood and saint Qi started to burn.

The forces coming out of them got several times stronger, and the waves knocked all the other saints away.

Those saints had all realized that Zhang Ruochen was an incredible being and not theirs to fight, so they all ran away.

“They’re yours now, Carnivorous Holy Flower,” Zhang Ruochen said while staring at Absolute Saint Nanshu and Absolute Saint Yumu.

Carnivorous Holy Flower grew from his body, turning into vines and spreading toward those fleeing saints.

Meanwhile, Absolute Saint Nanshu and Absolute Saint Yumu started to attack Zhang Ruochen.

“Hand of Sky.”

Absolute Saint Nanshu was floating in the sky and slapped her hand down. Suddenly, the sky turned dark, and a tremendous power dived as if she had mobilized all the power in the heavens and the earth.

“Golden Light Glass Cover.”

The hands of Absolute Saint Yumu started to gleam with golden light. Golden Light Glass Cover that was a ten thousand pattern saint weapon was fully utilized, and it was wielded against Zhang Ruochen.

They were indeed much more powerful after performing their secret techniques. If Zhang Ruochen hadn’t become a true saint, it’d be very difficult for him to handle.

But now, Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes while putting his hands behind his back. Sword intent gushed out of his body.

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out and slashed them both.

Walla!

‘Hand of God’ was annihilated, and Absolute Saint Nanshu was cut in half. Her body fell from the sky, and her blood was spilled on the shore.

Golden Light Glass Cover was also knocked back, hitting Absolute Saint Yumu's body. Suddenly, Absolute Saint Yumu's bones cracked, and his body caved while all his organs were destroyed.

Absolute Saint Yumu had great life forces, so he didn't actually die. He fell onto the ground and immediately tried to run away.

The man wearing blood-red armor was too powerful for him to fight...

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and shot Shining Sun Arrow again.

Bang!

Absolute Saint Yumu, who had already fled hundreds of miles away, was shot, and his body exploded, falling onto the shore as well.

Zhang Ruochen then walked to the upper half of Absolute Saint Nanshu's body.

To Absolute Saint Nanshu, it was like a God of Death approaching her. She asked, "Who are you?"

"You're going to die anyway. No need to know too much," Zhang Ruochen said.

"The heir of Hell Blade Field is in Whale River basin. You're not going to live for much longer anyways cuz someone has informed him."

Absolute Saint Nanshu's eyes glinted, and then, her body trembled. A purple light pillar gushed out of her forehead.

She was trying to blow up her saint source and die with Zhang Ruochen.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen showed up right in front of Absolute Saint Nanshu and crushed her head using Divine Fire Jingmie first, burning her to the ground.

He killed all three absolute saints in less than fifteen minutes.

Zhang Ruochen found a storage bag in Absolute Saint Nanshu where there were more than a hundred bottles, one hundred and twenty drops of blood and three hundred and seventy thousand saints.

The number wasn't impressive, but the blood and souls had high quality.

There were one hundred and forty drops of blood of Luosha marquises and three hundred and fifty souls of them.

Great merits again.

And then, Zhang Ruochen found the storage bags of Absolute Saint Yumu and Absolute Saint Yanju where there were lots of blood and souls as well.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was counting the valuables of those three absolute saints, Qing Mo picked up the silver kitchen knife on the ground, suppressed her forces and tried to flee secretly.

“Where're you going?”

Zhang Ruochen showed up in front of Qing Mo.

Qing Mo raised her head and said, “I, I don't know anything.”

“Then give me your Luosha blood and souls,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Qing Mo held her space ring tightly and said, “You're the crown prince of the Sacred. How can you rob a girl?”

Zhang Ruochen gave her the space ring.

“You tricked me with Chi Yao. Why can't I rob you?”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Qing Mo's arms and raised them up. He took the space ring off her finger and said, “This is mine. Now I'm just taking it back.”

“Let it go. It hurts... A lot...”

1

Qing Mo threw off Zhang Ruochen's hands, stroked her wrists a bit, and squatted on the ground while getting teary. She said, “I wasn't lying to you on purpose. Why did you treat me like



that? It took me a long time to collect that blood and those souls, but now you seized all... Why did you do that to me?"

Zhang Ruochen inspected the objects in the space ring, frowned, looked at Qing Mo and said, "It's been almost a month, and you've only collected thirteen drops of blood and seven souls. Do you really think this is a lot?"

# Chapter 1441 - She Disappeared

Chapter 1441: She Disappeared

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

An hour later, Carnivorous Holy Flower killed all the Saints of Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. It returned to Zhang Ruochen's side and tossed a dozen storage bags on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen poured out everything from those bags. It all piled into a small mountain on the ground.

Merely looking at the bottles containing blood and soul remnants, there were already around 700 or 800.

Looking at those bottles from the side, Qing Mo was shocked. Her sparkling eyes rolled. "They really killed so many Saints? Shouldn't we be trying to defeat the Luosha together?"

"Who told you we're at the merits battleground to defeat the Luosha?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Are we not?"

Qing Mo widened her eyes. She was very confused. Did she mishear the order before entering Zuling Field?

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "We came to the merits battleground to fight for more merits."

Qing Mo was even more confused. "Don't we gain more merits by killing the Luosha cultivators?"

"How can gaining merits by killing Luosha be as fast as killing other participants?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't know how to describe his current emotions. Qing Mo had practiced with him for a while, but she was still so naïve. With her lack of calculatedness, it was a feat that she'd survived on the battleground for close to a month.

Qing Mo fell silent. She rested her chin in her hands as if pondering.

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel like explaining to her anymore. He began counting his loot.

There were 1,070,000 drops of blood, including 840 drops from Luosha marquises.

There were 2,400,000 soul remnants, including 1,350 from Luosha marquises.

Combined with the bottles that Zhang Ruochen had received before, he now had blood from 3,000 marquises and souls from 2,500 marquises. The blood and souls from Luosha below the marquis level were even more countless.

In addition, he collected more than 2,000 more drops of Ning True Saint Dew and large amounts of healing pills, saint weapons, and rune scrolls.

Zhang Ruochen gave all the saint weapons to the Abyss Ancient Sword, including the two Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons from Absolute Saints Yanju and Yumu. The sword could refine them and improve itself.

On the other hand, the roots of the Holy Carnivorous Flower had fully extended. It rooted inside the corpses of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field Saints, absorbing their power and blood. It tried to reach the Absolute Saint Realm.

Its vines, leaves, and fruits all shone with green saintly light. It seemed to have turned into a jade tendril.

If the flower reached the Absolute Saint Realm, it would immediately become a top figure of the Saint King Realm. It could also help Zhang Ruochen greatly.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen decided to give it one day and night to have a breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen sat below the Holy Carnivorous Flower. He took out a bottle of Ning True Saint Dew and drank it. He used a technique to absorb it and continued to refine the Rules of Saintly Way, stabilizing his new level.

The Rules of Saintly Way consolidating was only the first step. He had to continue condensing them until it became real. That would be truly reaching the peak of the Saint Realm.

That level was the Absolute Saint Realm.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was still very far away from the Absolute Saint Realm.

According to his estimates, he would need to refine at least 5,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew to even reach the middle of the True Saint Realm. If he wanted to reach the later stage, he would need double the amount.

Qing Mo had squatted there without moving. Seeming to understand what Zhang Ruochen had said earlier, she shot up and yelled, “I got it!”

Zhang Ruochen’s Holy Qi was disturbed by her. Immediately stopping condensing the Rules of Saintly Way, he said, “What are you freaking out about?”

Qing Mo was very happy. “I get it! It’s like how you immediately received large amounts of blood and souls by killing the dozen Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field Saints. It means you received a large number of merits too. Right, collecting merits like this is indeed many times faster than me killing those Luosha cultivators alone.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes. Suppressing the power darting around his body and calming himself down, he finally said, “It took you that long to figure out something so simple?”

“That’s the fastest way to take merits, right?” Qing Mo asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No.”

Qing Mo was taken aback. “There’s an even faster way?”

“Stealing from other participants is indeed a fast way to collect blood and souls from Luosha,” Zhang Ruochen said. “But each person has limited abilities. The four worlds of Zuling Field are so vast and all the Saints are spread apart. How many people can you really steal from?”

Qing Mo tugged at her hair lightly as she thought carefully. “What do you mean?”

Zhang Ruochen had a headache. If she was the Saint Lady, she would probably already understand his underlying meaning. But it just had to be Qing Mo before him now.

They were both Heavenly Maidens. How could they be so different?

“Who killed the most participants in Zuling Field?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“You,” Qing Mo replied without even thinking.

Zhang Ruochen glared at her. “I mean, which force?”

“The Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field?” Qing Mo asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No, it’s the Luosha.”

Qing Mo nodded. “That’s right. A large number of Saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields indeed were killed by the Luosha.”

“The Luosha cultivators killed them,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“They would definitely receive the Saints’ bottles as well. Those bottles are extremely precious to us. Each drop of blood or soul represents a large amount of merits. But to the Luosha, it’s not valuable at all.”

Qing Mo felt that everything Zhang Ruochen was saying made sense, but she didn’t quite understand.

The Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields killed the Luosha cultivators to receive blood and souls. Then the Luosha cultivators killed the Shatuo Saints and took the blood and souls back.

Qing Mo’s mind was muddled. “What does this mean?”

“Whoever gets the blood and souls from the Luosha will be number one of the Saints Merits Battle,” Zhang Ruochen said thoughtfully.

“I don’t care who’s number one. Return the blood and souls I collected. That pertains to the survival of Kunlun’s Field.”

Qing Mo gathered her courage and walked over, shaking Zhang Ruochen’s arm.

Zhang Ruochen also thought that it was close to impossible to steal the blood and souls from the Luosha. Thus, he shook his head lightly.

There must be another solution.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had no reaction, Qing Mo begged him, “Please return it to me!”

Zhang Ruochen put his thoughts away. He took out Qing Mo’s spatial ring and held it between two fingers. “You only collected this much blood and souls and you still worry about the survival of Kunlun’s Field?” he asked without holding back.

Qing Mo’s eyes darted around. “You got so much blood and so many souls. Can you share some with me?”

“In your dreams.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. Then he took out a frozen piece of dragon meat, a fire Luan wing, and a shark fin from the spatial ring. Placing it on the ground, he said, “Aren’t you good at cooking? Bring out the best techniques as the heir of the God of Food and cook a delicious feast for me. If I’m happy, I might give you some blood and souls.”

“Really?”

“Of course.”

Qing Mo’s eyes brightened. Then she rolled up her sleeves, revealing her snow-white arms and preparing to do something great.

Compared to killing Luosha cultivators, Qing Mo clearly liked cooking more. Her spatial ring was filled with top ingredients,

spices, and utensils. It was completely different from the things that other cultivators brought to the Saints Merits Battle.

Zhang Ruochen took a bronze table out of the ring. Placing it on the bank of the Great Whale River covered with floating bodies and bones, he took out a flagon of Dragon Fire Wine. He poured it into a night cup.

Zhang Ruochen raised the cup and drank, feeling the bloody wind from the river.

The Dragon Fire Wine was hard liquor. It was like drinking lava and his organs were about to melt.

Nearby, Qing Mo started cooking. A heavy aroma wafted out quickly. The fragrance kept spreading into the distance and actually suppressed the smell of blood.

This was clearly a dangerous battlefield and there were hellish scenes everywhere. But Zhang Ruochen was drinking wine in relaxation and waiting for a feast.

Even he felt that it was quite incredible. Was this reality or was he in a dream?

After drinking three cups, Zhang Ruochen's eyes grew a bit dazed. He finally asked the question he'd been meaning to ask. "Why didn't Huang Yanchen come to the merits battlefield?"

Before entering the Saint Road, Zhang Ruochen had observed the army of Kunlun's Field and didn't see Huang Yanchen.

Qing Mo hesitated. Then she said, "She went missing!"

"Missing? How?"

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed. He didn't trust Qing Mo.

"She really went missing," Qing Mo said seriously. "No one knows where she went. It's like she just vanished."

"As one of the Heirs, how could she just go missing?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "Plus, even if she did disappear, with your identity, you would know where she went."

Qing Mo saw that there was something wrong with Zhang Ruochen's eyes. Afraid that she would get hit, she shook her

head quickly. “I seriously don’t know. I asked Sister Danqing and she doesn’t know either. Princess Yanchen just vanished. What can I do?”

Zhang Ruochen collected his iciness. He was sure that Qing Mo wasn’t lying. Huang Yanchen seemed to have really disappeared.

But how could that be?

Half a beat later, Qing Mo carried a foot-long crystal platter with both hands. She walked timidly over to Zhang Ruochen. Fingers trembling, she placed the platter on the table.

There was golden dragon meat on the plate. White steam and an incredible scent came out of it. Just taking a whiff made one impatient to gobble it up.

Qing Mo brought over plate after plate. They were all delicacies.

Zhang Ruochen fell into deep thought. As if his soul had flown out, his eyes were a bit empty. He didn’t seem interested in the delicious food before him at all.

Just then, a lovely woman’s voice sounded under the night sky. “Such a delicious smell. Let me take a whiff. There’s dragon meat, shark fin, fire Luan meat... This is great. It’s everything I love to eat.”

Tap, tap.

Footsteps approached.

Then a tall beauty in a light green robe walked out of the night with her hands behind her back.

Firelight shone from a bonfire in the near distance. It reflected on her, showing that she was wearing a silver-white crystal crown on her head. She had an extremely noble aura.

There was a nine-headed bird behind her. Its nine pairs of eyes were staring at the food on the table. All nine beaks were drooling at the same time.



# Chapter 1442 - Another Space Monk

Chapter 1442: Another Space Monk

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The tall girl didn't even bother to show any courtesy. She just walked to the bronze desk and picked up a piece of golden dragon meat and put it in her mouth.

She looked elegant while picking up the food. She enjoyed the texture and the taste of the meat very much. She said, "So delicious. I've never tasted anything like this before."

The tall girl picked up a shark's fin that was as large as a palm and sniffed it. The smell itself was enough to boost her appetite.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have walked out of his thought universe, and at this moment, he saw a beautiful girl standing in front of him.

The girl was around six feet tall, and she had a perfect body with a long, white neck and snake-shaped waist. Her long legs and breasts were like a scene. She looked sexy, classy, and vigorous. Her eyes seemed to be hypnotizing.

Zhang Ruochen could feel that he kind of lost balance just by looking into her eyes. He felt that he was falling into a whirlpool while his head was spinning.

However, Zhang Ruochen had great enough mindpower. He clenched his fist and performed 'Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture.' An unmovable Emperor Ming showed up behind him like a golden mountain, and it dissolved the weird power that made his head spin.

The tall girl was kind of startled to see Zhang Ruochen ward off her hypnotizing demonic eyes.

Standing in front of her was a handsome man. He looked very shrewd, but somehow gloomy.

“You’re fine as well,” the tall girl praised him.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Have you asked for my permission for the food?”

The tall girl was still holding the shark’s fin. She smiled. “It would be a waste if you finished all the delicious food by yourself. How about sharing it with me?”

The Nine-Dragon Blue Bird nodded its head as it wanted to try some of the food badly.

“Then let’s see whether you’re strong enough to get it.”

Although Zhang Ruochen hadn’t fought that tall girl yet, he reckoned she was a great being as he was almost hypnotized by one look at her.

There were only a few people in Zuling Field who were able to do that.

Zhang Ruochen reached his hand forward, and the Abyss Ancient Sword that was refining other saint weapons flew back.

Walla!

He wielded his sword, and thousands of traces of sword Qi dashed toward the tall girl like rain.

The tall girl was still standing across from the desk. She pressed forward with her fingers at a space knot. Suddenly, the space was frozen and all the sword Qi stopped moving completely, turning into blue smoke.

The tall girl sat on the desk directly and supported herself with her arm. She smiled. “Great sword technique, but not enough strength.”

Zhang Ruochen was still sitting in the chair. They were only two feet apart, and he could smell the fragrance coming off of

her. He said, “Spatial freezing. Are you following the spatial rules as well?”

“That’s right. Are you scared?”

The tall girl bit the shark’s fin and chewed it. She kept pinching her chin and said, “Fantastic. Fantastic food.”

Countless monks from Heaven World, Kunlun’s Field, and Guanghan Field saw it through the battlefield reflection. They were all worried about Zhang Ruochen.

“Damn it. Zhang Ruochen ran into Luosha Princess. He might not be able to survive tonight.”

“Zhang Ruochen killed many Luosha marquises at the wormhole. Luosha Princess must’ve known learned this and tried to kill him here.”

“Although Luosha Princess is only a saint, she has supreme status in the Luosha race. She has the best talent and intelligence, and she was the leader of those in Zuling Field. It’s only been thirty years, and she crushed Zuling Field and Heaven World.”

“Even those in the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ pale compared to Luosha Princess.”

“Three years ago, Li Xingdou who was ranked eightieth on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ of Heaven World fought Luosha Princess in Zuling Field before, and he was crushed.”

“Li Xingdou is a child of God, and he has a supreme complete body constitution. Even he couldn’t fight against Luosha Princess?”

“Seems that Zhang Ruochen won’t survive tonight.”

...

Everyone watching the scene was worried as if there were a sword of death hanging above Zhang Ruochen. If the sword of death fell, Zhang Ruochen would die.

However, Zhang Ruochen had no idea who that was.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen didn’t detect any Evil Sha Qi from Luosha Princess, nor did he find any Luosha characteristics on

that princess, so he reckoned she might be a top-tier being from Shatuo Seven Field.

Zhang Ruochen stood up, spun his Abyss Ancient Sword, which formed dozens of sword shadows, and then, lightning surrounded the sword.

“Sword Seven.”

Zhang Ruochen stabbed toward Luosha Princess’s neck like a trace of light.

They were too close to each other, and the Abyss Ancient Sword almost stabbed the neck of Luosha Princess.

But then, a space power gushed out of Luosha Princess’s body again, freezing the space around the Abyss Ancient Sword and dissolving the attack completely.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen squeezed out that word.

And then, a space storm coming out of his body tore the frozen space apart.

The tip of the sword was only an inch away from Luosha Princess. Without the suppression of the space, it was just about to stab her neck.

However, Luosha Princess was faster than that. She put her fingers on her neck and stopped the Abyss Ancient Sword.

She looked surprised. “You’re also following the spatial rules?”

“That’s right. Are you afraid?”

All of the one hundred and forty-four apertures on Zhang Ruochen’s body started to gleam. He twisted his wrist, and an earth-shattering power gushed out and knocked away Luosha Princess’s fingers while the sword stabbed her neck.

However, Zhang Ruochen then realized that it was just a shadow.

Luosha Princess performed spatial move to vanish, and then, she showed up right behind Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move at the same time and showed up above Luosha Princess again, trying to attack her.

Whoosh Whoosh!

Both of them kept performing spatial move, leaving hundreds of shadows as if there were hundreds of Zhang Ruochens fighting hundreds of Luosha Princesses.

Qing Mo and Nine Blue Bird were astounded.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen and Nine-head Blue Dragon showed up on Whale River.

Zhang Ruochen tore the space apart, forming a space crack that was hundreds of feet long, slashing toward Luosha Princess.

Luosha Princess pinched a ten with her index fingers, and then, two space cracks in the shape of a Chinese character 'ten' was formed, clashing with the space crack formed by Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

The space was turned into fragments.

When the space recovered, Zhang Ruochen formed a space whirlpool on his palm, and dozens of space cracks traveled back and forth in the whirlpool, making the heaven and earth spin.

“Wait, wait. Can we stop fighting for a second?” Luosha Princess said.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her coldly.

Luosha Princess took back her space power first and folded her arms at her chest. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “We’re both monks from Shatuo Seven Fields. We should team up to fight those from Hell World instead of fighting against each other. Besides, the food’s going to get cold if we keep fighting like this.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “There exists someone like you in Shatuo Seven Fields?”

They had struck at each other hundreds of times, and Zhang Ruochen had performed everything but time sword techniques, yet he couldn't even touch her sleeve. She was indeed incredibly strong.

Even Wu Hao, the most powerful saint from Guanghan Field, stood a very low chance of winning against her, and besides, Zhang Ruochen was sure that she hadn't shown all her power yet.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen suspected that she was not a monk from Shatuo Seven Fields.

Luosha Princess smiled and said, "Think again?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "There're less than ten great beings like you among those from Shatuo Seven Fields, and there's only one female saint at that level... Are you Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine from Great Devil Ten Square Field?"

Great Devil Ten Square Field was ranked first among Shatuo Seven Fields, and their heir was Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

It was said that Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was a concubine of a demonic emperor from Great Devil Ten Square Field. She was a ruthless woman who was exquisite-looking with great talents, and she was able to manipulate Nanling Dragon Fire, making her the first great being among the saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field.

"That's right, I'm Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine."

Luosha Princess became cold. She flicked her finger, and a ball of Nanling Dragon Fire showed up as if it were a magic lamp blinking in the darkness.

"I've never heard that Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine has practiced spatial way," Zhang Ruochen said.

Luosha Princess shook her head and said, "Everyone has their secrets and trump card. Why would I show everything I've got? I'm a concubine of a demonic emperor, so I need to hide my strength, otherwise, I'd be killed by the other concubines."

# Chapter 1443 - Fight Again

Chapter 1443: Fight Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“No matter who you are, it’s nothing to me.”

Zhang Ruochen put away the spatial whirlpool. He returned to land, walking over the waves.

So what if this woman was the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine? Anyone could be an enemy on the merits battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen had something more important to do for now, so there was no need to offend such a powerful enemy. After this, he’d have to be careful about her.

“So cold.”

The Luosha Princess smiled and caught up, saying, “You’re pretty strong. How about you join the Great Devil Ten Square Field?”

Zhang Ruochen ignored her. He stabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword into the dirt beside the table and prepared to sit back down in his chair.

Whoosh!

A fragrant breeze blew past. The next moment, the Luosha Princess sat in the chair before him. She blinked at him. “If there’s a seat, you should let the girl sit first, right?”

“You’re a girl?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Luosha Princess smirked. “Guess!”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like arguing with her. He took another chair out of his spatial ring and placed it across from

the Luosha Princess. He reached out for the flagon on the table.

But the Luosha Princess was extremely fast. She grabbed the flagon before him. Placing it before her nose, she sniffed.

“Good wine! Do you have more cups?”

“That wine is fierce,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Smiling, the Luosha Princess said, “I was afraid it wouldn’t be fierce enough.”

After studying her, Zhang Ruochen flicked his fingers. A midnight cup flew out of the spatial ring.

“Thank you.”

The Luosha Princess caught it and poured a cup. Then she brought it up and took a sip. Her brows furrowed instantly and she coughed. “What is this wine? How is it so fierce?”

“Dragon Fire Wine.”

Zhang Ruochen also poured a cup and drank it all calmly.

Seeing this scene from the battle footage, all the cultivators were confused.

“What’s going on? Weren’t they fighting viciously earlier? How come they suddenly stopped and sat at a table to drink together?”

“This isn’t right! Zhang Ruochen never hesitates when killing. The Luosha Princess isn’t a benevolent person either. How could they suddenly stop fighting and even chat like they’re so happy?”

The cultivators of the Hell Blade Field hated Zhang Ruochen. “He must’ve sided with the Luosha,” one said. “Otherwise, how could the Luosha Princess let him go?”

“Are you all stupid? Zhang Ruochen has never met the Luosha Princess before. It’s possible that he doesn’t even know who that woman is.”

“The Luosha Princess doesn’t seem to be in a hurry to kill Zhang Ruochen. What does she want?”



...

The cultivators who hadn't entered Zuling Field were even more anxious than Zhang Ruochen. They felt like the Luosha Princess would attack and kill him at any moment.

But they waited for a long while and she still didn't attack.

The food on the bronze table was quickly devoured. More than half were eaten by the Luosha Princess and nine-headed bird.

Zhang Ruochen was observing the princess quietly the entire time. He wanted to see through her. He discovered that the girl seemed nice but was actually very mysterious. She didn't have any flaws in her guise.

Qing Mo walked over timidly. She hesitated, but she still said, "Lord... Can you give the Luosha blood and souls back to me now?"

Zhang Ruochen took out his spatial ring and gave it to Qing Mo.

Qing Mo hurriedly accepted the spatial ring and checked the items. Confirming that nothing was missing, she let out a relieved sigh. Smiling, she said, "I knew that you didn't actually want to steal my things."

Zhang Ruochen didn't have big emotions. "Chi Yao shouldn't have let you come to the merits battlefield."

"I'm a member of Kunlun's Field," Qing Mo said seriously. "I should do something for Kunlun's Field."

"She basically sent you to your death by having you come to the merits battlefield. An empress like this doesn't deserve your loyalty. Why don't you follow me from now on?"

Qing Mo considered Zhang Ruochen's words and shook her head.

The Luosha Princess's eyes brightened. "Why don't you follow me?" she said temptingly. "You can have as much Luosha blood and souls as you want, as long as you make me good food every day."

"Really?" Qing Mo asked.

“Of course,” the Luosha Princess said. “Why would I lie?”

Beside her, the nine-headed bird nodded firmly like a chicken pecking at corn.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened. “Qing Mo, you should be careful about unknown people.”

“What, you think I’m lying to her?”

The Luosha Princess rolled her eyes. She took out a very exquisite little box and opened it. A mass of white light spilled out. Countless treasures hovered in the white light.

Qing Mo gaped. “You killed this many participants?”

Even Zhang Ruochen was a bit shocked by this.

“What do you think?” the Luosha Princess said, a bit proud. “As long as you agree with me, half of these bottles are yours.”

Qing Mo shook her head. Instead, she hid behind Zhang Ruochen and said a bit fearfully, “You killed so many participants. You’re definitely not a good person. What if... What if you killed me?”

“Good person? There are no good people in this world.”

The Luosha Princess closed the box and smiled. “Think it through. My words count as long as the merits battle hasn’t ended.”

Then the Luosha Princess glanced at Zhang Ruochen. “I sensed a bit of murderous Qi from you earlier. You don’t want to kill me and take the items, right?”

“What’s the point of continuing to pretend?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Don’t you want to kill me?”

The Luosha Princess shook her head. “We’re both spatial cultivators. It’s fate to meet. Why must we fight and kill? Why can’t we discuss the way and improve together?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like pretending with her anymore. He stood up and said, “Qing Mo, follow me.”

“Wait.”

The Luosha Princess turned serious. Her entire aura seemed to have changed. “Actually, I stayed here because I want to cooperate with you and do something.”

“Why should I cooperate with you?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Don’t you want to know where that friend of yours went?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes overflowed with cold light. “What do you mean?”

The Luosha Princess squinted. Then she took out a communication rune and tossed it at Zhang Ruochen. “This is the communication rune that you sent out, right?”

This was the rune that Zhang Ruochen sent to Mu Lingxi when he arrived at Whale River Territory.

Zhang Ruochen grasped it tightly. “You actually intercepted the communication rune I sent out. No wonder I never got her reply.”

The Luosha Princess met his eyes and smiled. “Is it hard for a spatial cultivator to intercept a communication rune?”

“It’s not hard, but it’s not easy either. If you want to intercept it, you have to be nearby the communication rune. In other words, you were close to me the moment I sent it out.”

Zhang Ruochen paused and then continued, “When did you get your eyes on me?”

“When you attacked the Luosha army,” the princess said.

Zhang Ruochen added Holy Qi into the rune again. The jade scroll instantly shone with dazzling light and flew toward the night sky.

“Come back.”

The Luosha Princess reached out and cast the Spatial Twist.

The rune that had flown back instantly reversed and flew back.

Zhang Ruochen stepped out. He reached both hands out and cast the Spatial Twist too. The rune turned again and flew into the distance.

The Luosha Princess's eyes hardened. Looking annoyed, she waved a finger and cast a spatial crack.

Boom.

Seeing the spatial crack destroy the communication rune, the Luosha Princess finally smiled proudly. "As long as I'm here, you'll never send the rune out."

"Are you trying to anger me?"

"Do you want to fight?" the Luosha Princess asked in return. "You're an early True Saint. You're not my match yet. When you reach the later stage or peak, you might be able to force me to use my true abilities. As for now, why do something so meaningless?"

Zhang Ruochen activated the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. It covered his entire body and blinding bloody light flew out crazily. One hundred Saint images charged out of the armor and stood around Zhang Ruochen.

"Kill!"

Condensing the Power of the Hundred Saints, he punched.

Blue Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of his arm, transforming into a huge fire dragon.

The Ten Thousand Saints Blouse on the Luosha Princess started absorbing the surrounding energy. Then she sent out a white arm, crashing with Zhang Ruochen's fist.

Boom.

The ground underfoot shattered and kept collapsing.

When Zhang Ruochen activated the Hundred Saint Armor, Qing Mo, the nine-headed bird, and Holy Carnivorous Flower all escaped into the distance. But they were still affected and tossed up by the incoming shockwaves.

In an instant, the ground within hundreds of miles became tattered. The air was filled with chaotic energy.

At the center of the battle, Zhang Ruochen and the Luosha Princess both used the strongest spatial tactics. The space disintegrated. The ground seemed to turn into islands that

hovered in the broken space. They kept breaking apart and getting devoured.

The Luosha Princess stood on a hovering island, beautiful and unaffected by the dust. “Continuing to fight won’t produce any results. Why don’t you calm down and we have a nice chat? We might really be able to work together.”

“You want to work together? You used the wrong tactic from the start.”

Zhang Ruochen’s long hair flew up straight. Like a young demon god, he grasped the Abyss Ancient Sword. Activating the power of time, he drew a circle.

The time flow in the space where he and the Luosha Princess were slowed down.

Whoosh!

When time recovered, Zhang Ruochen’s sword had already stabbed toward the Luosha Princess’s heart.

Shock flashed past the Luosha Princess’s eyes. Her body twisted like a snake. The Ten Thousand Saints Blouse wrapped around the Abyss Ancient Sword and made it move to the side.

Then she transformed into a blue streak of light and rushed into the sky.

Rip!

Zhang Ruochen moved the sword hilt to the right.

The corner of the Ten Thousand Saints Blouse had wrapped around the sword’s tip. Pulled by this strong force, it actually fell from the Luosha Princess’s body.

Instantly, the Luosha Princess felt a chill. Large patches of snow-white skin were exposed before Zhang Ruochen. Only an ivory undershirt and pants still clung to her beautiful figure.

Thankfully, this space had become shattered, making the battle footage turn black. Otherwise, countless cultivators would have spit out blood upon seeing the Luosha Princess’s full, curvaceous, snowy-white body.

# Chapter 1444 - News from Phoenix Nest

Chapter 1444: News from Phoenix Nest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Luosha Princess glared at Zhang Ruochen. She immediately covered her breasts with her arms and said, “You’re shameless. Give me back my blouse.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up Ten Thousand Saints Blouse with his sword and touched it. He felt that the saint blouse was perfectly smooth, and there was a fragrance coming out of it. He felt that he was touching the skin of a teenage girl.

“A saint blouse made of the meridians and saint meridians of saints, and it was able to withstand the Abyss Ancient Sword without being damaged at all,” Zhang Ruochen said.

This was to say that the Ten Thousand Saints Blouse was a treasure, more valuable than the Hundred Saints Blood Armor.

Luosha Princess’s eyes were blinking like stars. She stopped acting elegantly, and instead, she trampled the ground and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen to grab her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse.

Luosha Princess was indeed ethereally beautiful. She had the face and body of an angel, and after being undressed, each inch of her skin was glowing seductively.

Zhang Ruochen wielded the sword against her again.

Luosha Princess grabbed the blade of the Abyss Ancient Sword while trying to kick Zhang Ruochen.

Her legs were long and smooth, which could take people's breath away, but Zhang Ruochen didn't dare appreciate that kind of beauty. He immediately performed a flame palm print, hitting toward Luosha Princess's calves.

Luosha Princess twisted her ankles to dodge Zhang Ruochen's palm print, and at the next moment, Luosha Princess wound Zhang Ruochen's body and grabbed Zhang Ruochen's neck with one arm and took back her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse with the other. "Sometimes you can't use your power if you're too close, no matter how strong you are."

Zhang Ruochen still remained calm. He said, "You're indeed very fast, but don't you think you're being taken advantage of if you just wind your body around mine?"

Luosha Princess said to Zhang Ruochen while smiling, "A very intelligent man of my race once told me that I'm destined to be together with whoever takes off my Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, which means we're destined to be together. I don't mind being taken advantage of by you."

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe a word Luosha Princess said. "It's not a difficult job to take off your Ten Thousand Saints Blouse. You're destined to be with lots of people I guess."

Luosha Princess slapped Zhang Ruochen on his back gently after seizing her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, letting go of his neck.

When she landed again, she had already put her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse back on. She gave Zhang Ruochen a gloomy look and said, "I was telling you the truth, yet you didn't trust me. Boring."

Luosha Princess was indeed incredibly powerful, and she was at least one third faster than Zhang Ruochen. No matter what kind of defense skills Zhang Ruochen used, he couldn't stop her at all.

Zhang Ruochen had seen saint kings fight each other. Luosha Princess even stood a chance against them with her speed and space power.

She wasn't a saint king, yet she was no weaker than saint kings.

The only way Zhang Ruochen posed any threat to her was by using time sword techniques with the element of surprise.

“There're such beings who are this powerful. Perhaps I only stand a chance against her after reaching pinnacle true saint level.”

This was the first time Zhang Ruochen had run into someone that powerful, so he became much more cautious.

Actually, Luosha Princess was more shocked than Zhang Ruochen. She was an absolute saint while Zhang Ruochen was only an elementary true saint, yet she still needed to try to fight him. Even those from the Luosha race wouldn't believe it.

She had never met anyone at the same level from the Luosha race who could rival her.

Luosha Princess then transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. “Four first marquises of the Luosha race have all rushed to Whale River basin. If we keep fighting each other like this, they'll take advantage of it.”

Zhang Ruochen released his mind power, and he could sense some power ripples in the dark. He said, “The first marquises from Luosha race are the most top-tier beings, and each of them is strong enough to rival saint kings. How come they all rushed to Whale River basin at the same time?”

Luosha Princess rolled her eyes at Zhang Ruochen and said, “This is what I've been trying to tell you, but you never gave me the chance to say it. Psht!”

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground holding the Abyss Ancient Sword. “I'm all ears.”

Luosha Princess was very irritated by how arrogant Zhang Ruochen was. She had never seen anyone who dared be that impolite to her, but she tried to suppress her emotions and said, “Do you know about Phoenix Nest?”

“The nest of Ice and Fire Phoenix?”



Zhang Ruochen's eyes glinted.

He came to Whale River basin because he wanted to take Mu Lingxi to Phoenix Nest to get the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Is Phoenix Nest in Whale River basin?

Luosha Princess said, "Ice and Fire Phoenix is the most powerful great being under the God of Zuling Field, and Phoenix Nest is one of the most valuable treasures in Zuling Field. The valuables in Phoenix Nest can help saints become saint kings instantly and give saint kings a chance to become supreme saints. Even supreme saints are attracted by Phoenix Nest. Who doesn't want to get such a great opportunity?"

"Most of the resources in Zulin's Field have been seized by the Luosha race. The only valuable place is Phoenix Nest, which is why those marquises from the Luosha race are all rushing there."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Is Phoenix Nest in Whale River basin?"

"That's right," Luosha Princess said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I heard that only the creatures with ice phoenix bloodline or fire phoenix bloodline are able to find where Phoenix Nest is. How do those from Luosha race know?"

Luosha Princess was very calm. She said gradually, "Because the merits record wall in the south fell beside Phoenix Nest. Someone senses the forces of phoenixes when he was looking for the merits record wall, and that's how they found Phoenix Nest."

"As for Merits Record Wall and Phoenix Nest, many people immediately spread the news, even to the Luosha race."

"Large groups of Luosha marquises are rushing here. We need to break the boundary to seize the valuables in Phoenix Nest before they do. We can't let the Luosha race steal the valuables in Zuling Field again."

Zhang Ruochen pondered what Luosha Princess said.

Phoenix Nest would for sure be very dangerous, and he might not be able to handle it himself.

This girl was incredibly powerful, which meant she could be of great use.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “How are we going to team up?”

Luosha Princess’s eyes glinted. She said, “Both of us are space monks. If we team up, we can definitely break the boundary of Phoenix Nest, then we’ll share the valuables in Phoenix Nest, and I’ll even give you half of the Luosha blood and fragmented souls I have.”

“It seems I have no reason to say no to such a great offer,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Luosha Princess squinted her eyes and said, “My field is way stronger than the other six fields, so I don’t need to worry about my field being the last at all. It’s no big deal giving you half the Luosha blood and fragmented souls I have.”

“Okay! I’ll say yes to this cooperation, but I need to contact my friend to meet her first,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t answer her question, and instead, he took out three signal flares and wrote messages on each of them, and then, he sent the signal flares away.

Luosha Princess didn’t try to stop him, but she looked curious. “Why did you send three signal flares?”

“Are you afraid that I might ask for some help to fight you?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Luosha Princess wasn’t scared at all. Needless to say, she was the most powerful being in Zuling Field, and she also had a great number of Luosha great beings. It didn’t matter what kind of power Zhang Ruochen had. He could never escape.

Zhang Ruochen sent the two signal flares to Han Qiu and Le as he wanted them to help him fight Luosha Princess.

Zhang Ruochen knew with certainty that Luosha Princess would never give him half the treasures once they opened Phoenix Nest, and that was when they’d have the fallout.

Zhang Ruochen had to be better prepared, otherwise he was giving Luosha Princess all the advantages.

Carnivorous Holy Flower, Nine-head Blue Bird and Qing Mo came back and stood behind Zhang Ruochen and Luosha Princess.

Zhang Ruochen asked Carnivorous Holy Flower, “How long will it take you to become an absolute saint?”

“I’m almost there. I reckon one or two days,” Carnivorous Holy Flower replied.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen received the signal flare sent back by Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen was dazed by the message. “Can’t believe she went to Phoenix Nest by herself. How brave.”

Luosha Princess asked, “Can we head there now?”

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen put Carnivorous Holy Flower back into his body, glanced at Qing Mo and said, “Just follow me in the next two months.”

Qing Mo shook her head and said, “I can’t. I need to go kill more Luosha monks to get more merits.”

“Any second marquis can easily kill you and make you a pill.” Zhang Ruochen grabbed Qing Mo’s wrist and dragged her to the back of Nine-head Blue Bird.

The body of Nine-head Blue Bird became more than a thousand feet long, and it was glowing with blue saint light.

Zhang Ruochen took out hundreds of guarding rune scrolls and gave them to Qing Mo. He said, “Stick as many of them as you can to your body.”

Zhang Ruochen found those rune scrolls from the monks from Hell Blade Field, Purple Mansion Field, and Luosha race, and he still had heaps more.

Qing Mo was thrilled to see those hundreds of high-quality guarding rune scrolls.

Each of the rune scrolls had tremendous value, and she would be able to fight a saint king for a while if she put all of them on her body.

# Chapter 1445 - Saint Arrow Marquis

Chapter 1445: Saint Arrow Marquis

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The nine-headed bird flew 14,000 miles continuously and entered the middle of Whale River Territory. The river here was broad and the water current was slow. Steep mountains rose up on either side of the river.

Not long ago, there had been a saint battle here. A portion of the mountains had melted from the saintly flames and became broken. The lava still hadn't hardened completely.

The entire land was tattered and broken, like a wasteland. Luosha Princess sat cross-legged on the nine-headed bird. She took out a mask made from blue feathers and put it on her face. She covered her foxy and overly-beautiful face. Only her enticing eyes remained.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. He had suspicious eyes, but he didn't ask.

With her attainments in Spiritual Power, not many cultivators could see her true appearance even without a mask.

“If we go further,” the Luosha Princess said, “we will be where the Phoenix Nest is. It will be filled with unknown dangers. Everyone should be more careful.”

The god of Zuling Field had personally buried the Ice and Fire Phoenix in the Phoenix Nest. A god could leave any random thing behind and destroy a Saint.

Otherwise, with the Luosha Princess's abilities, she wouldn't want to cooperate with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen used his Spiritual Power to search in all directions. He sensed a strong fiery force being nurtured underground. It was slightly different from the rules elsewhere.

The Phoenix Nest may very well be nearby.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen looked down. There were two very strong beams of evil Qi in a red-yellow mountainous forest.

Whoosh!

A fierce windstorm rose up in one of the thousand-foot-tall mountains. Densely packed wind blades formed and swirled around it. They flew toward the nine-headed bird in the sky.

“How dare they attack us!”

Luosha Princess's eyes darkened and she huffed lightly.

Flames appeared in the nine-headed bird's eyes at the same time. It flapped its wings, producing an even stronger windstorm. It flooded out. Even the mountain shook as if it would collapse soon.

The nine-headed bird wasn't weak. It was even stronger than the typical second marquis.

In the red mountain below, two female third marquises stood behind a dozen-foot-tall boulder. The windstorm was a wind saint spell that they'd cast with their Spiritual Power.

Seeing the nine-headed bird destroy the wind saint spell, they immediately spread their wings and flew into the distance to escape.

“You want to leave?”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He pulled back on the bow. Instantly, a gust of wind and thunder condensed around him.

Boom.

The Shining Sun Arrow transformed into a streak of white light. It flew toward one of the female third marquises.

Just as the female Luosha was about to get killed, a golden saint arrow flew from the other direction. It crashed against the Shining Sun Arrow, producing an ear-splitting boom.

The golden arrow and the Shining Sun Arrow both went off course. They hit the ground, leaving two bottomless ditches. Soil and rock flew everywhere.

“An expert in the Arrow Way.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. He extended a hand and grabbed the air, calling the Shining Sun Arrow back.

Whoosh!

The golden saint arrow also flew out of the ground and back into the hand of a Luosha marquis.

That marquis wore golden armor. He was around 3.5 meters tall, had broad shoulders, and a long horse-like face. He grasped a golden dragon-bone bow that was close to three meters long. Other than the arrow in his hand, he had nine other arrows on his back.

“Greetings, Saint Arrow Marquis.”

The two third marquises bowed down to the man with the golden dragon-bone bow.

Saint Arrow Marquis nodded softly. Then he looked at Zhang Ruochen, Luosha Princess, and Qing Mo on the nine-headed bird. “The Phoenix Nest belongs to the Luosha,” he said arrogantly. “Anyone who dares to approach will be killed.”

Then he shot an arrow again. An explosive boom sounded on the ground.

Boom.

A golden arrow flew 600 miles out like a golden streak. It pierced a Saint who’d wanted to sneak in.

The Saint’s body exploded into a bloody cloud.

It was clear that other than Zhang Ruochen's group, there were other Saints hiding in the shadows too. They all wanted to take over the Phoenix Nest and Merits Records Wall.

Saint Arrow Marquis kept firing his bow. In an instant, he killed seven Saints who'd gotten within 1,000 miles. Then the cultivators that tried to approach the Phoenix Nest all retreated to more than 1,000 miles away.

The Luosha Princess stood up and said to Zhang Ruochen, "The Saint Arrow Marquis is one of the top first marquises. He studies the Arrow Way, so he can be called the Saint Arrow. His golden dragon bone bow and ten destructive arrows are all unusual saint weapons. They have the mysterious power to kill Saints."

Zhang Ruochen hadn't specifically studied the Arrow Way before, but he could also see that the Saint Arrow Marquis was much more advanced than him.

"I heard that first marquises can go against Saint Kings," Zhang Ruochen said. "Is that true?"

"First marquises have different levels too," Luosha Princess said. "But even the weakest first marquises can exchange a few blows with a Saint King and can even survive. The strong marquises can even kill some weaker Saint Kings."

Just then, Zhang Ruochen felt something dangerous. He saw that the Saint Arrow Marquis on the ground was aiming at his forehead with a golden arrow.

Kaboom!

The Saint Arrow Marquis cracked his mouth open and loosened his fingers. The golden arrow flew out. The sky and earth within hundreds of miles shook violently.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took the Monument Shield out and pressed forward. Immediately, a large mass of thunder and fire flooded out, crashing against the golden arrow.

The power contained in the golden arrow was huge. It even sent Zhang Ruochen back, falling off of the nine-headed bird.

Boom.



The Saint Arrow Marquis immediately shot his second arrow. It flew at Qing Mo like a golden streak.

Qing Mo immediately activated her defensive rune scroll. Layers of light and shield prints emerged, wrapping around her tightly.

Boom, boom.

A string of explosions sounded.

Twenty-three defensive runes exploded in a row and finally dissolved the arrow's power.

However, the arrow's force still sent her flying to the ground.

The Saint Arrow Marquis was obviously a bit disappointed and annoyed at failing to kill his enemy two times in a row. He quickly pulled his bow back and fired five arrows continuously. They were all aimed at the Luosha Princess and nine-headed bird.

The Luosha Princess and nine-headed bird didn't go straight up against him. They voluntarily flew to the ground and met up with Zhang Ruochen.

“Condense.”

The Luosha Princess pressed forward with one hand. She released spatial power.

Instantly, the space before her finger froze and solidified. It wanted to seal the five arrows.

Crack, crack.

It only blocked the arrows for a second. The strong power inside the arrows broke apart the frozen space and continued flying toward them.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes hardened. He appeared beside the Luosha Princess and pressed forward with both hands. He also struck with spatial power. Combined with the Luosha Princess's spatial power, they finally sealed the five arrows.

“Drat.”

The Saint Arrow Marquis's expression changed slightly. He quickly formed a print technique with his hands to collect the five arrows.

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward. Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of his hands. He started refining the five arrows while stopping them from flying back.

One thousand miles away, many cultivators were hidden, observing the battle.

Sword Saint Jiuyou's long hair fell down on either side of his face. He stood under a bare tree and looked in the direction of the Phoenix Nest. "He can actually fight the Saint Arrow Marquis now. That Zhang Ruochen has matured terrifyingly fast. Xuanji really had a good disciple. It's enviable."

Sword Saint Jiuyou's three main disciples, Wang Su, Yan Yulong, and Chen Fang were behind him. They had unnatural expressions. They didn't feel good inside, but they had to be impressed.

Zhang Ruochen was indeed strong. They couldn't fight him.

Wang Su, first disciple of Jiuyou, looked to be in his thirties. He had a cold Yin aura. "It doesn't matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is," he said in a low voice. "He's already joined Guanghan Field. He's only a traitor of Kunlun's Field. Even if Sword Saint Xuanji hasn't died, he would die from anger."

"A large group of Luosha has sealed the way into Phoenix Nest," Yan Yulong said. "We can't go in at all. Now that Zhang Ruochen is opening up the path before us, it's good news for us."

Chen Fang carried a broadsword. He looked quite young. "The four top first marquises have all gathered at the Phoenix Nest. In addition, there's a large group of second and third marquises. There are countless more lower marquises too. Even Zhang Ruochen can't open the seal by himself!"

Sword Saint Jiuyou had a sharp expression. "Let's keep waiting! A group of strong cultivators from Kunlun's Field is also hurrying over. It won't be easy for the Luosha to keep control of the Phoenix Nest."

Just as Zhang Ruochen was collecting the five arrows, a mass of evil clouds poured out behind the Saint Arrow Marquis. One could make out thousands of Luosha marquises flying in the clouds, screaming.

Luosha Princess's expression changed. "Retreat."

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the dark red cloud. He didn't feel fear, but it was clear to him that there were many strong figures from the Shatuo Seven Fields nearby. None of them were attacking. Why should he do all the work?

They could first learn how many strong figures the Luosha had and then think of a way to enter the Phoenix Nest.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen grabbed the five arrows and used the Great Spatial Move. He brought Qing Mo out of the Phoenix Nest's area.

It was strange that the Saint Arrow Marquis had lost five arrows but didn't pursue him.

When he was 2,000 miles away, Zhang Ruochen sensed Mu Lingxi's aura. Bu Ji and Su Qingling were with her too. The three quickly appeared in Zhang Ruochen's sights.

# Chapter 1446 - Ninety-nine Saint Mountains

Chapter 1446: Ninety-nine Saint Mountains

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, and Bu Ji saw Luosha Princess the second they gathered with Zhang Ruochen.

Luosha Princess had such a unique temperament that even girls couldn't help looking at her.

Su Qingling looked at Luosha Princess for a while and smiled. "No wonder Zhang Ruochen just arrived. What should I call you, sister?"

"Spiritual Flame."

Luosha Princess looked very calm. She released a hypnotizing power from her eyes.

The second Su Qingling saw her eyes, she felt like she lost her energy and balance as if someone had taken away her soul.

Zhang Ruochen knew how terrific Luosha Princess's eyes were, so he immediately formed a fiery wall using Divine Fire Jingmie to ward off the weird power coming from her eyes.

Su Qingling regained consciousness, yet her legs were still kind of shaking. She couldn't balance herself.

"What... What kind of evil techniques did you just use?"

Su Qingling's face paled.

Luosha Princess sneered and didn't even want to talk to Su Qingling. She walked to Zhang Ruochen's side.

“How dare you hurt my sister Qingling.”

A deafening lion howl came out of Bu Ji’s body, and saint Qi gushed out, gathering in his fist. He then waved his fist against Luosha Princess.

Luosha Princess glanced at Nine-headed Blue Bird, and then, it spread its wings and dashed toward Bu Ji. It not only dissolved his fist force but also pressed Bu Ji down under its body and started to bite him.

“Where did you come from, weird bird? Stop pecking at my eyes. I’ll kill you!”

Nine-head Blue Bird became fiercer and fiercer while Bu Ji couldn’t even fight back.

“Stop.”

Zhang Ruochen finally refined all five golden arrows. He then shot them out, and they fell beside the Nine-headed Blue Bird and Bu Ji.

Both the Nine-headed Blue Bird and Bu Ji stopped fighting.

The Nine-headed Blue Bird looked to Luosha Princess, who nodded at it. Only after that did it retract its wings and let Bu Ji go.

Bu Ji looked very awkward. His hair was messy, and his saint blouse was torn. Even half his butt was revealed.

He was one of the most talented beings in Guanghai Field, yet he was crushed by a bird today.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Luosha Princess and said, “They’re my friends. If you want to better team up with me, you’d better stop with your weird skills.”

Luosha Princess didn’t seem to care about it. She said, “The weak aren’t qualified to be friends with the powerful.”

Both Su Qingling and Bu Ji were furious. They were ranked among the highest in the entire Guanghai Field, yet they were the weak ones to her?

Preposterous.

Mu Lingxi was very calm, on the contrary. She said, “Luosha race has sealed the entry to Phoenix Nest. I reckon there’s no need to fight them directly. The most important thing now is to collect merits.”

“Are you going to give up the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Yes.”

Mu Lingxi nodded.

Zhang Ruochen went to touch Mu Lingxi’s hair a bit and said, “I know what you’re thinking. Phoenix Nest is indeed very dangerous, but I told you that I’d help you get the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix.”

Zhang Ruochen gathered with Bu Ji and Su Qingling and said, “You guys have stayed around Phoenix Nest for a long time now. Can you tell me about the situation here?”

Su Qingling was obviously trying to take precautions against Luosha Princess. She then opened a layer of saint soul domain and asked, “Is she really the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine from Great Devil Ten Square Field?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I don’t know, but she’s extremely powerful. Definitely at heir level.”

Su Qingling stopped asking about Luosha Princess. “Phoenix Nest is situated at the left side of Whale River, and it’s surrounded by ninety-nine saint mountains. There were great dangers in each saint mountain. Some absolute saints trespassed on one of the thirty-three saint mountains at the border, and he was burned to the ground by the fire gushing from underground.

“And now, many Luosha marquises are guarding the thirty-three saint mountains at the periphery. Once a monk from Shatuo Seven Fields reaches a point that’s a thousand miles away, he or she will be killed instantly.”

Su Qingling drew the pictures of the thirty-three saint mountains.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, “Even the thirty-three saint mountains at the periphery are that hazardous?”

“That’s right. Luosha great beings seem to have broken part of the boundary of those thirty-three saint mountains,” Su Qingling said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “There’re thirty-three saint mountains at the periphery, which means there’re thirty-three roads to Phoenix Nest. No matter how powerful the Luosha race is, there’s no way they can guard all the roads.”

“That’s the crucial point.”

Su Qingling drew the positions and the terrain of those thirty-three mountains. And then, she pointed at the top of a saint mountain. “This is where the merits record wall is.”

“The merits record wall is at the top of one of the thirty-three saint mountains?” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

Su Qingling nodded and said, “This is where Saint Arrow Marquis is, and this is the road to the merits record wall. To the monks from Shatuo Seven Fields, the merits record wall is more valuable than the Phoenix Nest.”

“Which means Luosha race only seals one road to the merits record wall, and there’re thirty-two other choices?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Bu Ji shook his head and said, “All of them are extremely dangerous. It’s not an easy task to get in.”

Zhang Ruochen pinched his chin and said, “Wait for me here. I’ll go check the merits wall and the other thirty-two saint roads.”

Zhang Ruochen then released a space domain, performed spatial twist and disappeared.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen pulled back his forces as he flew to a hundred thousand feet high.

He did see ninety-nine ancient saint mountains, and each of them was enormous and mysteriously spectacular.

There were saint mountains in the periphery, middle and the inner areas. Each layer had thirty-three mountains, and at the center of the ninety-nine mountains, light emanated that was half blue and half crimson. It looked like an enormous nest.

The ninety-nine saint mountains were connected with each other, and they also looked like a nest.

Zhang Ruochen looked to a saint mountain in the south in the end. That saint mountain was more than thirty thousand feet tall.

The Merits Record Wall was put at the top of that saint mountain, giving off gleaming light.

There's a merits record wall in each of the four world fragments. If I can get one of them, then Guanghan Field will have a much higher chance of getting to first place on the Saints Merits Rank, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The best way to get to first place on the Saints Merits Rank was to get all the four merits record walls.

If he did so, Zhang Ruochen would definitely be encircled by the monks from the other six fields, which would render him helpless.

Zhang Ruochen looked in another direction and pointed while pondering the way to get in. "It seems I can also get to the merits record wall through here..."

Zhang Ruochen confirmed that it was possible to get to the Merits Record Wall through another saint mountain, but it was going to take a longer time, and nobody knew what kind of dangers they might run into.

Zhang Ruochen walked back and told everyone about it.

"Guys, I just heard from a saint from Guanghan Field that an army of Luosha marquises has destroyed the merits record wall in the west," Su Qingling said.

Whoosh!

A signal flare fell into the hands of Bu Ji.



Bu Ji was also upset by the message on it. He said, "It's a message from the north that an army of Luosha marquises has destroyed the merits record wall in the northern field."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help clenching his fist.

Soon, Qing Mo also received a signal flare. She said, "Sister Danqing, I've got the news from the east that its merits record wall was also destroyed, and the Luosha marquises are heading in this direction."

Su Qingling realized that something strange was going on. She whispered to herself, "The merits record wall of three world fragments have been destroyed by the Luosha race. Why did they do that? Where did all the Luosha marquises come from?"

Bu Ji said, "There's no use collecting all the Luosha blood and fragmented souls without a merits record wall, as we can't even trade them for merits. There's only one merits record wall left. How great would it be if we could seize it for ourselves?"

Zhang Ruochen looked to the ninety-nine saint mountains and said, "Did those Luosha armies destroy the three merits record walls on purpose to force all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields to come here?"

Luosha Princess's eyes glinted and she glanced at Zhang Ruochen with a weird expression.

Zhang Ruochen had a lot going on in his mind, so he didn't notice the weird look on Luosha Princess's face. He closed his eyes, shook his head and said, "The most important thing now is to get the last merits record wall. I've found another way, and perhaps we can get to the saint mountain where the merits record wall is. Who wants to follow me there?"

# Chapter 1447 - Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion

Chapter 1447: Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mu Lingxi, Luosha Princess, Qing Mo, Su Qingling, and Bu Ji all followed Zhang Ruochen toward the 99 saint mountains. An ancient mountain loomed before them. It was shaped like a turtle and radiated with a strong icy aura.

Bu Ji gazed up at the snow that kept falling from the sky. It felt strange. After all, another mountain was spewing fire hundreds of miles away.

One cold and one hot, they were unpredictable.

“Will we really be able to reach the merits record wall by entering this saint mountain?” Bu Ji asked.

“If we want to know the answer, we have to enter the mountain first.”

Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, Zhang Ruochen walked at the front.

He released his Spiritual Power and kept alert, wary of any unknown dangers.

The ancient saint mountain was shrouded by a mysterious power. The further they went, the more densely packed the rules were. An invisible force also fell upon them, making their pressure greater and greater.

They'd only gone 30 miles when the gravity that Zhang Ruochen felt was ten times heavier than the outside world.

No cultivator dared to lower their guard. They followed Zhang Ruochen closely, going forward in the ice and snow.

Su Qingling pointed somewhere halfway up the mountain and cried out, “Look, there’s an ice person.”

Everyone stopped and followed Su Qingling’s finger.

The ice person was more than 50 miles away from them. However, with a Saint’s eyesight, they could see the figure’s features clearly even with the levels of icy Qi.

It was a short and stooped elder in dazzling battle clothing. Ice sealed his entire body. He stood there without moving.

Bu Ji’s eyes gleamed. “That’s a sect leader from a major Hell Blade Field sect. His name is Qiu Wanli. His cultivation reached the middle of the Absolute Saint Realm. I saw him once not too long ago in Zuling Field. We almost got into a fight. I didn’t think that he’d already died in this ice saint mountain.”

“Are you sure that’s Qiu Wanli?”

“Yes.”

Bu Ji nodded firmly.

Su Qingling had heard Qiu Wanli’s name before. She knew he was a top fighter from Hell Blade Field. Even such a powerful figure had died on this mountain. It was honestly hard to keep optimistic.

“Qiu Wanli must not have entered the mountain alone,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It’s possible that the cultivators of Hell Blade Field have also figured out how to reach the merits record wall from here.”

Su Qingling nodded. “I heard long ago that White-robed Fang Yi, Heir of Hell Blade Field, is at the Whale River Territory. But no cultivator has seen him. He might have already entered the saint mountain from here. Everyone, we must be more careful. Fang Yi is an extremely scary person. Once we find him, we must avoid him.”

Hearing this, Princess Luosha let out a scornful laugh.

Su Qingling was clearly annoyed with Princess Luosha. She scoffed and activated her saint soul territory. Instantly, 72 Holy Qi halos appeared, wrapping around her. She protected herself first.

Luosha Princess looked over at Zhang Ruochen. “There’s a group of human Saints following us. Should we take care of them first?”

Zhang Ruochen glanced back and shook his head. “Since they want to follow, just let them follow!”

Sword Saint Jiuyou and his three disciples were following Zhang Ruochen’s group. They were around ten miles apart.

Wang Su’s figure appeared amidst the white snow. His eyes hardened. “Master, Zhang Ruochen and that demoness seem to have discovered us.”

“With their cultivation, it would be even stranger if they didn’t discover us. Since they haven’t attacked, we’ll continue to follow.” Sword Saint Jiuyou stepped forward and continued on.

About two hours later, Zhang Ruochen’s group had walked more than 50 miles. They reached the location of the ice man.

“Hey, where did Qiu Wanli’s corpse go? It was here earlier. How come it disappeared suddenly?”

Qing Mo blinked and looked around.

Even Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha had serious expressions. They stood in place and manipulated Spiritual Power, tentatively searching the space.

It was clear that they’d already perceived that huge danger was approaching.

Crackle, crackle.

A soft sound came from under the piled snow. It was like an unknown creature was grinding its teeth.

That sound kept changing position with incredible speed. Suddenly, it appeared under Bu Ji’s feet. Then white pincers poked out of the snow underfoot.

At the same time, a sword clanged. Zhang Ruochen stabbed right under Bu Ji's feet.

Crack.

Red blood poured out of the buildup of snow.

Zhang Ruochen pulled the Abyss Ancient Sword out again. The blade had pierced through a white scorpion. It was probably the size of a basin. The two sharp pincers were one meter long.

The white scorpion contained immense power. Densely-packed light flowed across the shell. It struggled violently while letting out deafening screams. The bursts of soundwaves hurt their eardrums.

Mu Lingxi and Qing Mo had the lowest cultivation. Attacked by the soundwaves, blood flowed out of their ears. They almost fainted and fell to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen huffed coldly. He shook his arm and cut the white scorpion in half.

Luosha Princess rolled her eyes. "I said before that the weak aren't qualified to befriend the strong. They'll only be deadweight. Zhang Ruochen, let them go back. The two of us will go to the merits record wall."

Su Qingling ground her teeth in anger. The saint sword in her hands trembled. She probably would've stabbed Luosha Princess if her abilities weren't so terrifying.

"What? You don't think so?" Luosha Princess said without holding back. "At least three of you would've died if Zhang Ruochen hadn't been here. What are you if you're not weak? What are you if you're not deadweight?"

"Who hasn't developed from a weak person?" Zhang Ruochen said indifferently. "Compared to Saint Kings, which one of us isn't weak?"

He walked to the corpse of the white scorpion and lifted the shell with his sword tip. After searching, he furrowed his brows. "Strange. This scorpion is so strong, but how come there's no saint source?"

“That’s the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion.”

Su Qingling was very knowledgeable and knew the white scorpion’s background. She continued, “In legends, the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion was born from the Pluto Winter Water. They can cultivate the Power of Pluto Ice inside their bodies. Mature scorpions are very strong and can even fight with half-step Saint Kings.”

Saint Kings mainly cultivated the Rules of Saintly Way, so it was hard to really define different levels. Usually, one needed a special tool to test a Saint King’s level.

In Kunlun’s Field, there was the Emperor Divine Ruler.

In the Heaven World, people used the Nine Steps to the Sky Path to measure a Saint King’s level. Thus, it divided Saint Kings into nine levels. Each step they could take on the path was one level.

The Saint King’s first step, second step, third step...

The ninth step was the peak level. If a cultivator could take steps on the path, it was clear that they’d entered the Supreme Saint Realm. They could call themselves an emperor in a major world.

As for half-step Saint Kings, they weren’t true Saint Kings because their Rules of Saintly Way weren’t strong enough. They were above the Saints but not at the Saint King Realm yet.

Even so, half-step Saint Kings were still much stronger than Absolute Saints.

The scorpion that Zhang Ruochen had killed wasn’t mature yet. It hadn’t reached the half-step Saint King level yet.

“Look, Wan Qiuli’s head is inside the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion,” Bu Ji said. “It hasn’t been digested fully yet.”

There was half of a bloody head inside the scorpion’s corpse.

Zhang Ruochen continued staring at the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion’s corpse. He squatted down and extended a finger, placing it on the white shell. “There’s the aura of Ning True Saint Dew inside its body. Also... It must ingest Ning True

Saint Dew frequently. Could it be that a great amount of dew is hidden somewhere in this mountain?”

“That’s not impossible,” Luosha Princess said. “You should know that a near-god is buried in the 99 saint mountains. Every mountain in the outside must contain a treasure. However, opportunities and danger exist together. The more treasures there are, the more dangerous it is.”

Right now, Zhang Ruochen had around 2,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. It wasn’t enough to reach the middle of the True Saint Realm. Thus, if there really were large amounts of Ning True Saint Dew in this mountain, it would definitely be tempting for him.

The others’ eyes all blazed as well. If they could receive large amounts of Ning True Saint Dew, they would definitely have breakthroughs quickly. By then, would Luosha Princess still mock them for being weak?

Face red, Bu Ji said impatiently, “Then what are we still waiting for? Let’s hurry and go. The Saints of the Hell Blade Field may be ahead of us. If we’re late, there won’t be any Ning True Saint Dew left for us.”

The nine-headed bird behind Luosha Princess also let out strange cries. It seemed to want the Ning True Saint Dew too. That bird was only in the middle of the Absolute Saint Realm and still had a lot of room for improvement.

Everyone picked up their pace. They continued forward and soon entered the heart of the saint mountain. They were halfway up.

The gravity was even stronger here—100 times higher than the outside world. Even with their strong cultivation, they still felt a bit of pressure.

Here, they found the corpse of an adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion. It was very large—at least four or five times larger than the one they had encountered earlier.

“An adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion is able to fight with a half-step Saint King. Whoever killed it must have been an abominable figure.” Mu Lingxi gasped.

Zhang Ruochen reached out to check the scorpion's injuries.

A beam of Broadsword Qi spread from the injury. It sliced Zhang Ruochen's finger, leaving a shallow cut.

"Such strong Qi. Even the remnant power can cut through my physical defense."

Zhang Ruochen was shocked inwardly. Then he stood up and looked forward, saying to everyone, "This adult scorpion was killed an hour ago. We're already very close to the cultivators of Hell Blade Field.

"Also, I discovered even heavier Ning True Saint Dew aura in this adult scorpion. It's evident that there may really be a large amount of dew in this mountain."



# Chapter 1448 - The Heir of Hell Blade Field

Chapter 1448: The Heir of Hell Blade Field

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was snowing and the weather was cold. It was so cold that the space was being frozen.

Cold Qi gushed out of a canyon that was ten feet wide, changing the weather and rules of heaven and earth around it.

The closer a saint got to the canyon, the colder he would feel as if his veins were about to freeze.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the thick ice wall at the canyon.

The Nine-headed Blue Bird and Bu Ji weren't intimidated at all. They used their saint soul domains to protect their bodies, and then, they rushed toward the canyon.

“Wait!” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

The bird and the person who had already entered the canyon both stopped. Bu Ji said in a rush, “Why wait? If we don't hurry up, those monks from Hell Blade Field will get all the good things.”

Zhang Ruochen walked to the ice wall.

Princess Luosha was standing behind Zhang Ruochen, and her eyes glinted with crimson light. After seeing what was on the ice wall, she was immediately dazed.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen pressed forward, and fiery threads gushed out, dispelling the coldness.

Soon, the ice wall was melted, revealing the stones.

There were strange inscriptions on the mountain, and each trace of the inscriptions was abstruse. There was saint light flowing on the inscriptions, and it seemed that they'd covered the entire saint mountain.

“Supreme saint inscriptions... And they're slaying inscriptions...”

Su Qingling's face paled, and she couldn't help taking two steps back.

There were different kinds of supreme saint inscriptions, and slaying inscriptions were the most horrifying ones.

The Nine-headed Blue Bird and Bu Ji both knew how terrifying slaying supreme saint inscriptions were, so they immediately stepped back.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen stopped them in time, otherwise, they would've been killed before they could even realize it.

Princess Luosha couldn't help respecting Zhang Ruochen a bit more, as not even she had realized the supreme saint inscriptions underground.

It wasn't because Princess Luosha was less smart than Zhang Ruochen, but that this kind of ability could only be cultivated by being in danger all the time.

Princess Luosha grew up in heaven compared to Zhang Ruochen, which was why no matter how intelligent and gifted she was, she was still no comparison to Zhang Ruochen to some extent, even if she managed to destroy a large world in thirty years.

Zhang Ruochen sensed some feeble saint Qi ripples. He immediately turned around and looked into the distance at the snow.

He saw a group of monks who were carrying saint swords walk out of the snow, and there were more than one hundred of them. All of them were engulfed in powerful saint might.

At the front was the heir of Hell Blade Field, Fang Yi, who was wearing a spotless cape. He had black hair and a

handsome face with a white star print on his forehead giving out light as shiny as stars.

The monks who came with Fang Yi were all the top-tier monks from Hell Blade Field. Even the weakest were at the Heaven Pass Realm, so even first-step saint kings needed to be careful of them.

“Fang Yi.”

Su Qingling recognized the guy at the front, and she was immediately alerted. She summoned two saint swords that were ten thousand pattern saint weapons.

Fang Yi ignored Su Qingling while staring at the mountain. He smiled. “They’re slaying supreme saint inscriptions. No wonder Tianji Compass detected the dangers.”

Fang Yi was holding a transparent compass in his hand, and the light coming out of the compass covered all the saints from Hell Blade Field.

Because of Tianji Compass, Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha didn’t detect them.

The saints from Hell Blade Field didn’t even consider Zhang Ruochen and the others a match. They all smiled and started to butter up their heir.

“Lord heir is indeed incredible. We wouldn’t have noticed the grave dangers that are hidden. God knows what would have happened to us.” A beautiful true saint looked at Fang Yi with admiration.

“Lord heir has Tianji Compass which can help dodge the dangers. This is way more brilliant than that Princess Luosha.”

“Princess Luosha conquered Zuling Field only because she led a large group of Luosha monks. She’s probably not that powerful herself,” an absolute saint with golden hair said.

All the saints from Hell Blade Field had heard about Princess Luosha before, but none of them had actually seen her.

Princess Luosha wasn’t irritated at all by their comments. Instead, she smiled gently.

All the saints from Hell Blade Field then looked to Su Qingling and Bu Ji.

They were all monks from Shatuo Heaven Domain, so many saints from Hell Blade Field knew about Su Qingling and Bu Ji, and they also knew that they had incredible status in Guanghan Field.

The absolute saint with golden hair was called Nie Shan. He walked out of the team of saints from Hell Blade Field and looked around at Zhang Ruochen and the others. He said, “Hello, friends from Guanghan Field. There should be lots of Ning True Saint Dew hidden deep in that canyon. If you help us get it out, we’ll be more than happy to share it.”

Bu Ji looked furious. He said, “What do you mean, Nie Shan? The slaying supreme saint inscriptions are horrifying. You want us to get the Ning True Saint Dew and give half to you?”

Su Qingling said, “Don’t you understand? They want us to explore the way to see whether we can survive or not. Even if we get the Ning True Saint Dew, they’ll take all of it.”

Nie Shan knew Su Qingling was the grandson of a supreme saint, and that Bu Ji was a disciple of a supreme saint, but he wasn’t afraid at all. He smiled. “You just made it incredibly awkward by pointing that out.”

Nie Shan was the only son of a supreme saint from Hell Blade Field, and he was just as talented as Su Qingling and Bu Ji, if not more so. What’s more, he was already an absolute saint, which made him much stronger than Su Qingling and Bu Ji.

Zhang Ruochen kept looking at Fang Yi, and he found that the heir from Hell Blade Field didn’t try to stop Nie Shan. Instead, he’d been observing the supreme saint inscriptions on the mountain the whole time.

There were seventeen absolute saints, thirty-nine true saints and seventy-five heaven pass saints, and in Kunlun’s Field, only The First Central Empire could gather so many great beings.

And this was only a part of Hell Blade Field’s power, and there were more of them coming to Whale River basin.

All the saints from Hell Blade Field were sneering, and they released a sense of killing.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji weren't afraid of them, but they also knew that they weren't able to defend themselves against those great beings, as they could be easily annihilated by their combined saint spells.

Nie Shan said, "The battle reflection will record everything that happened in Zuling's Field. As long as you get into the canyon and help us get Ning True Saint Dew, we'll definitely spare your lives."

Another absolute saint from Hell Blade Field said, "There's only one law on the Merits Battlefield: the law of nature. I suggest you bear it with more forbearance. You can probably survive by doing so."

The saints from Hell Blade Field were all very arrogant as they tried to force them to compromise.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji were both furious, and so were Mu Lingxi and Qing Mo. They both looked to Zhang Ruochen, and they would be willing to fight them to death even if they knew they were no match.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid of the saints from Hell Blade Field at all, but they were too close to supreme saint inscriptions. If they started a fight, they might trigger the supreme saint inscriptions, after which perhaps none of them could survive.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen didn't want to fight, so he wanted to tell them he was the priest to intimidate them, and he'd wait till they left the saint mountains to deal with them.

Just as he was about to reveal his identity, Princess Luosha stepped forward and said, "Merits Battlefield is indeed brutal. Well, I guess we have no choice but to inspect the canyon for them."

Princess Luosha sighed after saying that.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji both glared at Princess Luosha as they reckoned she didn't have any of the guts a great being was supposed to have.

On the contrary, Zhang Ruochen knew Princess Luosha well enough that she wouldn't just surrender to Hell Blade Field that easily, but he couldn't figure out what she had in mind.

Princess Luosha blinked at Zhang Ruochen and transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. "I've been following you the whole time. Leave this to me, okay?"

Zhang Ruochen squinted and started to ponder Princess Luosha's offer.

Su Qingling released a strong sense of fighting. She said, "We can't compromise. Let's fight them to the death, Zhang Ruochen. If we can't defeat them, we'll just trigger supreme saint inscriptions to kill them with us."

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Su Qingling's arm and walked toward the canyon. He said, "Let's go inspect the way for us."

Su Qingling was dazed, as she didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to surrender and didn't think that he was such a coward.

Bu Ji's eyes turned red, and he clenched his fists as he thought Zhang Ruochen was losing face for Guanghan Field and Moon Goddess.

Qing Mo and Mu Lingxi trusted Zhang Ruochen completely, so they followed him without any doubts or hesitation.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji hesitated for a long time, but eventually, they sighed and followed them.

All the saints from Hell Blade Field looked content.

Nie Shan said out loud on purpose, "That's the way. Know when you're defeated."

Both Su Qingling and Bu Ji were greatly upset by what he said. They glared at Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha who were walking at the front. They quickly followed them, as they wanted to question them.

# Chapter 1449 - She Is A Demon

Chapter 1449: She Is A Demon

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha's bodies hovered in the sky. Their feet were about a yard above the ground and they moved forward together.

Divine Fire Jingmie and Nanling Dragon Fire poured out of Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha respectively. The two types of fire were extremely terrifying, but they controlled it precisely. They used the fire only to melt the ice on either side of the gorge without activating the Supreme Saint runes.

While moving forward, Princess Luosha's demonic eyes shone with rings of dark red light. She was studying the carvings on the stone wall.

Zhang Ruochen guessed Princess Luosha's intentions. Using Spiritual Power for a telepathic message, he said, "A Saint won't be able to understand a Supreme Saint's mind world. A Saint won't be able to understand a Supreme Saint's carvings within a short period either."

Clearly, Princess Luosha prepared to use the Supreme Saint runes against the Saints of Hell Blade Field. However, to Zhang Ruochen, no matter how advanced a Saint was in runes, they wouldn't be able to control a Supreme Saint's runes.

Unless they spent decades studying the runes deeply.

In the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, Zhang Ruochen had been able to control the Supreme Saint rune formation only because he'd received the support of the Zhang Family

ancestors. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to succeed at all.

Under the mask, Princess Luosha's lips curled up. "Others can't do it, but it might not be impossible for me. Anyway, you don't have to do anything about Hell Blade Field. Leave it to me."

Zhang Ruochen saw great confidence in Princess Luosha. It seemed that everything was under her control.

Fine!

He'd like to see what kind of world-changing abilities she had.

Zhang Ruochen didn't waste time. He took out a treasure bottle and drank around 100 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. He activated a technique and started refining.

Whether it was the mysterious and advanced Luosha Princess or the vast Hell Blade Field, both gave Zhang Ruochen great pressure. This made him realize that he had to get stronger so he could solve problems without worry.

Su Qingling caught up. She appeared between Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha and demanded, "Aren't you the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, the Heir of the Great Devil Ten Square Field? You're one of the strongest figures from the Shatuo Heaven Territory. How could you be afraid of Fang Yi? I wonder about your true identity."

Princess Luosha looked very cold and arrogant. Su Qingling seemed to be an ignorant child in her eyes. Thus, she ignored Su Qingling and continued reading the Supreme Saint runes on the wall.

Su Qing hated Princess Luosha's loftiness the most. Light flooded out of her saint sword. It was like she would stab forward and test if Princess Luosha really was as strong as the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, testing her true identity.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Su Qingling's wrist. "Don't disturb her. Give her some time."

Su Qingling was very unhappy with Zhang Ruochen and even a bit disappointed. "Priest, Guanghan Field may be weaker



than Hell Blade Field, but we don't have to bow down to them either. Couldn't you see that those guys from Hell Blade Field are just driving us away so we can die for them?"

She called Zhang Ruochen "Priest." It was clear that she was already putting distance between them. She no longer saw him as a trustworthy friend and someone she looked up to.

Bu Ji's expression was also cold. "You're the Priest. We will listen to your orders, but your actions are quite disappointing."

If they were strangers, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't feel like saying anything.

However, they were the first two cultivators that Zhang Ruochen had met in the Heaven World who weren't too bad. Even if they weren't real friends, they were quite close.

"Did you only learn to be impulsive from Supreme Saint Manjian and Jiuling?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "You're at the True Saint Realm, at least. You have to think before acting."

"But this is too unbearable," Bu Ji said. "We'll die anyway, so why don't we choose a more heroic death?"

"Who said we'll die anyway?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"With our cultivation, we can't fend off fatal Supreme Saint runes," Su Qingling said. "What will happen after coming in, other than dying?"

"Wait a bit before making a conclusion."

Su Qingling and Bu Ji exchanged glances. They both had doubtful expressions.

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm and not at all like he was acting passively. Did he have a hidden trick?

After traveling seven or eight miles timidly, the icy current grew stronger. The group could only circulate the Holy Qi within them to fend off the cold.

Princess Luosha walked at the fore. She activated a Supreme Saint rune. Instantly, dense rune prints appeared all over the stone walls.

Rustle, rustle.

The icy Qi surged wildly like a flood, releasing terrible destructive power.

A Saint couldn't fend off the Supreme Saint runes' horrible power at all.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly released a spatial domain. He cast the Spatial Twist with all his might, moving the incoming icy Qi elsewhere.

At the same time, Princess Luosha also used the Spatial Twist against the power from the runes.

They'd only activated one Supreme Saint rune, so the burst of power only lasted for three breaths before calming down.

Now, Su Qingling and Bu Ji both had shocked expressions. "You're both spatial cultivators?"

"Any problems?" Princess Luosha rolled her eyes at them.

"Since you're both spatial cultivators," Su Qingling said. "There's even less need to fear the Hell Blade Field Saints. Why did you give in to them?"

"Who told you that I gave in?" Princess Luosha asked.

"Did you not? Earlier, we'd only activated one rune and we almost died. It'll only get more dangerous as we go forward. Even if you're spatial cultivators, you might not be able to block it."

Princess Luosha smiled. "I purposely activated that Supreme Saint rune just then. I wanted to test a hypothesis I had. I also wanted to test their strength."

Su Qingling finally realized that this mysterious woman was definitely a dangerous figure. "What exactly do you want to do?" she asked.

"Nothing. Next, we'll wait here." Princess Luosha gazed toward the gorge's entrance. Squinting, she murmured to herself, "The Saints of Hell Blade Field should have entered too, right?"

...

Outside the gorge, the Hell Blade Field Saints all sensed the destructive force from the activated Supreme Saint rune.

Nie Shan chuckled. “The Guanghai Field Saints must have died in there. Next, it’s time for us to explore that gorge personally.”

An Absolute Saint elder was a bit moved. “The Supreme Saint runes are frightening. This gorge is basically a land of death.”

“What are you afraid of? The Heir has the Heavenly Compass and will know dangers beforehand. We can avoid the Supreme Saint rune attacks as long as we follow in his steps.”

Fang Yi was indeed a top genius. He was strong physically and extraordinarily wise. He was probably one in a billion.

With his knowledge and the help of the Heavenly Compass, he actually figured out a pattern in the runes.

If he was given time, he was confident that he could move through the gorge.

“Let’s go.”

Holding the Heavenly Compass, Fang Yi stepped into the gorge first. The 100-some Hell Blade Field Saints followed him timidly.

Under Fang Yi’s guidance, they didn’t activate any Supreme Saint runes after going seven or eight miles. The Hell Blade Field Saints gained more confidence. Their hearts were filled with respect for Fang Yi.

Even the Supreme Saint runes weren’t too difficult for the Heir.

Suddenly, Fang Yi stopped. His eyes trained tightly on the Heavenly Compass. He discovered that the needle on the disc was trembling violently.

The harder it trembled, the bigger the danger.

Fang Yi had never seen the needle tremble so greatly before. “Oh, no!” he cried. “Retreat.”

The Hell Blade Field Saints didn’t know what had happened. But if the Heir became this nervous, they must’ve run into

unprecedented danger.

Whoosh!

Rings of small ripples appeared in the air. Princess Luosha's alluring figure walked out of the ripples. Smiling, she said, "Retreat? To where?"

Next, the Monument Shield embedded in the ice wall flew out.

The spatial crystal stone on the shield flashed. Then Zhang Ruochen, Qing Mo, Mu Lingxi, Bu Ji, Su Qingling, and the nine-headed bird walked out, blocking their exit.

Fang Yi's eyes narrowed. Staring at Princess Luosha and Zhang Ruochen, he said, "Spatial cultivators."

That moment, the Hell Blade Field Saints realized they'd miscalculated. Two spatial cultivators had actually appeared suddenly.

"You cultivators still have some value," Princess Luosha said. "It's a waste to kill you directly. How about... You test the path before us. I'll spare whoever can survive."

"What are you saying? You want us to walk to our deaths? Do you even know your place?"

Nie Shan couldn't stand this. Huffing coldly, he picked up his golden sword and cut down with a long trail of light.

He was only in the middle of the Absolute Saint Realm, but his power was comparable to a half-step Saint King.

"The one who doesn't know their place is you."

Princess Luosha extended two fingers and pointed at the stone wall, activating a Supreme Saint rune.

The icy Qi inside the gorge instantly started shaking violently. The rune's destructive force exploded, forming many whirlpools. They swept toward the Hell Blade Field Saints.

Boom.

Nie Shan was the first to get swept into the vortex. He only lasted for the span of a breath. Then all his defensive runes

were shattered. His body exploded, turning into a cloud of blood.

Someone comparable to a half-step Saint King was like an ant before Princess Luosha. She killed him easily.

Boom, boom.

The Hell Blade Field Saints kept crying out in pain.

In the span of three short breaths, more than 30 Saints with advanced cultivations were killed. They were defenseless against the Supreme Saint runes.

Seeing this, Su Qingling and Bu Ji both felt chills. They finally realized just how terrifying Princess Luosha was.

She was practically a demon.

# Chapter 1450 - Subdued But Not Subdued

Chapter 1450: Subdued But Not Subdued

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Even the weakest saints who entered the canyon had the cultivation of Heaven Pass Realm. However, more than thirty of them died instantly, which greatly scared the saints who were still alive.

Saints' lives were nothing here.

The slaying power of the supreme saint inscriptions dissipated.

The true saints and absolute saints all stepped back as their hearts were pounding fiercely. They would've run out if it weren't for Fang Yi.

Fang Yi was calm the whole time. He looked to Princess Luosha and said, "I can't think of any other female saint from Shatuo Heaven Domain stronger than you except Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine."

"Observant," Princess Luosha said.

Fang Yi said, "Even if you're indeed Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, it's no easy task to subdue me. If we really are going to fight, we'll all be killed."

"Really? Even if you trigger the supreme saint inscriptions here, we have two space monks on our side, so we at least have a thirty percent chance of surviving. As for you guys, well, you'll all die for sure."

Princess Luosha saw through Fang Yi, so she spoke calmly.

The saints from Hell Blade Field didn't expect the tables to turn this quickly. They used to be hunters, but now they were prey.

They all looked to Fang Yi as they wanted to know what decision their lord heir would make.

Fang Yi wouldn't surrender that easily. He pinched his hand into a claw shape, and a white dagger that was an inch long appeared. It was a small and delicate dagger with ten thousand inscriptions flowing on it.

Princess Luosha felt that Fang Yi was about to fight to the death, so she moved her finger toward a supreme saint inscription on the wall at the right.

Before the supreme saint inscription was triggered, the canyon started to shake.

Fang Yi frowned and retracted the saint Qi from his hand behind his back and said, "Well, there's nothing shameful in compromising with two space monks. Can I ask the name of the other space monk?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Zhang Ruochen."

"I see. You're the priest of Guanghan Field. No wonder."

Fang Yi stared at Zhang Ruochen and looked weird. He then turned around and walked deep into the canyon with the saints from Hell Blade Field.

Su Qingling and Bu Ji couldn't admire Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha more as they managed to force Fang Yi to surrender. Perhaps they were the only two from the Shatuo Seven Fields who were capable of doing so.

Bu Ji was very frank. He said, "Sorry, brother Zhang. I didn't know your guys' delicate plan, so I offended you. Please pardon my rudeness."

Su Qingling also felt sorry, but she didn't voice it.

However, they trusted Zhang Ruochen way more than before after this. They were just acquaintances in the past, but now, their bond became stronger.

Su Qingling said, "Supreme saints will never easily be subdued by people. Fang Yi is a talent who has the heart of a supreme saint, so there's no way he would just surrender that easily. He might be thinking of a way to fight back."

"It'll also depend on whether he's strong enough to fight back or not." Princess Luosha stood still with pride.

The monks from Hell Blade Field were all indignant.

"Can't believe the priest from Guanghan Field teamed up with Princess Luosha to fight Hell Blade Field. He must be punished for that."

"Damn it. He forced the saints from Hell Blade Field to explore the way for them. Zhang Ruochen has to die."

"Rest assured. Our heir is an incredible force to be reckoned with. How would he be checked by others. Nobody can say for sure who wins in the end."

...

As for the monks from Kunlun's Field, they were all cheering.

The saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field had killed many saints from Kunlun's Field, so they all rejoiced after seeing the heir from Hell Blade Field crushed.

"Zhang Ruochen's so wonderful. He forced the heir from Hell Blade Field to follow him and Prince Luosha. This is admirable."

"Unfortunately, Princess Luosha is so wicked. Zhang Ruochen might not be able to defeat her. I'm really keen to see which one of them is going to have the ultimate victory."

...

Fang Yi walked forward, holding the Tianji Compass.

The deeper they went in the canyon, the denser the supreme saint inscriptions were. Even the Tianji Compass wasn't able to detect all the dangers, so he resorted to asking saints to inspect them.

Which meant they were sacrificing lives.



Under the pressure of Princess Luosha, one saint after another was sent out.

Every saint who got sent out was only able to walk around a hundred feet, or a couple hundred feet, after which they would trigger supreme saint inscriptions, and they were all killed.

After the death of the thirteenth saint, the faces of saints from Hell Blade Field all paled, and even Fang Yi looked very upset.

They were like animals who were being driven by Princess Luosha, and there was nothing they could do about it.

Fang Yi took a deep breath, and he tried to stand as straight as possible. He said, "Denser supreme saint inscriptions means we're getting closer to the center of the saint mountains."

And then, he sent two more heaven pass saints to explore the way, and after one of them died, the other one walked into a patch of white mist and yelled with exhilaration, "A vast space! So much Ning True Saint Dew."

The saints from Hell Blade Field were all ecstatic.

Fang Yi's eyes glinted coldly, and he rushed into the white mist as quickly as possible, followed by the saints from Hell Blade Field.

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha gave each other a look and performed spatial move, catching up with the saints from Hell Blade Field.

Behind the white mist was an enormous space where there were countless light spots floating, which looked like a small universe where stars were shining.

The light spots weren't stars. They were drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

There was a 'moon' above their heads which gave off terrific saint power. Ning True Saint Dew fell from that 'moon.'

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha fell after getting into the space, and they could see the ripples on the water.

"Pluto Winter Water."

Zhang Ruochen was dazed.

Pluto Winter Water was called 'Intensely Cold Water' and could kill even saints if they fell in. A Luan and a phoenix emerged under his feet, and he surged.

Princess Luosha was just as reflexive as Zhang Ruochen. Circles of saint light spread from her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, which made her body lighter than a feather.

"You two are going to die here today."

Fang Yi stood above Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, and the star on his forehead gleamed, making him look like a God standing in the universe.

Whoosh!

A dagger that was only one inch long rushed out of Fang Yi's hand, and it flew toward Zhang Ruochen a hundred times faster than sound.

Fang Yi knew Zhang Ruochen was the priest of Guanghan Field, and that he had a Godly Weapon, so he reckoned he was the greater threat. He planned to kill him first.

Bang!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen drew the Abyss Ancient Sword and warded off the attack.

When the blade and the dagger clashed, Zhang Ruochen felt as if he was being hit by an iron mountain, and he couldn't help bouncing back.

The dagger turned around and flew toward Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword to hit the dagger again.

Saint power waves spread and knocked away all the Nine True Saint Dew floating in the sky.

Bang Bang!

The dagger hit twelve times in an instant, and each hit would have been fatal, yet Zhang Ruochen managed to block them all.

There were no supreme saint inscriptions in this space, so Princess Luosha had to mobilize Nanling Dragon Fire and form a giant fiery dragon to fight Fang Yi.

Howl!

The giant fiery dragon flew out, which gave Fang Yi great pressure, so he couldn't concentrate on fighting Zhang Ruochen anymore. He had to fight Princess Luosha first.

Zhang Ruochen didn't balance himself until Fang Yi took his dagger back. The forces coming out of the dagger messed up his blood Qi.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at his right arm, and he saw a shallow dagger scar.

“An heir of a large field indeed. Fang Yi is definitely an extraordinarily powerful person.”

Although Fang Yi had injured him with the element of surprise and wasn't prepared enough to handle his constant attacks, he was still at least as powerful as Zhang Ruochen, as he had successfully wounded him.

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, and the others had almost entered the space and met with Zhang Ruochen.

They looked to Fang Yi and Princess Luosha to watch the fight among the most powerful saints.

It was greatly beneficial for them to watch a battle like that.

There was some saintly way power only talents like Fang Yi and Princess Luosha were able to comprehend, and they would no doubt use that kind of saintly way power during the fight. If they could also comprehend it, they might be able to reach that level in the future.

This wasn't a drill. It was a fight for life or death.

# Chapter 1451 - Rules Of Truth

Chapter 1451: Rules Of Truth

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen took out the Buddha's sarira, holding it in his left hand. Then thousands of golden Buddhist words appeared. They formed a spherical golden shield that protected Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, and the others.

The Hell Blade Field Saints had all retreated into the distance. Six Ten-thousand-pattern weapons flew up amongst them, radiating with six rings of holy light.

Inside the central area, Fang Yi and the Princess Luosha stood in the air. Their saintly auras grew even stronger.

A huge white figure appeared behind Fang Yi. It was more than 100 times taller than his true form.

"True Shadow," he uttered softly.

A white beam of light flew out of the huge white figure's forehead.

The next moment, the entire dark space started shaking. Waves of energy rippled out.

Fang Yi's True Shadow was formed by the most extreme Rules of Saintly Way. It could harmonize with the world and manipulate the power of the world to a certain extent.

Su Qingling, Bu Ji, and Qing Mo were all top geniuses. But seeing Fang Yi's attack, their expressions changed.

Fang Yi could probably kill them with just this one strike.

Princess Luosha was like a beautiful fairy. She stood under the white giant. A blue feather appeared between her two fingers.

Whoosh!

The feather waved softly like a fan.

Suddenly, that sharp beam of light scattered. It transformed into hundreds of Qi currents and flew in all directions. At the same time, thousands of fireballs flew out of the blue feather. They consolidated into 12 flame dragons in the sky.

Roar!

Those huge fire dragons were formed by Nanling Dragon Fire. They flew around Fang Yi, tangling together into a hundred-foot-wide fireball.

Looking on from afar, it was like Fang Yi had gotten swallowed by the 12 dragons.

The Princess Luosha was very decisive. She used the Spatial Move and appeared near the fireball. Forming a print technique with both hands, she pressed down on the inside of the fireball. She didn't give Fang Yi any space.

The palm print grew bigger and bigger. The fire Qi in the palm power grew stronger too.

The Hell Blade Field Saints were confident in Fang Yi, but they still grew worried and nervous now. After all, the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was a reputable strong figure too.

“Break!”

Fang Yi roared to the sky inside the fireball. Then an overwhelming force flew out of the White Micro Star in his forehead. It crashed out like a tidal wave.

The 12 dragons formed by Nanling Dragon Fire were actually shattered by this force. They turned into palm-sized flames.

Princess Luosha wasn't forced back. Instead, she got closer and closer to Fang Yi while casting a fiery palm print.

Ten feet, nine feet, eight feet...

Huge booms sounded in Fang Yi's ears. It was like space was collapsing.

Five feet, four feet...

...

Fang Yi opened his eyes wide. Brilliant light shot out of his eyes. The huge white figure hovering behind him turned into a white wheel. It combined with the power of the White Micro Star and attacked Princess Luosha.

Boom.

The white wheel crashed against the fiery palm.

Instantly, the cultivators in the dark space flew backward.

Even someone as strong as Princess Luosha took four steps back before steadying herself.

Fang Yi took 67 steps. The Holy Qi within him went wild and his face alternated between pale and dark. He seemed to have gotten internal injuries.

“Even with the White Micro Star and True Shadow, I'm still at a disadvantage. How can the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine be so strong?”

The White Micro Star on Fang Yi's forehead wasn't only a mark. It was a real planet.

In fact, it was the divine planet of an ancient god.

Even though that god had died long ago and the star's soul had dissipated, it still contained extremely terrifying power.

Fang Yi had spent close to 30 years to refine the planet into his body. This process had been very difficult and dangerous.

He'd thought that he would be undefeatable in his realm with this divine star. If not, he would at least be in the strongest group. He didn't expect to meet a strong enemy like Princess Luosha so quickly. His competitive heart was actually shaken.

Princess Luosha wasn't calm inside either.

Since childhood, she'd fought with countless top talents. However, there weren't many who would take three of her hits

without dying.

“You could actually refine a divine star into your body. Your abilities are beyond my imagination.”

Princess Luosha’s demonic eyes radiated with dark red light.

Fang Yi met Princess Luosha’s eyes. Then his eyes grew dazed and even his body started swaying.

That moment, Princess Luosha sent out her blue feather. It flew to Fang Yi’s forehead like a blue streak.

The Saints of Hell Blade Field all cursed this demoness inside. They attacked her with their saint weapons, trying to stop the feather.

However, the feather was too fast. It reached Fang Yi almost instantly.

Just as Fang Yi’s head was about to be pierced, his Heavenly Compass started shaking violently. Nine white halos pulsed out consecutively.

The blue feather crashed against the nine halos, producing nine explosive booms.

Hearing the boom, Fang Yi woke up with a start. Cold sweat poured down his back. Producing extremely penetrative force, he flew toward Princess Luosha.

At the same time, Fang Yi pressed forward. A mysterious force was applied to the flying sword. This increased the sword’s light and speed. It was more than three times stronger now.

“How is this possible... What power is this...”

Zhang Ruochen found it unbelievable. He didn’t understand how Fang Yi’s sword suddenly grew so much stronger.

Su Qingling gasped too. Her expression hardened. “It must be the legendary... Rules of Truth.”

“The Way of Truth, one of the nine ancient ways?” Zhang Ruochen was even more shocked now.

“I only heard Grandfather mention it before,” Su Qingling said. “Cultivators who can understand the Way of Truth can manipulate the Rules of Truth. When it’s applied to their martial techniques and saint spells, they’ll become multiple times stronger. They can kill a strong cultivator at their level with only one strike.”

“The ancient ways are indeed terrifying,” Bu Ji said.

Su Qingling continued. “I heard that if you want to understand the Way of Truth, you must cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace. Every decade, there are three spots for Guanghan Field. These three must be chosen from Absolute Saints.

“Two years ago, Wu Hao and two other Absolute Saints went to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace. Only he comprehended the Way of Truth. The other two Absolute Saints had no results.”

“It’s extraordinarily hard to comprehend the Way of Truth,” Bu Ji said. “Only people like Wu Hao and Fang Yi can succeed.”

Su Qingling nodded. “Cultivators who comprehend the Way of Truth are indeed stronger than the others. They’re basically undefeatable in the Saint Realm and can stir up a storm. But they can only manipulate some basic Rules of Truth to strengthen their attacks and defenses. They’re not true Truth Controllers.

“People who are truly Truth Controllers can activate the Truth Martial Deity Print and combine the Rules of Truth into their saint souls. People like that are known as the Heirs of Truth. They’re even stronger than Fang Yi and Wu Hao.”

“So you can’t comprehend the Rules of Truth without going to the Truth Godly Palace?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Well, no.” Su Qingling shook her head and said, “When people like Fang Yi and Wu Hao use the Rules of Truth, the rules also appear. Thus, you can comprehend them while observing their battles. Of course, it’s extremely difficult. Not even the typical genius can do it.”



Zhang Ruochen's eyes were glued to the flying sword. He was observing the Rules of Truth, but he also wanted to see if Princess Luosha could counter it.

Princess Luosha didn't use spatial power. Instead, she also used the Rules of Truth and pressed her hand down. The Ten Thousand Saints Blouse seemed to have thousands of saintly apparitions. They combined with the Rules of Truth.

Boom!

Both the sword and Fang Yi were sent flying.

Blood flowed out of Fang Yi's lips. He looked at Princess Luosha with incredulity. He'd thought that he would surely win, but he was still defeated in the end.

The opponent was too strong. This was his top enemy since becoming a cultivator.

"Retreat. Leave this place immediately."

Fang Yi knew that he had to escape today.

He could only live by running.

Otherwise, if the two spatial cultivators worked together and also had the Guanghan Field priest's divine weapon, the Hell Blade Field Saints would probably all die.

He flew out, charging down the tunnel that he'd come in through.

The Saints of Hell Blade Field had all witnessed Princess Luosha's terrible power. All terrified, they followed Fang Yi and scrambled out.

"Keep them."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were cold. After speaking, he sent out the Buddha's sarira. The Supreme Saint's origin force killed a True Saint.

At the same time, Princess Luosha used spatial power to stop Fang Yi.

The nine-headed bird, Bu Ji, Su Qingling, Mu Lingxi, and Qing Mo attacked too. Some followed Zhang Ruochen and

attacked the Saints of Hell Blade Field. Others stood in the distance and attacked the escaping Saints in the back with weapons.

Even when escaping, the Hell Blade Field Saints were still in organized formations. They didn't scatter like commoners. Zhang Ruochen couldn't kill them all, even after pursuing them. Instead, an even more intense fight erupted.

# Chapter 1452 - The Nest of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion

Chapter 1452: The Nest of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Boom!

Deafening sounds came from the intense fight.

Zhang Ruochen fought dozens of top-tier saints from Hell Blade Field, holding the Buddha Emperor sarira, yet he still had an advantage.

There were saints from Hell Blade Field dying every second, and they would fall into the Pluto Winter Water.

Just when both sides were at a stalemate, weird yelling came out of the Pluto Winter Water.

Dozens of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions swan out of the water and started to swallow the saint corpses floating in the water, and then, they raised their pincers and looked to the saints who were still fighting.

The saints from Hell Blade Field, Zhang Ruochen, and Princess Luosha all noticed the large group of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions in the water, and they all got anxious.

“Is the nest of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions in the Pluto Winter Water?”

Everyone had the same assumption.

Sizzle!

Dozens of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions breathed out cold Qi, and they rushed upwards like dozens of traces of light and joined

the fight.

Eleven of those Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions were mature, so they were as strong as half-step saint kings.

After the first shock wave, the saints from Hell Blade Field all screamed in agony, and sixteen of them died, and some of them were heavily injured.

“There’re too many Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions. Leave now.”

“Stop fighting! Stop fighting now! Otherwise we’ll all get killed.”

...

The saints from Hell Blade Field couldn’t maintain the form anymore. They rushed to the exit as quickly as possible.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t try and chase them as seven Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions tried to attack him at the same time.

One of the mature Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions flew above Zhang Ruochen and breathed out a Cold Qi River.

The Cold Qi River was more than a thousand feet long.

Zhang Ruochen snorted and took out the Monument Shield, activating all the ten thousand inscriptions on the shield, fully utilizing it.

The Monument Shield flew out, crushing Cold Qi River and hitting that Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion.

Bang!

It sounded like two pieces of godly iron clashing with each other.

The adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion was knocked away, and there were three long cracks on its shell. It yelled in anger.

“Can’t believe I only injured it.”

Zhang Ruochen now realized that adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions were indeed as powerful as half-step saint kings, so it wasn’t an easy job to kill one.

Princess Luosha and Fang Yi also stopped fighting each other. Instead, they were fighting more than thirty Pluto Ice Jade

Scorpions.

Bu Ji, Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling and Qing Mo were also attacked by five Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions. Fortunately, none of them were adults, so they managed to ward them off.

“Hundred Saints Blood Armor.”

The boxing glove Zhang Ruochen was wearing turned into armor, covering his entire body, and then, he utilized the power of a hundred saints, and a hundred saint shadows emerged.

Bang Bang!

He hit the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion dozens of times with full strength.

That Pluto Ice Jade Scorpion couldn't handle the attacks from Zhang Ruochen anymore. Its body cracked and crumbled like china.

Zhang Ruochen felt ecstatic after killing seven Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions.

Zhang Ruochen released Carnivorous Holy Flower to protect Mu Lingxi and the others. As for him, he rushed toward where the saints Hell Blade Field fought Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions.

All the saints from Hell Blade Field were stuck at the exit, being attacked by more than twenty Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions, two of which were adults.

Zhang Ruochen held the Monument Shield in one hand and the Abyss Ancient Sword in the other and dashed toward them. He kept killing saints from Hell Blade Field and Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions indiscriminately.

After a short while, there were only around twenty saints from Hell Blade Field left, as opposed to the more than one hundred that were there before entering the canyon.

Even Fang Yi was furious after seeing such a huge loss.  
“Bastard!”

Fang Yi triggered the power of White Micro Star, and a slight trace of godly might burst out of his body, knocking away all

the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions. Those who weren't adults had their bodies explode, turning into clusters of bloody mist.

Fang Yi rushed toward Zhang Ruochen and pointed at him.

The force of his finger shook the space around him.

Zhang Ruochen immediately balanced himself and raised the Monument Shield to ward it off while the phantom of a saint monument was formed in front of the shield.

Bang!

Fang Yi crushed the phantom with his finger and hit the shield.

Fang Yi infused it with rules of truth, which made it several times strong. He wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen with this strike.

Zhang Ruochen felt his Monument Shield tremble as if it was being pressed by the earth, and his arms felt like they were about to break.

He couldn't help bouncing away.

“Still alive?”

Fang Yi was a bit disappointed, but he had no desire to continue fighting. Instead, he rushed toward the exit.

Two adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions were guarding the exit.

They immediately released two cold Qi clouds to fight him.

Whoosh!

White Micro Star released its power again. Fang Yi pointed at the two adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions.

Bang Bang!

He killed both of the adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions.

Fang Yi rushed to the exit, spit some blood out and turned around, glaring at Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha. He said, “I'll have my revenge very soon. You guys aren't going to live for long.”

And then, Fang Yi stepped out of the dark space through the tunnel, followed by the twenty-something saints from Hell

Blade Field who had survived.

“Impressive. He killed two Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions that are as strong as half-step saint kings with only one strike. He’s going to be a huge threat.”

Zhang Ruochen felt intense pain in half of his body.

Without the rules of truth, Zhang Ruochen was still able to fight him. However, even one first step saint king might be defeated by Fang Yi if he utilized the rules of truth, not to mention Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen still had the trump card of the time sword technique, so he might be able to rival Fang Yi in a battle of life or death.

If Zhang Ruochen could master time and space, Fang Yi wouldn’t be able to rival the descendant of time and space even with rules of truth.

Both time and space were abstruse, so they needed a lot of time to study, which is something Zhang Ruochen lacked the most.

Which was why he had to improve his cultivation first.

Zhang Ruochen released Divine Fire Jingmie and burned all the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions to the ground. As for Princess Luosha, she triggered the rules of truth and killed six adult Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions.

The space only turned quiet after all the Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions had been killed.

“Collect as many drops of Ning True Saint Dew as possible and leave this place.”

Zhang Ruochen was still cautious and released mind power to see whether there were any more Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions or not.

Princess Luosha rushed out of the tunnel to hunt the saints from Hell Blade Field.

But then, she walked back to the dark space and said, “They got away.”

“However, Hell Blade Field lost almost a hundred top-tier saints. We’ve made ourselves their enemies.”

Zhang Ruochen felt regretful. However, someone like Fang Yi must have lots of trump cards and surviving skills, so it was almost impossible to kill him unless Zhang Ruochen became an absolute saint.

Drops of Nine True Saint Dew floated in the air like stars. Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha walked forward to collect them.

It took them fifteen minutes to collect all the Nine True Saint Dew. Zhang Ruochen alone collected thirteen thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew.

“Quick, let’s get out of here,” Princess Luosha said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded, but suddenly, he noticed some space ripples, and he looked to the ‘moon.’

Another drop of Nine True Saint Dew showed up beside the ‘moon.’

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes, as he was curious about what that ‘moon’ was. Did Nine True Saint Dew come from that ‘moon’?

Princess Luosha also noticed that, so she flew to the ‘moon’ with Zhang Ruochen at the same time.



# Chapter 1453 - White Space

Chapter 1453: White Space

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The so-called “Bright Moon” was a round jade stone hovering in the sky. It was 33 feet wide. One could only realize how big it was when it flew closer.

The round jade stone radiated with a cold aura. Its surface was covered in frost.

Zhang Ruochen stood ten feet away. He studied it carefully and discovered that there was a layer of liquid Ning True Saint Dew on the stone. One drop would fall down every ten breaths.

Princess Luosha’s eyes had a different look. “The patterns on the stone connect with the entire mountain. It can continuously form Ning True Saint Dew. In other words, it’s a spring for the Ning True Saint Dew.”

“This is a priceless treasure. Whoever has it will receive an endless supply of Ning True Saint Dew. But just now, I sensed faint spatial ripples. What’s going on?”

Zhang Ruochen approached it slowly. He released his Spiritual Power to test while extending a finger to touch the round stone.

A bone-piercing chill seized Zhang Ruochen.

At the same time, spatial ripples came out of the stone again. The powerful attractive force was about to swallow Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. He hurriedly activated spatial power to use the Spatial Move and escape.

But the more he used spatial power, the stronger the attractive force of the stone.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen couldn't resist the force. He was swallowed. The world spun and when he steadied himself again, he'd fallen into a white space.

This white space stood in stark contrast to the dark space outside.

The white space was even colder. Strands of Ning True Saint Dew vapor flew past Zhang Ruochen like snakes.

“What is this place? It's so strange.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel any joy in the fact that this place was filled with Ning True Saint Dew vapor. Instead, he found it strange.

Whoosh!

The space trembled. Then Princess Luosha's alluring body also appeared in the space.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly released his Spiritual Power to investigate the trembling space. But it was only an instant before it stabilized again. He couldn't find the entrance at all.

Zhang Ruochen could only collect his Spiritual Power. “How come you came in too?” he asked.

“You're important in my life and I worry for your safety, so I came in too,” Princess Luosha said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen naturally didn't take her seriously. “It's easy to come in but hard to get out,” he said solemnly.

Princess Luosha's Spiritual Power was more advanced than Zhang Ruochen's. She looked around, wanting to know what kind of space this was.

Zhang Ruochen was more direct. Activating all his Spiritual Qi, he activated the spatial power and waved his hand. He ripped apart a dozen-meter-long spatial crack and sent it out.

But the spatial crack closed instantly.

Princess Luosha furrowed her brows. “A powerful spatial cultivator once carved a spatial rune here. He’s much more advanced than us.”

There were some powerful spatial cultivators too.

Even a space manipulator like Zhang Ruochen might not be stronger than them. After all, Zhang Ruochen hadn’t cultivated space and time for long. The powerful spatial cultivators may have studied this field for hundreds, thousands, or even tens of thousands of years.

Zhang Ruochen also discovered some evidence. “No matter how advanced the spatial tactics are, they’re only tactics. They didn’t actually change the space. There must be some flaw...”

“Indeed. Only a space manipulator can truly change and construct space.” Princess Luosha nodded.

“Let’s split up. Perhaps we can find a flaw and escape.”

Zhang Ruochen activated the Heavenly Eyes. He started searching the white space inch by inch.

This place was completely isolated from the outside world, but there was also a good part. It was filled with Ning True Saint Dew vapor. Zhang Ruochen opened all his 144 apertures. Instantly, the Ning True Saint Dew poured into his body, going straight to the Heaven Pass River in his Sea of Qi.

After the 300-some Rules of Saintly Way in the Heaven Pass River absorbed the Ning True Saint Dew, they became stronger and stronger.

...

In the dark space, Mu Lingxi, Qing Mo and the others discovered that Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha had disappeared. They wanted to go look inside the Bright Moon too.

At first, they weren’t too worried. After all, Zhang Ruochen and the Princess Luosha were horribly strong. They could face any kind of dangers.

But they waited for four hours and the two still hadn’t come out. Mu Lingxi finally grew a bit worried.

“Something’s wrong.”

A brilliant pair of ice phoenix wings opened on Mu Lingxi’s back. She flew toward the Bright Moon.

Qing Mo, Bu Ji, Su Qingling, and the nine-headed bird also arrived close to the Bright Moon. But no matter what they did, nothing happened to the stone.

They couldn’t help but grow confused. How did Zhang Ruochen and the Princess Luosha enter the stone?

Fang Yi led the 20-some Hell Blade Field Saints out of the canyon. Fearing attack from Zhang Ruochen and the Princess Luosha, they rushed out of the mountain with their fastest speed.

They didn’t stop until they reached a safe area.

Fang Yi’s expression was very uncomfortable. It wasn’t just because he was badly hurt. More so, it was that he’d never suffered such a great defeat in his life. He felt very depressed and furious.

“Immediately message Priest Xue Fengling and have him come to the Great Whale River Territory. In addition, issue an Heir command. Summon all Saints of the Hell Blade Field. This time, I will flatten Phoenix Nest.”

On the side, the white-haired Absolute Saint had a solemn expression. “The Great Devil Ten Square Field is extremely large. It’s countless times stronger than us. Are we really going to go against the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine?”

Fang Yi’s eyes were sharp. He didn’t pull back at all. “As long as we do it cleanly and don’t leave any trace, so what if we kill the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine?”

Suddenly, a sharp sword clang sounded in the snowy wind.

“Careful!” Fang Yi exclaimed.

Poof, poof.

A saint sword flew by, stabbing through a True Saint of the Hell Blade Field.

The sword Qi from the sword cut the body into pieces. Blood rained down on the snow.

The sudden change alarmed all the Saints of the Hell Blade Field. They thought that Princess Luosha and Zhang Ruochen had caught up. They gathered hurriedly, activating their defensive scrolls.

Only Fang Yi was still calm. He could see that the Qi on the saint sword wasn't from Zhang Ruochen and the Princess Luosha. It was another force.

His eyes darkened slightly. "Such strong sword intent. You must be very strong. However, it's unwise to become enemies with the Hell Blade Field."

An ancient voice sounded in the snowy wind. "The Hell Blade Field is powerful? I can't even take care of a group of injured and disabled youths like you?"

This sentence obviously hit Fang Yi's sore spot. Murderous intent burst from him.

"You're looking to die if you want to provoke me."

His finger moved. A white sword produced a string of explosions. More than 100 times faster than the speed of sound, it flew toward some direction.

Boom!

A large mass of sword Qi burst out, crashing against the flying sword.

Instantly, the snow fell down 100 times faster than before. They whooshed down like tiny swords.

The other's sword intent far surpassed Fang Yi's predictions. He was forced to use the White Micro Star's power to force the sword intent back.

"As expected of a major world's Heir. Still so strong even when injured."

Sword Saint Jiuyou wore a gray cloth robe and simple straw shoes. Carrying a saint sword, he strolled out. He didn't hide his appreciation of Fang Yi at all.

“Your attainment in the Sword Way isn’t what a Saint should have either.”

Fang Yi was a bit frustrated inside. Before, he’d been undefeatable in the Hell Blade Field. Now, he met three people stronger than him in a row.

Of course, each major world had hidden dragons. They were all impressive.

Fang Yi was badly hurt. The other Hell Blade Field Saints were injured as well, so they didn’t want to keep creating enemies.

“You want to take all of us by yourself,” he said. “It’s not that easy. Actually, we have no conflicts between us. There’s no reason why we should start a fatal battle.”

“No conflicts?”

Sword Saint Jiuyou scoffed. “Your Hell Blade Field has killed many Saints from the Kunlun’s Field. With something so grave, you still say we have no conflicts?”

“Kunlun’s Field... The Kunlun’s Field has people as strong as you?”

Fang Yi finally realized that he’d have to fight this battle today.

“The Kunlun’s Field was once one of the strongest worlds in the universe. Many inheritances and techniques are much stronger than you think. The people who truly inherited those ways aren’t much weaker than people like you who are born geniuses.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou stopped speaking. His black hair flew up. A terrifying demonic Qi combined with his saint sword.

“Sword Eight,” he uttered.

The ground surrounding him shook.

Then Sword Saint Jiuyou disappeared. Only the sword stabbed toward Fang Yi.

Fang Yi didn’t dare to underestimate Sword Saint Jiuyou. He quickly activated the White Micro Star, pushed up the

Heavenly Compass, and pressed down, crashing against the incoming sword.

Boom!

Fang Yi flew back dozens of miles. A dozen cuts from Sword Qi opened up. His injuries worsened and it was like his organs had been ruptured.

“Oh, no.”

Sensing the problem, Fang Yi used his greatest speed to retreat to where he'd been.

When he arrived, the Saints of the Hell Blade Field had all been killed. None survived.

Only a large mass of bloody corpses remained in the snow. Their storage bags had all been taken away.

Sword Saint Jiuyou had already left. All of his aura had vanished.

Argh!

Eyes bloodshot, Fang Yi was furious and let out a roar. The entire saint mountain trembled. He'd been defeated continuously. If not for his strong will, he would've fallen apart already.

# Chapter 1454 - Link Mind Power Together

Chapter 1454: Link Mind Power Together

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha spent three days searching every corner of the white space, and they tried everything, yet they couldn't find any space loopholes.

“Is this space created by another space manipulator?” Zhang Ruochen wondered.

Princess Luosha pinched her chin and said, “Perhaps the creator's mind power is so strong that we're deceived.”

Zhang Ruochen had never run into such an impasse before. He felt like a prisoner, and there was nothing he could do to get out.

“Isn't it ironic that two space monks are trapped in a space? Can anything else be more hilarious?” Princess Luosha was still very optimistic as she could still laugh at this moment.

“It's not hilarious at all.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and penetrated his space saint look with his mind power and released the space saint look.

Princess Luosha wasn't able to see the space saint look, but she was very perceptive of any space ripples, so she could feel the strange power coming out of Zhang Ruochen's body, turning the space around him a whirlpool.

“Is that guy a space manipulator as well?” Princess Luosha found it hard to believe.



There were only a very small number of space monks, and one out of ten thousand of them were space manipulators.

And also, she knew that Zhang Ruochen could mobilize the power of time.

After an hour, Zhang Ruochen retracted his space saint look and mind power. He frowned, "I don't know what to do. Do you have any other idea?"

Princess Luosha stared at him and asked, "You've refined a space saint look, so you're a space manipulator?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "How is that important?"

"Of course, it is."

Zhang Ruochen didn't find any reason to hide it, so he said, "That's right, I'm a space manipulator."

Princess Luosha looked pleased. She said, "Then, I... I have an idea."

"What idea?"

"We can combine our space saint look and mind power to inspect the space inscriptions here. Perhaps we can find something," Princess Luosha said.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Princess Luosha was a space manipulator, otherwise she wouldn't have been that excellent in space.

"Combined two saint looks and mind power?" Zhang Ruochen was confused.

"It's called practicing mind power together when we combine our saint looks and mind power."

"The secret technique of Great Devil Ten Square Field is so weird."

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel awkward, but he didn't want to link mind power with Princess Luosha.

There would be bond even if they just linked mind power together, and Zhang Ruochen didn't want any emotional entanglement with a girl he didn't know.

And besides, if Princess Luosha was indeed Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, that devil emperor from Great Devil Ten Square Field would definitely notice if he linked mind power with her.

It wasn't a wise idea to make himself the enemy of a devil emperor.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen still had a trump card, which was the godly spirit weapon Moon God gave her. He might be able to break out of the white space using the power of a God.

However, he could only use the godly spirit weapon once, so Zhang Ruochen didn't find it worth it.

What if he ran into an enemy like a saint king?

Princess Luosha blinked her eyes seductively and said, "Think about it! My mind power is stronger than yours. You won't suffer anything if you link your mind power with me. This is a lifetime opportunity!"

"Are you this cordial to every man?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Princess Luosha wasn't angry. She said, "Of course not. There're only few men that I'm interested in. First of all, both of us are space manipulators. Secondly, you took of my Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, which means you're the man of destiny. Thirdly, merits battles are vital. If we're stuck here, we're giving other fields an advantage."

Zhang Ruochen looked serious. He agreed to Moon God that he must help Guanghan Field to get the first place of Saints Merits Battle, so he couldn't be stuck here.

Zhang Ruochen took out a saint sword out of his space ring.

That godly spirits weapon was a sword.

"What a weird sword."

Princess Luosha showed up beside Zhang Ruochen and performed a weird space technique, grabbing forward.

She then successfully got the saint sword.

"The power in the sword doesn't feel like saint power," Princess Luosha whispered.

“Give it back to me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Princess Luosha was observing the saint sword. She smiled and said, “Is this a weapon that was improved by a God? A weapon can only contain a little bit godly power. You can use it to fight some ordinary saint kings, but do you really think you can break the space with it?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to waste time talking to her. He grabbed forward and performed spatial twist, getting his saint weapon back to his hands.

Princess Luosha rushed forward and grabbed Zhang Ruochen's hands.

And then, a tremendous mind power gushed out of her body and was transmitted to Zhang Ruochen.

Princess Luosha's mind power was terrific. It crushed Zhang Ruochen's mind power defense and knocked his mind power saint look out of his body.

Zhang Ruochen's mind power saint look was a Thor knight, which looked exactly like Zhang Ruochen.

Princess Luosha's mind power saint look was a Goddess of flames, and it rushed toward the Thor knight and embraced him.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to break out of her mind power suppression, but he found that her mind power was much greater than his.

The mind power wasn't at saint level, instead, it was at saint king level.

Princess Luosha's mind power cultivation was stronger than her martial way cultivation.

Princess Luosha looked at Zhang Ruochen, and she smiled, “I've always got what I wanted.”

“A girl like you needs to go through more setbacks, otherwise you'll pay for your personality someday.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped fighting her. He had to link their mind power to get out of the white space first.

It was weird to link the mind power. Although only mind power saint looks were combined, their true bodies also felt very strong touching feelings, even stronger than real bodies being combined.

Actually, this was the first time Princess Luosha linked her mind power with someone else, and she wanted to do this for two reasons.

One, she actually wanted to combine their mind powers and saint looks to find a way to get out.

Two, she noticed Zhang Ruochen's great potential, especially as a space manipulator. She wanted to recruit him.

However, it was obviously impossible to bend Zhang Ruochen's will to her own, so she had to resort to something else.

Princess Luosha was very confident in herself, but she underestimated how linking mindpower impacted her.

Although it was only their mind power being linked, she could feel it in her body. Her body started to shake, and her face blushed.

Obviously, she wasn't conscious enough to inspect the loopholes in the white space.

She would've moaned if she didn't have enough willpower to control her behavior.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he still looked very calm. He took a deep breath to suppress that weird tingling, closed his eyes and released his space saint look, combining it with Princess Luosha's.

Boom!

The two space saint looks like two whirlpools, and after they were combined, the whirlpool flew out.

Space inscriptions emerged wherever the whirlpool touched.

Zhang Ruochen operated their mind powers and followed them.

After three hours, Zhang Ruochen noticed a tiny space knot. He immediately opened his eyes, "I've found it!"

Princess Luosha wasn't aggressive anymore. Her legs kept shaking, and she almost fell into Zhang Ruochen's arms.

She couldn't suppress Zhang Ruochen with her mind power anymore.

Zhang Ruochen put back his Thor knight and space saint look, then he flew toward that space knot like a trace of light.

"Break."

He hit the space knot with space crumbling skills.

Boom!

The white space and the black space collapsed together. They became smaller and smaller, and in the end, only a jade stone that was thirty-three feet long was left in the canyon.

The jade stone was circular. Half of it was black while the other was white, like a Taichi formation picture. It was inlaid in the canyon.

Aside from Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling and the others also stood on the jade stone, but they had no idea what just happened.

Why did that black space disappear?

Zhang Ruochen carefully observed it, and he noticed that the 'space knot' was at the center of the circular jade stone.

Zhang Ruochen started to study the inscriptions on the jade stone and exclaimed, "Excellent space formation. It's built on a jade stone and formed two separate spaces. Also, it looked more than just a space formation. Other formations can absorb the mysterious power from the ancient saint mountain to make Ning True Saint Dew..."

"How did I understand such inscriptions so quickly... Could it be..."

Zhang Ruochen immediately inspected his mind power, and he found that his mind power was at level fifty-four.

He turned around and looked to Princess Luosha.

# Chapter 1455 - Exit The Ancient Saint Mountain

Chapter 1455: Exit The Ancient Saint Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Princess Luosha met Zhang Ruochen's eyes. She was actually a bit awkward. Thankfully, she had a mask. Otherwise, she wouldn't know how to hide it.

This time, she'd indeed miscalculated and almost embarrassed herself.

Suspicion colored Zhang Ruochen's eyes. "You've already reached the Saint King Realm for Spiritual Power?"

"So what?"

The Luosha Princess stuck up her chest. She stood straight and tall again. Her strong presence appeared again.

"The Zuling Field is a battleground of the Saints Merits Battle," Zhang Ruochen said. "Neither martial or Spiritual Power Saint Kings are qualified to participate."

The Luosha Princess was confused. The two had just linked their Spiritual Power. Even she hadn't recovered fully, but the other seemed to have nothing happen to him. Instead, he started doubting her identity.

Did this guy have no feelings?

"After I came to the merits battlefield, my Spiritual Power finally broke into the 55th level. Is that okay?" The Luosha Princess spoke with frustration, the whites of her eyes showing.

In the distance, the nine-headed bird's eyes kept rolling around. It was confused. The princess was a bit strange today. Her emotional changes were too big. She didn't have her usual calm.

Zhang Ruochen naturally couldn't have felt nothing from the linkage earlier.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't think that the Luosha Princess actually liked him. He felt that she was doing this for another motive.

Whether looking at the Luosha Princess's strong cultivation, extreme beauty, or mysterious thoughts, it all showed that she wasn't a simple woman. She wouldn't fall for anyone easily.

What is she plotting?

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly activated his Spiritual Power to check inside and indeed found something amiss. There was a strand of foreign Qi in his Spiritual Power saint soul.

That strand of Qi was almost completely melded into the saint soul. If he wasn't careful, he wouldn't have noticed at all.

Such a strange strand of Qi. When did it enter my Spiritual Power saint soul? Could it have been from the linkage?

The Qi was very dangerous. It kept changing position like a snake. It also contained a strange force and seemed to be assimilating his saint soul.

Right then, Zhang Ruochen was quite sure that the Luosha Princess had left the Qi inside him. It was possibly the reason why she forced him to link their Spiritual Power.

So calculative.

Zhang Ruochen moved the Divine Fire Jingmie into his saint heart. He would refine the Qi in his saint soul.

It was fortunate that he wasn't narcissistic. If he really thought that the Luosha Princess liked him, he would probably become her puppet by the time the Qi assimilated his saint soul.

Zhang Ruochen didn't immediately expose her. He planned on going with it. Making the Luosha Princess think that he was



under her control was not be a bad thing.

Bu Ji was a simple man. He didn't notice the strange atmosphere. His blazing eyes stared at the black and white saint stone underfoot. "Is Ning True Saint Dew really from this jade stone? Then doesn't that mean it's the spring of Ning True Saint Dew?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "This stone can produce Ning True Saint Dew because it has a very advanced formation rune carved onto it. It can transform the mountain's mysterious power into Ning True Saint Dew.

"In other words, the spring of Ning True Saint Dew is the mountain, not this stone."

Bu Ji was instantly disappointed. Unsatisfied, he asked, "Then, what is the mountain's mysterious power?"

"I don't know." Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "Perhaps, it comes from the Phoenix Nest."

In the days where Zhang Ruochen and the Luosha Princess were trapped, the Holy Carnivorous Flower reached the Absolute Saint Realm. Its aura was no weaker than the nine-headed bird.

The fruit at the top of the vine was densely covered in golden lines. It was getting closer to maturity.

Three days ago, the Holy Carnivorous Flower had collected more than 16,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew in the dark space. Now, a green leaf opened up on the vine. Ning True Saint Dew fell down like rain. Zhang Ruochen collected it in a treasure.

This way, Zhang Ruochen had more than 30,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, Bu Ji, and Qing Mo also had more than 10,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. This was undoubtedly a huge harvest for them.

Under Zhang Ruochen's strong recommendation, Mu Lingxi and Qing Mo entered the space crystal to cultivate. Time was four times faster inside the world. With their large amounts of

Ning True Saint Dew, they could improve quickly if they focused on cultivating.

Of course, the main reason was that it would get more dangerous up ahead. Zhang Ruochen was a bit worried, so he had them improve first.

After the black and white space were shattered, the canyon was unobstructed. It connected to the ancient mountain.

Looking past the canyon, one could see the peak of another mountain.

Zhang Ruochen looked into the distance. “After passing this canyon, we should reach the 33 center mountains.”

“So we’re getting closer to the Merits Record Wall?” Bu Ji looked happy.

“Yes.”

“Then, what are we waiting for? Let’s go. The other three walls had already been destroyed. If we get this one, we’ll control the entire Saints Merits Battle.”

Zhang Ruochen, Bu Ji, and Su Qingling didn’t hesitate. They started walking toward the other end.

The Luosha Princess stared at the black and white stone embedded into the canyon with a thoughtful expression. She wanted to take them and study the spatial runes.

Her Holy Qi spun quickly and flooded into her demonic eyes. Then two beams of light flew out of her eyes. They hit the mountain on either side, producing deafening booms.

Hearing the noise, Zhang Ruochen hurriedly stopped and looked back. He had a serious expression. “What is she doing? The mountain is so dangerous and she still dared to make such a commotion? Is it worth it for a saint stone?”

The spatial runes on the stone were indeed abstruse and very valuable for both research and comprehension. However, it was too dangerous here. Destroying the structure so brazenly could lure out danger.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was thinking from his own point of view. The Luosha Princess didn't have the Time and Space Secret Guide like him. She couldn't cultivate in the Space Divine Pavilion either. If she wanted to study the Way of Space, she had to keep searching and collecting by herself.

She would obviously take the stone since she encountered it.

The walls on either side kept falling down. The stone started loosening. But great coldness poured out from under it.

“Oh, no.”

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed. He used the Spatial Move and appeared to the right of the Luosha Princess. “Hurry and leave,” he ordered.

The Luosha Princess didn't listen to his urge. She continued attacking. Finally, the stone fell free from the wall, separating from the mountain.

Her eyes narrowed. She was about to collect the black and white stone—

Rumble.

Suddenly, a great amount of Pluto Winter Water flooded out from under the stone. Like a black flood, it whooshed toward her and Zhang Ruochen.

Pluto Winter Water was extremely cold water. Even a regular Saint King would fear it and not dare to touch it.

Piercing screams traveled from the water. A large amount of Pluto Ice Jade Scorpions rushed out, attacking Zhang Ruochen and the Luosha Princess first.

Merely looking at adult scorpions, there were already more than 20.

Faced with such a situation, even the Luosha Princess grew fearful. Her eyes were unnatural.

Zhang Ruochen was long prepared. He pointed and uttered, “Spatial Collapse.”

Dozens of spatial cracks appeared in the space before them. The space started collapsing where the cracks met. It

transformed into a huge black hole that swallowed the black and white stone and the Pluto Winter Water.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen slapped forward with two Divine Fire Jingmie fireballs. The canyon instantly grew scalding. Rocks melted and steam rose up. The scorpions were forced back.

When the space recovered and stabilized, the scorpions that were still alive ducked into the walls. They disappeared from the canyon.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen let out a relieved sigh. He turned and walked toward the other end.

The Luosha Princess hurried over. Putting up an annoyed expression, she said, "I wanted to collect the black and white stone and study the spatial runes. Why did you destroy it?"

"Couldn't you see that the mountain contains large amounts of Pluto Winter Water?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "If you collected the stone, the water would flood out. The water also nurtures destructive scorpions. Can you take it if large amounts of scorpions come out?"

The Luosha Princess wasn't grateful at all. As if pretending to want to argue, she said, "My cultivation is very strong. I can obviously take it. Who needs your help?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to keep arguing. He felt like she was too naïve. She liked to show her strong side and never admit defeat.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen ignore him, the Luosha Princess took the initiative and said, "You were pretty handsome just then. You acted decisively and much stronger than before. Did you reach the middle True Saint Realm now?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't reply. He picked up his pace.

When they exited the canyon, Zhang Ruochen finally reunited with Bu Ji and Su Qingling.

The two had walked to the edge of the steep abyss. Looking into the distance, they grew excited. Zhang Ruochen also

followed their eyes. Two towering flame mountains entered his vision.

One of the mountains had a Merits Record Wall at the top. Even hundreds of miles away, he could see the white saintly light shining from the wall.

# Chapter 1456 - Bigger Storm

Chapter 1456: Bigger Storm

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Great Evil Ten Square Field was still at the first place in Supreme Saints Merits Battle.

Great Evil Ten Square Field was too powerful, and it had several times more supreme saints than Guanghai Field did, so it could even fail.

Guanghai Field lost four supreme saints this time, and more than ten supreme saints were seriously injured and were put into a slumber.

Even so, they earned the least merits among Shatuo Seven Fields, less than Kunlun's Field.

Which was kind of unacceptable to them.

“We have twice more supreme saints than Kunlun's Field, but it has a couple of extremely powerful beings who killed six supreme saints from the bone race.”

“I thought we can at least outmatch Kunlun's Field. Seems like it's a bit risky now.”

“We also killed six supreme saints from the bone race, so the gap between us two fields is not large. As long as we can get more merits in Saint Kings Merits Battle and Saints Merits Battle, we'll still be ranked higher.”

...

Dozens of supreme saints, led by Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, Emperor Jimie and Wu Zu gathered in Moon God Mountain.

They all looked upset as they didn't do well in Supreme Saints Merits Battle, and they felt that Guanghan Field might be ranked last in this merits battle.

And if that happened, the entire Guanghan Field would be destroyed.

They watched the battlefield reflection in the sky and focused on Saint Kings Merits Battle and Saints Merits Battle as they didn't want anything like that to happen again.

Saint Kings Merits Battle was normal, but something strange was happening in Saints Merits Battle.

The participants that were originally in four different world fragments all rushed to the southern world in Zuling Field.

“What's happening?”

All those supreme saints just came back to Heaven World, so they didn't know what was going on in Zuling Field.

Wu Zu brought a pre saint using a trace of his supreme saint mind to ask him what happened in Zuling Field.

Seeing the supreme saints from Guanghan Field, Wu Mingyi was so scared that he groveled on the ground, telling them what happened in the past month while his voice trembled.

“The priest of Guanghan Field, Zhang Ruochen, is the fiancé of the God from Kunlun's Field, and he's also a time and space manipulator.”

“The Merits Record Walls in the north, the east and the west were all destroyed.”

“Phoenix Nest was discovered.”

“Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha teamed up to crush Blade Hell Field, and they almost killed the heir of Blade Hell Field.”

...

Even those supreme saints had seen a lot and had very stable state of mind, they were still surprised.

Although the heir Wu Hao also did lots of impressive things, but they were nothing compared to Zhang Ruochen's background.

'The fiancé of God' was enough to make Supreme Saint Nine Spirits' and Emperor Jimie's hearts pound.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirit said, "It doesn't matter much that he's the fiancé of the Kunlun's God, after he's still fighting for Guanghan Field. My problem with him is, why is he teaming up with Princess Luosha, Luo Sha.

Princess Luosha, 'Luo Sha', had a huge fame in the universe. Although she was still young, she managed to destroy a large field, which was why even Supreme Saint Nine Spirits had heard of her before.

Emperor Jimie looked to Phoenix Nest in the battlefield reflection and saw Zhang Ruochen, Su Qingling and Bu Ji walking with Princess Luosha. He said, "Probably because they don't know who she actually is."

Wu Zu agreed, "Luo Sha is the oldest daughter of a God from Luosha race. She has supreme status and extraordinary talents, and she's also intelligent and cunning. Even those old guys from Zuling Field who have lived for thousands of years can't defeat him."

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits was worried about Su Qingling. He asked, "Is there any way we can tell them who Luo Sha really is."

Emperor Jimie shook his head and said, "Merits Battle must be fair. Nobody is allowed to interfere before it's actually finished, otherwise, there'll be grave consequences."

The result of a merits battle was related to the survival of a large field. Even Gods weren't allowed to interfere, not to mention them.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits frowned. He said, "Luo Sha can easily kill them. Why did she choose to approach them instead of doing so? Is she trying to use Zhang Ruochen to break the boundary of Phoenix Nest?"



“Strange thing indeed. Even we can’t understand what that Princess Luosha is aiming for.”

Emperor Jimie was confident of Zhang Ruochen. He said, “You’ve all neglected something. Although Princess Luosha has supreme cultivation and skills, Zhang Ruochen is no ordinary monk either. He was the fiancé of a God and the descendant of time and space. He’s also incredible.”

“Princess Luosha conquered a large field, which shows her impressive intelligence and bravery, but Zhang Ruochen was fighting a God the whole time when he was still in Kunlun’s Field. He might be at Princess Luosha’s level.

“I actually really look forward to the contest between Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha. This is very interesting. If Zhang Ruochen can outwit Princess Luosha, he’ll be famed in Heaven World.”

All the supreme saints from Shatuo Seven Fields had returned to Heaven World, and they leant about how happened in Zuling Field.

Some of the supreme saints from Blade Hell Field were furious. They claimed that they would go after him if he didn’t die in Zuling Field and made it back to Heaven World.

As for the supreme saints from Kunlun’s Field, some of them were worried seeing Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha join forces.

At the other end of the vast astral sky was the astral territory that belonged to Luosha race, so some of the Luosha seniors were paying attention to every move of Princess Luosha.

It was a giant rock planet that was tens of thousands of times larger than ordinary planets. There were over a trillion Luosha monks inhabiting on that planet.

It was one of the ancestral planets of Luosha race, Qianji Planet.

One Qianji Planet was a magnificent saintly palace that was covered by lightning. The palace was more than a thousand feet tall, floating in the sky above an ocean.

A Luosha marquis who was a half-step saint king spread his wing and flew into the saint palace. He kneeled with one knee and said, "My lord, I've figured out who that human being is."

Lord Lingquan sat at the top of the palace, wearing a black saint armor, looking majestic.

Although most of the Luosha males looked hideous, Lord Lingquan was very handsome with great facial features.

Lord Lingquan stared at the battlefield reflection and saw Zhang Ruochen who was following Princess Luosha. He asked, "Where did he come from?"

The half-step saint king took out a jade run with characters all over and handed it to Lord Lingquan.

After reading the information on the jade run, he said, "Time and space descendant. A time and space descendant. Lingju, gather ten first marquises and wait for my order."

After that half-step saint king called Lingju walked out, a laughing sound came from outside the saint palace, "Lingquan, her highness is only using that human being to break Phoenix Nest, and you can't even deal with that?"

Lord Lingquan stared at the door and saw a built being, "Why did you come here, Yang Qi?"

Yang Qi was holding a long fiery spear, floating in the sky with powerful saint Qi in front of him. He said, "I'm just worried you'll head to Zuling Field. I'm here to make sure you won't break the rules."

"Her highness brought up three million armies to Zuling Field from Juta Planet, which drew attention from Heaven World. If another large group of great beings enter Zuling Field again, Heaven World will interfere."

"Zuling Field is already nearing its end. Almost all the valuables have been seized. There's no need for another war for a broken field like this."

Lord Lingquan said, "Don't even think I don't know what you're reckoning. If I don't go to Zuling Field, you'll go there"

secretly. You aren't happy that her highness is so close to a human man, are you?"

Yang Qi smiled and said, "Her highness has her own reasoning for everything she does, but there's absolutely no need for a human being to help conquer Phoenix Nest. I'm strong enough to help her."

"I reckon it's better for you to stay in Qianji Planet to help her highness."

Lord Lingquan received the voice from Lingju that he had gathered ten marquises.

Lord Lingquan didn't want to waste any time. He spread his black wings and flew out of Xuanlei Saint Palace, heading toward the worm hole followed by ten first marquises.

Yang Qi stared at Lord Lingquan and whispered, "Just as what I expected that Lingquan is going to Zuling Field."

A first marquis who was a half-step saint king walked out of the space and said, "Are we going to Zuling Field as well, my lord?"

"Why not? I'm not going to let Lingquan take all the credits," Yang Qi said.

And then, first marquises from Yang's family also walked out and stood behind Yang Qi, heading off to the worm hole.

# Chapter 1457 - Time Formation

Chapter 1457: Time Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

On the bank of Great Whale River, 99 saint mountains rose up one after another. Some were covered by snow year-round. Others were covered in fire. Ordinary beings couldn't venture onto either.

Each mountain was a path toward the Phoenix Nest.

Zhang Ruochen's group hurried toward the mountain with the Merits Records Wall. They soon arrived at the foot of the mountain.

The ground was scalding. The stone and soil were all red and sizzled when their feet stepped on it.

The Luosha Princess clearly wasn't very interested in the Merits Records Wall. "This mountain is extremely dangerous. Even many Luosha die in there. I believe we should go get the treasures from the Phoenix Nest before coming back."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "There'll be more dangers the further we go. If we can't even take the Merits Records Wall, how can we get to the Phoenix Nest?"

Su Qingling was undoubtedly on Zhang Ruochen's side. "Yes. The Merits Records Wall pertains to the fate of the Guanghan Field. It must be in our hands. As for the Phoenix Nest, it'll be great if we can take it, but we don't have to."

The Luosha Princess smiled and didn't speak further.

"I'll go test and see how dangerous the mountain is."

Bu Ji stuck more than 60 protective rune scrolls to his body. Then, activating his Supreme Saint battle soul, he timidly started climbing.

Great fire surged in the mountain. The higher he climbed, the higher the temperature.

But with Bu Ji's strong cultivation, he could still take it.

There weren't dangers other than the flames. It was oddly peaceful and he soon got to the middle.

"It doesn't seem to have any dangers," Su Qingling said. "Could it be that the Luosha climbed the mountain in a different direction, so they ran into trouble?"

The Luosha marquises were gathered at the south of the mountain.

Zhang Ruochen's group had chosen a different path and appeared at the mountain's east. They were hundreds of miles apart in different directions.

At the middle of the mountain, Bu Ji lowered his guard. He turned around to Zhang Ruochen and Su Qingling and laughed. "This mountain isn't dangerous. Hurry and follow—"

But as soon as he spoke, Bu Ji's expression changed.

He realized that his voice had become raspy and old. It was like an unfamiliar elder was speaking. Hearing it, his scalp felt numb. A strange terror arose in his heart.

Zhang Ruochen and Su Qingling also widened their eyes, staring at Bu Ji in shock.

His features had become aged. Wrinkles had grown on his face and he looked like he was around 50 years old. He was also aging visibly. White hair had grown too.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly realized something and his expression changed. "Hurry and retreat!" he said.

Bu Ji sensed something wrong too. Shuddering, he used his fastest speed to rush down the mountain.

Even so, his vitality was still decreasing rapidly. By the time he rushed down the mountain, he was a white-haired elder. He

was covered in wrinkles and his muscular body had become stooped. He was like an 80-year-old man, close to death.

Su Qingling was frightened. She hurriedly supported him, concern filling her eyes. “You... What happened to you...”

Bu Ji looked at his wrinkled hands and the white hair falling from his head. Unable to accept this, he let out a pained cry and fainted.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Bu Ji’s wrist. After checking it, he took out a saint medicine that could add 10,000 years of life. He melted it with Divine Fire Jingmie and fed it into Bu Ji’s mouth.

Su Qingling sent Holy Qi into Bu Ji’s back to help him refine and absorb the medicine.

Gradually, color returned to Bu Ji’s face.

Su Qingling was very worried. “What exactly happened?” she asked. “How can this be? How can this be?”

Zhang Ruochen looked at Bu Ji on the ground. “Bu Ji’s physical body is very strong and already in the Saint Realm. His vitality far surpasses regular Saints. Under typical circumstances, he can easily live to 1,000 years. But now, his longevity is greatly lost. He used up practically all of his vitality. Even if he takes the saint medicine, he won’t be able to live for long.”

Su Qingling had a close relationship with Bu Ji and viewed him as a brother. Hearing this bad news, she couldn’t take it. Her eyes watered.

“No need to be sad. As long as his will is strong and won’t be taken down by the challenge, he can continue to cultivate. When he reaches the Saint King Realm, his lifespan will increase again. By then, he can recover his youth again.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen looked at the mountain before him. He walked out and started climbing.

The Luosha Princess was shocked. “What are you doing?”

Su Qingling also raised her head. She wanted to stop Zhang Ruochen. She was afraid he would run into danger too. This

mountain was too strange. It was a forbidden land that could swallow a cultivator's vitality.

"No need to worry about me. I'm just trying to verify a hypothesis."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were deep. He seemed to already know why Bu Ji had aged so rapidly, so he picked up his pace. After walking around three miles, he stopped. He could feel that the flow of time had indeed quickened.

Thus, he quickly retreated until the time flow was normal.

In that instant, Zhang Ruochen realized that he'd lost half a month of his life.

"It really is related to life. No wonder 1,000 years of Bu Ji's life was used up in an hour."

Zhang Ruochen opened up his Heavenly Eyes and observed the land. He discovered a dense mass of time prints.

The entire fire mountain was actually a huge time formation. The higher he went, the more dramatic the flow of time. Anyone who ventured in would probably die.

Rather than getting killed, they would die of old age.

Zhang Ruochen climbed down the mountain and told this to Su Qingling and the Luosha Princess.

Su Qingling was shocked. "First, we ran into a spatial formation. Now, it's a time formation. What kind of person constructed the Phoenix Nest?"

The Luosha Princess laughed. "I told you before that this mountain is extremely dangerous. We can't go in. Let's go around it and get the treasures in the Phoenix Nest."

"That's not necessary."

Zhang touched his chin, growing thoughtful. "If I use the Great Spatial Move, we can move to the mountaintop and take the Merits Records Wall with the fastest speed. This may cost some vitality, but it's worth it for the Merits Records Wall."

If he wanted the Guanghan Field to take first place in the Saints Merit Battle, then he must get the wall.

Zhang Ruochen's Holy Qi circulated quickly. He activated all his spatial power and rushed forward with the Great Spatial Move.

Whoosh!

The next moment, he appeared a dozen miles away. His expression changed. Instead going further, he quickly retreated down the mountain.

When he was at the bottom, he quickly checked and realized that he'd lost 20 years of his life.

Su Qingling knew that something must've happened. "What's wrong?" she asked hurriedly.

"With my current cultivation and Spiritual Power," Zhang Ruochen said. "I can cross 200 or 300 miles with one Great Spatial Move. But here, I can only cross a dozen miles. Not only are there time prints, this mountain also has spatial runes. This is troublesome!"

"This mountain is impossible to breach," the Luosha Princess said. "Any creature who ventures into it will die. There's no point to keep trying. The wise choice is going to get the treasures from the Phoenix Nest."

Su Qingling was powerless against time and space forces. Her will started wavering. "Are there other solutions?" she asked.

"Yes," Zhang Ruochen said. "We can climb to the top if we destroy the time prints and spatial runes."

Light flashed past the Luosha Princess's eyes. "You can destroy time prints?"

"It'll take a lot of time, but it's worth a try."

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and closed his eyes. Activating the power of time, he cast the Twelve Hours Sword Technique and struck out.

One time print in the air exploded, producing a deafening boom.

The Luosha marquises on the south side of the mountain heard the boom. They all flew into the sky and looked at the east.



They discovered Zhang Ruochen's group.

“What's going on? Why are humans breaking into the 33 saint mountains? Is there another path?”

Saint Arrow Marquis, one of the four first marquises, flew into the sky. His entire body shone with golden light. His huge eyes were trained on Zhang Ruochen.

It was the human who'd taken five of his destructive gold arrows.

“Not easy to break into here.”

The Saint Arrow Marquis pulled back his golden dragon bone bow and fired a destructive arrow.

Whoosh!

The arrow flew forward in a golden streak of light. It passed hundreds of miles, 100 times faster than the speed of sound, to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was focusing on decoding the time prints. When he discovered the arrow, it was already too late. He could only activate his defensive rune scrolls.

Poof, poof.

A dozen scrolls were shattered before dissolving the arrow's force.

The Saint Arrow Marquis collected the arrow. Eyes darkening, he roared, “Leave a half marquis to guard this place. Everyone else, follow me to the east of the mountain and kill the creatures from the Heaven World!”

The Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields also discovered the changes in the 99 saint mountains. Some of the Saints flew into the sky, looking toward the mountain with the Merits Records Wall.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, Su Qingling, and the Luosha Princess, they were all stunned.

How did they pass through the Luosha blockade and reach the mountain where the Merits Records Wall was located?

# Chapter 1458 - Everyone Gathered

Chapter 1458: Everyone Gathered

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A large group of saints from Kunlun's Field arrived in Whale River basin. More than two thousand gathered together, including Wan Zhaoyi and Chen Wutian who were on 'Five Heros List', the other eight heavenly maidens and some of the heirs. All of them were overlords with great fame in Kunlun's Field.

Wan Zhaoyi was wearing a blue dragon armor. He was built with large arms like a God of War. He said, "Impressive that Zhang Ruochen found another way in. Where is it though?"

Actually, Kunlun's Field had chosen nine heirs, but they were all too young, which was why Wan Zhaoyi was the commander for Kunlun's Field in Saints Merits Battle.

Wan Zhaoyi was an absolute saint, so even the old saints like Sword Saint Jiuyou and Chu Siyuan couldn't outmatch him.

Everyone knew that Wan Zhaoyi had reached Peak Realm in Heavenly Realm, but little did they know was he reached Peak Realm in Huang Realm, Xuan Realm and Earth Realm, and that was why he was ranked the first on 'Five Heros List'.

Whoosh!

A trace of white light flew out of the saint mountains and landed on Zhang Ruochen's hand.

1

It was a signal flare.

Wan Zhaoyi smiled reading the information on the signal flare, 'It's from Sword Saint Jiuyi. It seems that there's a secret road straight to the saint mountain where Merits Record Wall was.

"Chen Wutian, Xue Wuye, Chi Wansui, Chu Siyuan and Wan Canglan..."

Wan Zhaoyi counted the saints following him, and he used Tianming Summoning Rune to cover their forces and shapes, rushing toward the ninety-nine saint mountains.

There were more than eight thousand saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field. They gathered in Whale River basin and hid in dozens of hidden formations.

Fang Yi had fully recovered, and he was still wearing that spotless cape. Saint light flowed on his skin, making him look like an angel from the heaven.

The priest of Blade Hell Field was called Xu Fengling. He looked only thirteen years old with a young and exquisite face, yet his pupils were red.

Xue Fengling wasn't actually human being, instead, he was an enchanted wind who refined to have human shape.

Xue Fengling walked to Fang Yi and said, "Heir, the true saints and absolute saints who're in Whale River basin have gathered. There're in total one hundred and seven of them, including twenty-one absolute saints and two half-step saint kings."

Fang Yi said, "Wait for a bit."

After an hour, a purple bridge emerged from the other side.

A handsome man in purple showed up in front of Fang Yi and Xue Lingfeng. He smiled and said, "I heard you were crushed in Phoenix Nest and lost more than a hundred saints?"

Fang Yi was kind of irritated. He said, "I'm not here for your sarcasm. We have a couple of very powerful enemies this time."

Ning Dongliu was a great being in Shatuo Heaven Domain, and people called him 'Sword Master Dongliu'. He was also the heir of Purple Mansion Field.

Sword Master Dongliu smiled and said, “He’s just a priest from Guanghan Field.”

“That priest isn’t an ordinary monk, but a space monk. And also, he’s teamed up with Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine from Great Evil Ten Square Field,” Fang Yi said.

Sword Master Dongliu stopped smiling and asked, “Why is Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine involved?”

“She might not be the real Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.”

Fang Yi continued, “I met Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine once thirty years ago. Although it was just a short glance, she still gave me a very huge impression, but I feel like she’s a stranger now.”

Sword Master Dongliu said, “It’s been thirty years, and you only caught a glimpse at her. It’s normal you feel she’s a stranger.”

Fang Yi nodded and said, “For what it’s worth, anyone who dares stop us from seizing the Merits Record Wall will be erased.”

Sword Master Dongliu agreed. Great Devil Ten Square Field was indeed powerful, but getting Merits Record Field was more important.

And besides, the combined power of Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field wasn’t necessarily weaker than that of Great Devil Ten Square Field.

“You said in your signal flare that you ran into an incredibly powerful sword monk. How strong he is?” Sword Master Dongliu asked.

Fang Yi recalled Sword Saint Jiuyu, and he looked belligerent.

He hated Sword Saint Jiuyu more than he hated Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha as he ambushed them when they were all injured. He killed all the saints from Blade Hell Field.

Fang Yi then started to describe Sword Saint Jiuyu’s techniques, including his sword intent, and he even imitated how Sword Saint Jiuyu wielded his sword.

Sword Master Dongliu looked solemn after hearing that.

Even him, the first sword way talent of Purple Mansion Field, paled compared to him.

Sword Master Dongliu found it hard to believe. He strolled his beard and said, “Can’t believe he’s still a saint. I can’t wait to fight him.”

An absolute saint walked into the hidden formation and said, “Heir, my lord. Some of the saints from Kunlun’s Field are rushing to the thirty-fifth saint mountain through the ninth saint mountain.

Fang Yi marked every one of the ninety-nine saint mountains so that he knew where he was heading to better.

“Let’s go and crush Kunlun’s Field.”

Fang Yi, Xue Fengling and Sword Master Dongliu all rushed to the ninth saint mountain leading their great beings.

...

Princess Luosha warned them again when they arrived under the saint mountain, “Many Luosha marquises are rushing here. We need to leave now.”

“Why are we leaving? We can take this chance to kill them all. Are you afraid of them with your cultivation?” Zhang Ruochen looked suspicious.

Princess Luosha knew that Zhang Ruochen was meticulous, and that he might be suspecting her identity again.

“Of course not. I just don’t want any trouble,” Princess Luosha said.

“We can get more merits if we kill some Luosha marquises. Why is that a trouble?”

Zhang Ruochen took out saint jades and saint stones and carved space inscriptions on them. He then put them underground, which formed a circular formation with a diameter of a thousand feet.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial twist inside the formation and changed the space structure.

Zhang Ruochen noticed that Zhang Ruochen was setting up a space formation.

1

“Has he figured out who I am? Is he trying to use me to fight Luosha race?”

Princess Luosha thought for a bit, but then, she shook her head as she was confident that she didn't give away anything.

It wasn't an easy task to get to the east from the south. Led by Saint Arrow Marquis, it took the marquises from Luosha race three hours to get to where Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha were.

There were thousands of Luosha marquises. The evil sha Qi coming out of their bodies formed a crimson devil cloud.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting at the center of the space formation and kept refining Ning True Saint Dew as he didn't even care about those Luosha marquises.

Saint Arrow Marquis said, “You're going to die soon, yet you're still refining? Kill them all now...”

“Wait.”

Another first marquis, Yanlin Marquis caught up with him and stopped Saint Arrow Marquis.

And then, Saint Arrow Marquis was dazed after hearing what Yanlin Marquis told him. He took a look at Princess Luosha and said, “Are you serious?”

Yanlin Marquis said, “I've refined with her highness for some time before. I can definitely recognize her.”

“Why would her highness get so close with a human man?”  
Saint Arrow Marquis was baffled.

He wasn't qualified to see Princess Luosha before. Only his father and grandfather were qualified for work for Princess Luosha.

With more saint kings leaving Zuling Field, Saint Arrow Marquis gradually became a top-tier being in Zuling Field. He wanted to see Princess Luosha but he never got the chance.

However, the first time he saw Princess Luosha was when he interrupted her plan. He was shocked and didn't know what to do.

Should he leave to attack?

The other Luosha marquises didn't know Princess Luosha, and neither did they hear the conversation between Yanlin Marquis and Saint Arrow Marquis. They all looked confused.

“Should we attack, my lord?”

“Please give an order, my lord. If we join all our forces, we can easily kill a saint king, not to mention a couple of human saints.”

“Kill! We've got to kill them. I haven't eaten human flesh for a long time. Those two girls all looked very smooth and delicious.”

Saint Arrow Marquis kept sweating as he was very anxious.

If he really killed Princess Luosha, he would definitely be executed, and his families would for sure follow.

“Why haven't they attacked yet?”

The saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field hid in the shadow and they wanted to let them destroy each other first.

The saints from Kunlun's Field were hiding in another corner.

Wan Zhaoyi looked perplexed, “Why's happening? Did the Luosha marquises find out where we are? Is that why they haven't attacked them yet?”

Saint Lady's body looked like a crescent moon. She was elegant and tranquil.

She looked to where the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field and said, “Should we use some special ways to divert Luosha marquises to the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field?”

Wan Zhaoyi wasn't stupid. He knew what Saint Lady was trying to do, “Zhang Ruochen's betrayed Kunlun's Field and

submitted to Guanghan Field, yet you're still trying to help him. Sounds like you really are his best friend.”



# Chapter 1459 - Three Large Words Against The Luosha Army

Chapter 1459: Three Large Words Against The Luosha Army

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen grew doubtful. He didn't understand why the Luosha marquis army still didn't attack.

He was confident that he could block the Luosha's first attack with the spatial maze. He could also use the spatial reverse to hurt them badly.

"The Luosha are actually so careful," Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself. "Did they see through my formations?"

The Luosha Princess was annoyed. She really wanted to cut off the Saint Arrow Marquis's head. He was such a failure.

How could someone so impulsive become a first marquis

The Luosha Princess was worried that Zhang Ruochen would grow suspicious again, so she immediately sent out a beam of Spiritual Power. She told the Saint Arrow Marquis and Marquis Yanlin where the Saints of the Hell Blade Field, Purple Mansion Field, and Kunlun's Field were hiding.

Receiving the information, the Saint Arrow Marquis seemed to have been saved. He finally knew what to do. Battle intent filled him. Turning around, he roared, "Who dares to hide before me? I'll destroy you first."

Boom!

The golden dragon bone arrow produced a thunderous boom. Then a destructive golden arrow flew out.

The invisibility formation was pierced instantly. The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were all exposed. There were more than 100 Saints who were at least at the True Saint Realm.

Kaboom.

Fang Yi pushed up the Heavenly Compass. Forming rings of patterns, he blocked the Saint Arrow Marquis's arrow.

“We really were discovered. The Luosha are too alert.”

Thousands of marquises gathered at the east side of the mountain. Their force was large. Even the top figures of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were afraid.

The priest of the Hell Blade Field, Xue Fengling, issued an order. “Activate all Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons into a formation. Fend off the Luosha attacks.”

Immediately, eight Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons rose up. Dense runes appeared. Like eight blazing suns, they radiated with terrifying saintly might.

The Luosha marquis army had thousands of attacks. They all attacked, crashing with the eight Ten-thousand-pattern saint weapons.

Kaboom.

In an instant, the area was turned into a sea of fire from the saintly power.

The Saint Arrow Marquis fired another arrow in another direction. The Saints of the Kunlun's Field were forced to appear too.

There were very few of them, only a dozen Saints.

Wan Zhaoyi was on the battlefield year-round and had led the army against many races. He was experienced with sudden situations. He immediately ordered, “Spiritual Power Saints, immediately form a defensive formation. Martial Saints, activate your Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Those

without, activate your Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and attack the Luosha marquis army.”

Chu Siyuan, the Saint Lady, Goddess Siming, and six other Spiritual Power Saints stood in the center. They were protected by the martial Saints.

A jade book appeared in the Saint Lady’s hands.

“Everyone, put your Spiritual Power in and activate the divine strength of the Confucius Saint Book.”

Then nine powerful Spiritual Power Saints put their powers in. The book flew up, hovering 100 feet in the sky. White saintly light spread from the book. It was actually purifying the evil Qi in the sky.

The pages opened slowly. Dazzling words flew out, forming a sea of words. Some were pressed to the ground. Others flew in the heavens. A saintly voice poured out too. It was like millions of scholars were reciting poetry.

The thousands of attacks from the Luosha marquises were actually blocked by the Confucius Saint Book.

The Luosha Princess grew interested in the hovering Confucius Saint Book. “What a powerful book. It actually blocked the thousands of attacks from the Luosha marquises. What level is this treasure?”

Zhang Ruochen was staring in the direction of the Saints of the Kunlun’s Field.

With Chu Siyuan as the leader, the nine Spiritual Power Saints all paled. Some even spat out blood. Their bodies swayed. They were clearly unable to fend off a second wave of Luosha marquis attacks.

The Confucius Saint Book was indeed powerful. Chu Siyuan was also at the top of the Spiritual Power Saints. However, having nine Saints go against more than 1,000 Luosha marquises was still too hard.

One thousand Luosha marquises could kill a Saint King.

Wan Zhaoyi saw the situation clearly. If they merely defended, the entire Kunlun’s Field would be wiped out.

“Chen Wutian, Sword Saint Jiuyou, charge with me. We must scatter the Luosha marquis camp first.”

Brilliant light shot out of Wan Zhaoyi. The Blue Dragon Saint Armor on his body roared. Then a dozen-foot-long blue dragon was curled up on his body.

Chen Wutian and Sword Saint Jiuyou used their strongest power and charged at the Luosha army with Wan Zhaoyi.

There were thousands of Luosha marquises. Their might was horrible. Anyone who dared to attack them had great courage.

Fang Yi, Xue Fengling, Sword Master Dongliu, and two half-step Saint Kings also charged out of the sea of fire. They attacked the Luosha army from another direction.

Caught off guard, a mass of the Luosha marquises fell. A dozen were turned to ashes. Even more were heavily injured.

Seeing this, the Luosha Princess was furious. A group of idiots! They didn't even establish a formation to fight against the top Saints of three worlds.

She was standing beside Zhang Ruochen and seemed to be observing the battle. In reality, she'd released her Spiritual Power. She was issuing orders to control the battlefield.

However, her Spiritual Power was very strong. She'd reached the Saint King Realm. Thus, no cultivators present sensed this.

The Luosha army immediately formed 36 Nine Nine to One Formations. They were organized neatly on the outside, forming a huge circle. They rotated slowly, crushing toward Wan Zhaoyi, Sword Saint Jiuyou, and the others.

The Nine Nine to One Formation combined the powers of 81 Luosha marquises. Both their defensive and offensive powers were incredible.

One Nine Nine to One Formation was nothing for strong figures like Wan Zhaoyi and Sword Saint Jiuyou. However, the power from 36 of them together was quite terrifying.

More than 1,000 female Luosha stood in the center of the 36 Nine Nine to One Formations. They were all Spiritual Power Saints and kept casting spells. The long-distance attacks

repressed the Saints of the Kunlun's Field, Hell Blade Field, and Purple Mansion Field.

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin. "There must be a powerful figure among the Luosha marquises who is an expert commander. The top figures of three major worlds are actually repressed. If they continue, the three worlds will probably suffer great losses."

The Luosha Princess smiled. "Isn't a good thing to the Guanghan Field if they suffer great losses?"

"When the Luosha army takes care of them, it'll be our turn," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Luosha Princess nodded. "The Luosha army is very strong. We can't counter them. Let's take this chance to retreat and avoid clashing with them directly."

Zhang Ruochen wasn't arrogant and conceited. Naturally, he wouldn't think that he was able to fight thousands of Luosha marquises. Expression solemn, he said, "Let's wait a bit longer. The Heirs of the three worlds won't just wait for death. They must have another step. Isn't it better for both sides to be weakened?"

Zhang Ruochen's words reminded the Luosha Princess. She realized that the three major worlds must have other hidden cards. She had to prepare beforehand too.

Zhang Ruochen sensed a pair of blazing eyes. Thus, he turned around and happened to meet eyes with Martial Saint Canglan.

Her pretty eyes widened and fire rose up within them. She looked furious. When she saw Zhang Ruochen look over, she didn't avert her gaze. Instead, her lips moved and she uttered two syllables.

From her lips, Zhang Ruochen could tell that she said "traitor."

Zhang Ruochen felt scornful. He didn't accept the status of "traitor." It wasn't him who wanted to leave the Kunlun's Field. He only left because he had no choice.

Was he a traitor for fighting for the Guanghan Field?

Before this, the Moon Goddess had helped the Kunlun's Field against the Hell World's invasion. So what did that count as?

If Kunlun doesn't want me, I can go elsewhere, Zhang Ruochen replied by moving his lips.

Martial Saint Canglan ground her teeth in anger. If not for the Luosha Race's fierce attacks, she really wanted to burst out of the camp and teach Zhang Ruochen a lesson.

When Chu Siyuan saw Zhang Ruochen, he was also furious.

In his opinion, Zhang Ruochen had chosen a demonic path in the end. Instead of becoming the people's hero, he became the public enemy of the Kunlun's Field.

If Zhang Ruochen truly thought for the Kunlun's Field, then he should've given into the Empress.

With the Empress' status and magnanimity, she wouldn't continue to make things hard for him.

It wasn't embarrassing to bow down, submit, and apologize to a god.

But Zhang Ruochen just refused to do it. In the end, he became the traitor of the Kunlun's Field.

Faced with Chu Siyuan's eyes, Zhang Ruochen still didn't feel any emotions. In his opinion, Chu Siyuan indeed had commendable traits. He was just, fair, and hated evil.

However, he was a stubborn old man with old-fashioned thoughts. What he thought was the right way and truth was different from Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Five of the Nine Nine to One Formations activated a Tenthousand-pattern Saint Weapon with the complete force. It shattered the defensive runes on Chen Wutian. He was sent flying horizontally and was injured badly.

At the same time, the two half-step Saint Kings of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were also injured horribly. They almost died.

The remaining people were indeed strong. However, they couldn't break through the 36 Nine Nine to One Formations. They were pressed back on all sides and had to retreat, almost dying.

It was clear that their plan to destroy the Luosha marquis camp had failed.

Sensing this, the Saint Lady hurriedly carved a light rune and sent it out. It was a message to the Saints of the Kunlun's Field hiding outside the 99 mountains. She wanted them to hurry over and help.

The Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field also sent out light runes to muster their Saint armies.

# Chapter 1460 - The Third Party Capitalized

Chapter 1460: The Third Party Capitalized

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

All the saints in Whale River basin were paying attention to the fight between the three large fields and Luosha marquises.

The saints from the other four large fields in Shatuo Heaven Domain were all astounded and curious. How did Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu, Wan Zhaoyi and the others go through the Luosha guards and come to the saint mountain where the Merits Record Wall was.

“There’s got to be another road.”

“Let’s go find it out. We can’t let them seize the Merits Record Wall like that.”

...

Two thousand saints from Kunlun’s Field were hiding in the east of Whale River basin, and they were currently led by Qingxiao Heavenly King, Eastern King Chen Yin and White Li Prince and the other seven saints. Although they came from different races, they were all very powerful.

Qingxiao Heavenly King received the signal flare from Saint Lady, then he led the saints to get out of the hidden formation and rushed toward the ninety-nine saint mountains.

“Following the order of two heirs, all the saints head to the thirty-fifth saint mountain to kill Luosha marquises.”

Eight hundred saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field showed up, and every one of them was soaked



in saint light, giving out immense saintly way ripples.

Just when the saints from Kunlun's Field, Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field got to under the ninth saint mountain, the ground cracked as if a giant opened its mouth.

Thick evil sha Qi gushed out. It looked crimson, turning the space dark.

A large group of Luosha armies rushed out from the underground. They yelled and rushed toward the saints from the three fields.

“There's an ambush!”

“Many Luosha marquises are hiding underground, yet we didn't notice them at all.”

The fight among saints started. Two group clashed with each other, and deafening sounds came out, and saint blood was spilled everywhere.

The fight was brutal.

Saints were top-tier beings in every large field, however, many saints were annihilated instantly here.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and looked to the battlefield outside the saint field, “How many Luosha armies are there underground?”

Su Qingling was tense. She said, “Luosha race is great at hiding and burrowing, so they'll hide underground very often.”

Zhang Ruochen felt that Phoenix Nest was nothing but a bait, and that Luosha race wanted to kill all the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields.

Su Qingling asked, “Should we tell the saints from Guanghai Field to come here?”

“Why would you do that? The time prints and space inscriptions haven't been broken yet. If the saints come, they'll be killed anyway. Tell them to stay where they are and not to rush anything so that Luosha race won't notice them. I'll tell them when we need them to make a move.”

Zhang Ruochen still hadn't figured out what was happening, so it'd better to wait till everything was clear first.

Although the saints from the three large fields were stopped, some of them broke out of the encirclement and headed toward the saint mountain where Merits Record Wall was.

More and more saints from the three fields came, and they finally managed to ward off the attacks from Luosha armies. They then started to fight back.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed forward at the space in front of him and brought the corpses into the formation.

There were more than thirty bodies, some of them were Luosha marquises, and some were saints from the three large fields.

Firstly, Zhang Ruochen took a drop of blood from each of the Luosha marquis corpse, and then, he took away their storage bags to collect their valuables.

“Absorb the nutrition to improve your cultivation, Carnivorous Holy Flower.”

“Thank you, my lord.”

The armies from the three fields and Luosha marquises were all devoted to fighting each other, so they didn't have time to collect the fragmented souls, which gave Zhang Ruochen an advantage.

Zhang Ruochen collected the blood gave the corpses of Luosha marquises to Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Zhang Ruochen only collected a small trace of fragmented souls, and then, he destroyed the rest of them to prevent the saints from collecting them.

Zhang Ruochen also collected lots of bottles that contained Luosha blood and fragmented souls, including some saint weapons, pills and runes.

Gradually, the saints from the three fields noticed that.

They were the ones fighting Luosha marquises to death, yet a bystander was capitalizing on it, which infuriated many saints.

What's worse, Luosha marquises didn't try and attack Zhang Ruochen at all.

"You really think you can just sit by and watch the fight?"

An absolute-saint woman from Purple Mansion Field who was thirty years ago was angry. She was very angry, so she led a group of Luosha marquises toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I warn you, don't come anywhere closer. I don't want to join the fight. I just want to refine."

"Refine, my ass."

Many saints were cursing Zhang Ruochen deep down as they all found him shameless. He was totally capitalizing on the fight, yet he claimed that he didn't want to join the fight.

He should be punished!

"Do you really think you can just benefit from us?" The woman said.

Zhang Ruochen took out Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He drew the bow and aimed at the woman, "Don't force me. I'm not interested in the fight at all. If you come closer, then I'll have to kill you."

Both Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were powerful weapons, and the woman was dazed as she felt that she was engulfed in death Qi.

Just as the woman in a Taoist robe was trying to dodge it, Sword Master Dongliu rushed forward and yelled, "No need to fear him. Charge!"

Seeing Sword Master Dongliu, the woman in Taoist cape got much more confident. She pressed forward, and a circular light print with a diameter of dozens of feet showed up, and there were Taoist inscriptions flowing on it.

Whoosh Whoosh!

Ice pillars flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

"Then I'll have to kill you."

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen shot the arrow out, and Shining Sun Arrow flew toward the woman's forehead.

All the seventeen guarding runes on her body were activated, giving out seventeen layers of light.

Bang Bang!

All the guarding runes exploded, and that Taoist woman bounced back.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed a golden arrow and drew the bow again.

Bang!

The golden arrow pierced through the woman's saint body, leaving a huge blood-red hole on her waist.

There was a layer of golden light covering the wound, stopping it from healing, and she bled like hell.

After a short while, the woman fell on the ground, lifeless.

The ice pillars that flew into the formation were diverted and fell on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Sword Master Dongliu who was dashing toward him. He said to Princess Luosha, "That's a very powerful being. Deal with him."

"He's Ning Dongliu, the heir of Purple Mansion Field. Why should I deal with him?"

Princess Luosha was a bit upset as she felt like Zhang Ruochen was using her.

"I'm going to seize the corpses on the battlefield to collect Luosha blood and fragmented souls. Are you going to do that for me?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

There was no way Princess Luosha would do that. Princess Luosha was filled with pride, and she was too noble and elegant to collect the blood and fragmented souls of Luosha corpses. If those royal members of Luosha race saw it, they would laugh at her.

However, Zhang Ruochen would definitely suspect her if she didn't go collect Luosha blood and fragmented souls.

“Okay, I'll go fight Ning Dongliu. Give me half of the Luosha blood and fragmented souls you collect. How about that?” Princess Luosha said.

“No problem,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sword Saint Dongliu rushed out of the space formation and clashed with Sword Master Dongliu.

Both of them were top-tier saints, and sword Qi spread the second they started the fight.

Zhang Ruochen watched the fight between Sword Master Dongliu and Princess Luosha. He nodded, “Incredible sword way accomplishments. He might've almost finished sword eight.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen kept dragging the corpses on the battlefield using his space techniques.

Luosha blood, Luosha fragmented souls, Nine True Saint Dew, Saint weapons and saint pills were all collected by Zhang Ruochen.

The saints who were fighting all got very jealous.

They were the ones fighting, yet Zhang Ruochen was capitalizing on it.

This was not fair.

Some of the great beings from Heaven World were all stunned seeing that.

This was robbery. Shameless robbery.

“Every monk from Heaven World is supposed to fight Luosha race. Does that priest from Guanghan Field have shame? How can he just collect merits when others are fighting?”

Some of the supreme saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Moon Field were furious.

“He'd better not come back to Heaven World alive, otherwise I'll crush every one of his bones.”

“This Saints Merits Battle is so screwed. Even supreme saints will be infuriated.”

# Chapter 1461 - Collecting Corpses

Chapter 1461: Collecting Corpses

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Supreme Saint Jiuling couldn't help but smile. "That Zhang Ruochen is quite interesting. He doesn't follow the script at all."

Ancestor Wu's voice sounded. "In merely one large battle, Zhang Ruochen already collected such a large amount of Luosha blood and souls. In comparison, the Kunlun's Field, Hell Blade Field, and Purple Mansion Field suffered great losses.

"As long as he can reach the Merits Records Wall and exchange the Luosha souls and blood for merits, the Guanghan Field will have a huge advantage. We might not be able to be in the top three, but we can at least get fourth place."

Supreme Saint Jiuling nodded. "Now, my only worry is the Luosha Princess. This variable is too large!"

On the side, Emperor Jimie shook his head. Chuckling, he said, "The Luosha Princess is indeed a variable but also Zhang Ruochen's biggest trump card. As long as he has this card, he'd be able to face any dangers in Zuling Field. He might even be able to get first place, let alone enter the top three."

Hearing his words, the hearts of all the Supreme Saints jumped.

Was it possible to become first place of the Saints Merits Battle?

If Zhang Ruochen led the Guanghan Field to the first place, they wouldn't become the newest battleground. It would be okay even if they'd lost the Supreme Saint and Saint King Merits Battle.

Of course, the Great Devil Ten Square Field, Eight Ministry Field, and Purple Mansion Field had obvious strengths. They had countless times more Saints than the Guanghan Field.

If the Guanghan Field wanted to become first of the Saints Merits Battle, it was practically impossible.

Before, they had no chance at all. Now, they had a sliver of chance.

“No wonder the Moon Goddess fought to have him come to the Guanghan Field. He is indeed extraordinary. My hopes for him grow more and more. He must become stronger. If he kills the Luosha Princess, his name will ring throughout all the worlds.”

Supreme Saint Manjian grew nervous. He focused on the area where the Phoenix Nest was located.

The Supreme Saints of the Kunlun's Field all fell silent.

If Zhang Ruochen had represented the Kunlun's Field, they would have a huge advantage on the battlefield with his abilities. They wouldn't be struggling at the brink of death like now.

Unfortunately, the sovereign of the Kunlun's Field was Empress Chi Yao. Even Supreme Saints like them wouldn't be able to change the Empress' mind.

The battle of the three worlds against the Luosha army intensified. With every breath, a Saint fell dead on the battleground.

Zhang Ruochen indeed didn't join the battle. He just collected corpses on the side.

Su Qingling also helped. She kept taking treasures from the corpses and was very busy. She never thought that she could collect merits like this from the extremely dangerous battlefield.



The merits were coming too easily.

Was this a fake Saints Merits Battle?

On the battlefield, Martial Saint Canglan glared and demanded, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re shameless!”

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Even if you joined the Guanghan Field, you’re still part of the Heaven World,” Martial Saint Canglan said. “When facing the Luosha, shouldn’t you work with us and kill the enemy together?”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged. “The Luosha haven’t attacked me. What can I do?”

Martial Saint Canglan was also dumbfounded. Were the Luosha all blind? Couldn’t they see that b\*stard Zhang Ruochen? Or did the Luosha think the Saints of the three major worlds were more threat and would go for Zhang Ruochen after taking care of them?”

“Even if the Luosha hasn’t attacked you, you shouldn’t hide on the side and collect treasures and merits,” Martial Saint Canglan said. “We killed those Luosha marquises. The merits belong to us.”

Zhang Ruochen clearly didn’t agree with her view. “It’s your fault for not collecting it. Do I have to return the treasures and merits I picked up from the ground? Collect it if you can. I won’t rob you. After all, we had a relationship before.”

“You...”

Martial Saint Canglan was furious now. She regretted even more that she’d pleaded forgiveness with the Empress for her. This traitor deserved to be ripped to shreds.

Suddenly, her eyes narrowed. Zhang Ruochen had actually pulled back the Clear Sky Bow and shot an arrow at her.

Poof.

A third marquis behind her was shot by the Shining Sun Arrow. Blood splattered, dyeing half of Martial Saint Canglan’s body red.

While she'd been furious, that third marquis had snuck to her side and brandished his sword. He'd almost cut off her head.

Thankfully, Zhang Ruochen had killed him with an arrow. Otherwise, the consequences would've been unimaginable.

Collecting the Shining Sun Arrow, Zhang Ruochen said, "No need to thank me. Just take it as a gift."

Martial Saint Canglan stared at Zhang Ruochen, feeling troubled. She didn't know if she should hate or thank this guy.

Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Twist to take the third marquis's body. He returned to the spatial maze and tossed it at Su Qingling.

The Luosha Princess's battle with Sword Master Dongliu had already ended.

Sword Saint Dongliu was heavily injured. His chest had a huge bloody hole.

However, he used a lifesaving tactic and fled into the camp of the Purple Mansion Field to escape death.

He swallowed a healing Divine Pill and used all his strength to refine it with his Holy Qi. Saintly light appeared over the wound and it healed slowly.

"Is she really the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine? How can she be so strong?"

Sword Saint Dongliu had never met someone as strong as the Luosha Princess in the same realm. She was like a mountain standing before him. He was powerless against her.

Fang Yi had fought with the Luosha Princess before and knew how strong she was. "There's no need to offend the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine for now. Take care of the Luosha marquis army first. When we're free, the two of us can work together and bring her down."

Sword Saint Dongliu nodded and pointed at the Luosha army. "The 36 Nine Nine to One Formations work together and can convert each other's powers. They're like one entirety. Not even first step Half Saints can break through them. But if we

don't break through them, we'll always be at a disadvantage. How about we use the divine weapon?"

Fang Yi shook his head. "Do not use the divine weapon so quickly. Actually, we can also build a formation and use it for power to converge toward me. I'll activate the White Micro Star's power. Perhaps we'll be able to destroy the 36 Nine Nine to One Formations."

A moment later, more than 100 Saints from the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field gathered around Fang Yi. They stood in mysterious locations, like the foundation of a formation.

As they continued to release saintly power, formation prints showed under their feet.

Whoosh!

The power from more than 100 Saints were sent toward Fang Yi and into his body.

Next, the White Micro Star on Fang Yi's forehead shone with brilliant light. The shadow of an enormous star appeared above his head.

The vast saintly might shook the entire space.

In the other direction, Chu Siyuan, the Saint Lady, Goddess Siming, and a group of Spiritual Power Saints who'd just arrived also sent out their Spiritual Power to activate the Confucius Saint Book.

Next, the Confucius Saint Book and White Micro Star projection attacked the 36 Nine Nine to One Formations together.

Kaboom.

The 36 Nine Nine to One Formations were destroyed. Hundreds of Luosha marquises were killed, exploding into clouds of blood.

Other than that, a large group of Luosha marquises were hurt too.

After this attack, Chu Siyuan, the Saint Lady, Goddess Siming and the others used up their Spiritual Qi. They all sat down on the ground and started cultivating to recover.

Fang Yi and the 100 Saints also exerted a lot of energy. Faces white as paper, they sat down and circulated energy to recover their strength.

However, the other Saints of the three worlds were overjoyed. They cheered while charging at the Luosha army.

The Luosha army didn't continue to fight with them. Instead, they retreated quickly to the south side of the mountain.

At the same time, a mass of saint weapons flew out of the south side. They attacked the Saints of the three worlds, protecting the Luosha army as they retreated.

Seeing this, suspicion filled Zhang Ruochen's eyes again. "Who is commanding the Luosha army?" he murmured to himself.

The Luosha Princess stood beside Zhang Ruochen. A solemn look filled her eyes. "There must be a very intelligent person in the Luosha army. If not for this person, the Luosha would've suffered greatly in this battle. Now, it seems like the three worlds have suffered more."

"Could it be the legendary Luosha Princess?" Su Qingling asked.

"Luosha Princess?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"I heard that the Luosha Princess is the daughter of one Luosha god," Su Qingling explained. "Not only is she very talented, she's also extremely wise. She's only a Saint, but she became the general for the Zuling Field attack. On this battlefield, it's rare for even the old figures of the Heaven World to defeat her. In 30 short years, she destroyed the Zuling Field.

"My grandfather once said that this was the Luosha Princess's first time commanding an attack on a great world. It's terrifying to have such achievements. In the future, she'll definitely become stronger. By then, probably no one in the

Heaven World would be her match. This is why the Heaven World will use all its might to kill her before she can mature.”

“So the Zuling Field has someone so powerful,” Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself.

Sensing something wrong and worried that Zhang Ruochen would suspect her, the Luosha Princess hurriedly changed the topic. “The Luosha army has retreated. We might become the target of the Saints from the three worlds. What is your plan?”

“The great worlds aren’t united completely,” Zhang Ruochen said. “They have competitive relationships, so it’s much easier to fight them than the Luosha army.”

“Seems like you already have a plan!”

“It’s not really a plan. It’s just that with us two, there’s no need to fear them. The Guanghan Field and Great Devil Ten Square Field have a large group of Saints gathered at Great Whale River. They won’t dare to openly do anything to us, just like how you didn’t kill Sword Saint Dongliu.”

“Seems logical.”

The Luosha Princess smiled. Then she sent Spiritual Power to issue an order to the Luosha army. “Immediately capture the Heir of the Great Devil Ten Square Field, the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. I want her alive.”

# Chapter 1462 - Accusation

Chapter 1462: Accusation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Luosha armies had all retreated and left the south of the saint mountains.

However, the saints from Purple Mansion Field, Blade Hell Field and Kunlun's Field didn't let their guard down, instead, they stationed some of their saints in the south to prevent Luosha armies from coming back.

Some of the saints walked toward Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, ready to accuse them of their wrongdoings.

“Get the hell out, Zhang Ruochen,” Xu Zehai yelled.

Xu Zehai was a half-step saint king from Purple Mansion Field, and he was more than seven hundred years ago. Dragon and tiger Qi permeated from him as he walked.

Sword Master Dongliu was healing, so Xu Zehai was temporarily the leader of Purple Mansion Field.

Zhang Ruochen sat in the space formation and said calmly, “Who are you?”

“Xu Zehai from Purple Mansion Field.”

“How dare you offend me? I'll kill you now.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Blue Sky Bow and drew the bow. Suddenly, blue saint light emerged above his head, and Shining Sun Arrow shone.

The scene of ‘blue sky and shining sun’ showed up.

Xu Zehai cursed Zhang Ruochen deep down again. He was the one accusing Zhang Ruochen, yet Zhang Ruochen threatened

his life after only one sentence.

The priest from Guanghan Field was too hostile. There was no way to reason with him.

Xu Zehai saw the power of Blue Sky Bow before, so he knew he wouldn't be able to dodge it if he got too close. He then performed body techniques to distance himself from it.

And then, Zhang Ruochen aimed Shining Sun Arrow at a couple of other saints from Purple Mansion Field, and they all took large steps back like Xu Zehai.

This was a disgrace. They were the ones going to accuse him, yet they were scared to run off. Even the saints from Purple Mansion Field felt embarrassed.

Xu Zehai said, "Don't be so arrogant, Zhang Ruochen! It's not going to end well for you to go against Purple Mansion Field. Give me the Luosha blood and fragmented souls first, otherwise, I can't guarantee your safety."

"Are you waging a war against Guanghan Field?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Xu Zehai said, "Of course not. Both Purple Mansion Field and Guanghan Field are subsidiary mortal fields of Heaven World. We should team up and fight Luosha race together instead of fighting each other. However, you killed Saint Yanshu and robbed our victory achievements, then you should pay for it."

"Saint Yanshu? Who's Saint Yanshu?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"The absolute saint from Purple Mansion Field you just shot. Are you trying to deny that?" Xu Zehai yelled.

Purple Mansion Field wouldn't fight Guanghan Field directly, so they were just trying to find a reason to get Zhang Ruochen's Luosha blood and fragmented souls.

Zhang Ruochen said, "She was an absolute saint from Purple Mansion Field, someone prominent, I see. Now I have to settle the score with you."

Xu Zehai was furious, "You, settling the score with us? Have you no shame?"

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn, “That Saint Yanshu from your field couldn’t be greedier. She tried to kill me and rob my Luosha blood and fragmented souls, fortunately, I’m powerful enough to save my own life. Are the monks from Purple Mansion Field all gangsters? Why can’t you collect the Luosha blood and fragmented souls yourselves?”

Who robbed who?

Xu Zehai’s face blushed as he didn’t know how to respond.

Even Su Qingling found it too preposterous. After all, they were the ones who took advantage of the three fields this time.

But then again, it was beating someone at their own game. There was no point reasoning with Purple Mansion Field.

Chen Yin in Kunlun’s Field said, “When has Zhang Ruochen become so shameless? He’s bringing disgrace to Sword Master Xuanji and Emperor Ming.”

Wan Zhaoyi said, “When Zhang Ruochen has shame, people have a way with him, but now, he just got more terrifying.”

The saints from Purple Mansion Field were all angered by Zhang Ruochen. They yelled, “Stop wasting time talking to him. Let’s kill him together first.”

Hundreds of saints mobilized saint Qi at the same time to form a saint spell.

Powerful saint Qi ripples burst out, slightly shaking the earth. It would be disastrous as they performed those hundreds of saint spells.

Xue Wuye frowned and said, “Zhang Ruochen went too far this time. Does he really think they can ward off those hundreds of saint spells?”

“He deserves it,” Chu Siyuan said.

Qingxiao Heavenly King, Saint Lady, Martial Saint Canglan and some other saints all looked worried.

After all, the bond between Zhang Ruochen and Kunlun’s Field was too strong. He had his brothers, friends, confidants and previous officials from Sacred Central Empire there.



Zhang Ruochen said, “What are you saying? Are you really going to kill me to seize my Luosha blood and fragmented souls? Don’t do it, I warn, otherwise you’re going to bear grave consequences.”

“Kill him.”

Xu Zehaip performed a saint spell first, and then, one hundred and eight phantoms of saint beasts showed up, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen. Each phantom of the saint beasts contained terrific power, and they were about to tear this saint mountain apart.

Meanwhile, those hundreds of saints also performed their saint spells against Zhang Ruochen.

However, those saint spells didn’t even touch Zhang Ruochen, instead, they were turned around after entering space formation and rushed back to the saints from Purple Mansion Field.

Boom!

More than forty saints from Purple Mansion Field were killed, and hundreds of them were injured. It looked tragic.

The saints from Kunlun’s Field and Blade Hell Field were all astounded.

Sword Master Dongliu who was healing in the distance was so pissed that he spit blood out, exacerbating his wounds.

Xu Zehai climbed out of the fire, and his body was splashed. There were hundreds of holes on his saint blouse. He pointed at Zhang Ruochen for a long while but couldn’t even squeeze a word out.

“I told you there’d be grave consequences, but none of you listen,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Martial Saint Canglan bit her lips and looked at the space around Zhang Ruochen, “What a cunning guy. He set up a space formation around him beforehand.”

Chen Yin also frowned. He asked, “What should we do now? Is there any way to get our victory achievements back?”

“How? Even if we do, we’re going to pay a huge price for that,” Wan Zhaoyi said.

Martial Saint Canglan said, “Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field won’t stop trying. No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen is, he can’t defend himself against the saints from two large fields.”

“Let’s go get Merits Records Wall first.”

Wan Zhaoyi had his eyes on Merits Records Wall, and then, he went around the Merits Records Wall and walked toward the peak with Martial Saint Canglan and Sword Master Jiuyou.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I need to warn you. It’s very dangerous going up there, and you’ll be killed if you’re not completely careful.”

Martial Saint Canglan didn’t care about Zhang Ruochen’s warning.

Seeing the saints from Kunlun’s Field going for the Merits Records Wall, the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field all stopped fighting Zhang Ruochen. They sent out more than ten saints to stop the saints from Kunlun’s Field.

Zhang Ruochen sighed seeing the saints from Kunlun’s Field, Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field rushing toward the peak of the saint mountain.

He’d already done everything he could.

Saint Lady knew Zhang Ruochen much better than everyone else. She felt a danger coming seeing Zhang Ruochen sigh. She released a trace of mind power to ask him, “Can you tell me what dangers there are in the saint mountain?”

Zhang Ruochen felt like he traveled back in time hearing Saint Lady’s voice.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Saint Lady’s clean and intelligent eyes and said, “Time kills the best. One second, then you’re hoary.”

Saint Lady pondered Zhang Rouchen’s message for a short while, and she immediately understood that. She then

transmitted her voice to Wan Zhaoyi, Martial Saint Canglan and Sword Master Jiuyou.

The half-step saint, Xu Zehai rushed to the front of Wan Zhaoyi and Martial Saint Canglan and sneered, “Do you really think you can get Merits Record Wall?”

An absolute saint from Blade Hell Field yelled, “Kunlun’s Field is the weakest among Shatuo Seven Fields, so even if you manage to the Merits Records Wall, you can’t hold it. Let’s team up and defeat Guanghan Field, shall me?”

Sword Master Jiuyou was furious seeing how arrogant the saints from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field were. If he were still in Kunlun’s Field, nobody dared talk to him like this.

Just as Sword Master Jiuyou was about to stab them, he received the voice from Saint Lady.

“What?”

Sword Saint Jiuyou’s body trembled and immediately stopped moving forward. He then rushed down the mountain as quickly as possible.

Wan Zhaoyi and Martial Saint Canglan were also dazed, and they rushed down before Sword Saint Jiuyou did.

Xu Zehai chuckled, “I haven’t even started to fight you yet, you guys are already running. Do you really think you can get Merits Records Wall with such guts?”

# Chapter 1463 - Armies Of Seven Fields Gather

Chapter 1463: Armies Of Seven Fields Gather

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field didn't sense any danger. They continued climbing, wanting to get the Merits Records Wall as soon as possible.

Xu Zehai felt himself getting weaker and finally realized something was wrong. Looking inside, he discovered that his bodily functions were failing quickly. His vitality was almost completely gone.

Instantly, shock filled his face. He let out an unwilling voice. "My life... It shouldn't... Ah... How...?"

Thud.

His vitality was all used up. Xu Zehai fell down heavily, turning into a dead body.

"Oh my, how did I become so old?"

"What's going on? My face is covered in wrinkles."

...

...

The other Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field sensed something wrong too. They all fled down the mountain.

Unfortunately, none of them survived. They all died from old age along the way.

It was merely climbing the mountain, but it took their entire lives.

The dozen Saints that had climbed the mountain were all of the top figures of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. Most of them were Absolute Saints. After they'd died, the two worlds were practically devoid of Absolute Saints.

It was too strange!

They didn't see any dangers, but the Absolute Saints and half-step Saint Kings had all died on the mountain. The Saints of the two fields were terrified.

“Could it be that the Pluto Race of the Hell World be hiding in the mountain and used a curse to kill them all?”

“It could be the Death Race. Death Qi can also kill people without traces.”

The Saints present all thought of the Death Race and Pluto Race, two of the three Hell World races. Their tactics were very strange and caught people off guard.

Wan Zhaoyi, Sword Saint Jiuyou, and Martial Saint Canglan all rushed down the mountain and into the camp of the Kunlun's Field.

Martial Saint Canglan had lost 300 years of life. She still looked very young, with milky and shining skin, but her hair had turned white.

She couldn't compose herself. Her delicate frame kept trembling.

Losing 300 years was too high of a price. It couldn't threaten her life, but it would definitely affect her cultivation.

To her, time was very tight.

Wan Zhaoyi's physical body was a Saint, so his lifespan was longer than other Saints. Thus, his appearance hadn't changed after losing 300 years. He still looked energetic and spirited.

The unluckiest was Sword Saint Jiuyou.

After fleeing the mountain, he'd become extremely aged. His black hair turned white and almost all his white hair fell down.

His skin was wrinkly and covered in age spots, like a yellow piece of bark.

He stumbled as he walked too and almost fell to the ground.

His three disciples rushed over to help him. “Master, what happened?”

Sword Saint Jiuyou pushed his body up and waved his hand. Then he took out a ten-thousand-year-old divine medicine. He stuffed it in his mouth and sat down to refine and absorb it.

Wan Zhaoyi stared at the towering mountain in deep thought. After a long while, he said, “It’s the power of time. The time flow of the saint mountain far surpasses the outside world. I wasn’t careful enough this time!”

“It must be Zhang Ruochen’s trap. Only he can control time,” Wang Lie, Sword Saint Jiuyou’s first disciple, said angrily.

Yan Yulong, Sword Saint Jiuyou’s second disciple, took out a sword and pointed in Zhang Ruochen’s direction. “Master, Little Saint God, and Martial Saint Canglan were almost killed by him. What are we waiting for? Kill him now.”

The other Saints of the Kunlun’s Field were also furious. They declared they wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen.

The Saint Lady stepped out and stopped them. “If Zhang Ruochen established the time power in the mountain, he would’ve taken the Merits Records Wall long ago. He wouldn’t be stuck outside still. Can’t you all calm down? Don’t blame everything on Zhang Ruochen.”

She didn’t say that Zhang Ruochen had alerted her earlier, thus saving Wan Zhaoyi, Martial Saint Canglan, and Sword Saint Jiuyou.

She was clear that if the people knew that she had interacted with Zhang Ruochen, it would cause rumors. She would be marginalized and forced out. She might not even be able to stay in the Kunlun’s Field.

Wan Zhaoyi and Sword Saint Jiuyou were extremely wise. Naturally, they could guess that the Saint Lady had received the information from Zhang Ruochen.

However, they stayed silent and didn't say anything.

After all, they owed the Saint Lady greatly now. How could they expose her?

Heavenly King Qingxiao couldn't help but step out and mutter, "My junior brother had warned them. This counts as being moral. What else do you want? Plus, even if you can go up, are you my junior brother's match? You'd just be giving yourself up to die."

"Qingxiao, how dare you still call Zhang Ruochen your junior brother?" Wang Lie said. "Do you want to betray the Kunlun's Field too? Have you already joined the Guanghan Field secretly?"

"Stop talking...cough..."

Sword Saint Jiuyou reprimanded them. His voice had aged greatly. He couldn't help but cough.

Wang Lie didn't dare to continue speaking. He hurriedly stooped down and helped Jiuyou up. "Master, are you alright?"

"After taking the divine medicine," Sword Saint Jiuyou said, "I can live for three or four more years. I won't die for now."

"Three...four..."

The voices of the three major disciples trembled.

Sword Saint Jiuyou didn't seem to care. It was like three or four years were no different from three or four hundred years. "The less time there is, the greater the motivation. Perhaps I'll quickly comprehend the way to reach the Saint King Realm."

The camps of the Heaven Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were in chaos.

Sword Saint Dongliu and Fang Yi stopped healing themselves and came out to calm people down.

Priest Xue Fengling from the Hell Blade Field entered the mountain personally to check. After finding the reason why the dozen Saints died in the mountain, he told Sword Saint Dongliu and Fang Yi.

Faced with the power of time, no matter how talented Sword Saint Dongliu and Fang Yi were, they were still helpless.

Inside the spatial maze, the Luosha Princess studied the Saint Lady. “Your little lover is quite interesting. Her Spiritual Power is pretty strong and has that Confucius Saint Book. Seems quite powerful.”

“Nonsense,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Our relationship isn’t as complicated as you think.”

“Unfortunately, I heard your little conversation with her!” the Luosha Princess said.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened

Zhang Ruochen and the Saint Lady’s Spiritual Power had both reached level 54, but when they used telepathic messages, the Luosha Princess still intercepted them.

She was too powerful.

He had no secrets before her.

“How about you have her lend me the Confucius Saint Book for a while?”

“You better not get any ideas about her,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Otherwise, our cooperation will end now.”

Earlier, the Luosha Princess had only been testing the Saint Lady’s weight in Zhang Ruochen’s heart. If she wanted to control Zhang Ruochen, she had to have more trump cards.

The Luosha Princess smiled and stopped speaking.

In the distance, vast Holy Qi flooded to the foot of the mountain.

The Saint armies of the Great Devil Ten Square Field, Eight Ministry Field, Tianmu Field, and Guanghan Field rushed out of the Holy Qi. They each took one position and surrounded the entire mountain.

Earlier, when the armies of the three worlds had hurried over to help, they’d already exposed the path that Zhang Ruochen and the Luosha Princess had opened. Thus, they followed tightly and arrived here.



The Great Devil Ten Square Field had the most Saints—more than 10,000. They had a great presence, but they were hidden inside a demonic cloud. They didn't show their true bodies and were very mysterious.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes moved around. "The army of the Great Devil Ten Square Field have arrived. Won't you regroup with them."

"No hurry."

The Luosha Princess smiled and continued, "The Saints of the Guanghan Field didn't seem to have listened to your order. They still hurried over."

Zhang Ruochen had already noticed the army of the Guanghan Field, so his brows furrowed.

The situation was very odd now. Murderous intents were hidden. The Guanghan Field Saints should be hiding instead of exposing themselves so quickly.

Among the Guanghan Field Saints, Zhang Ruochen saw Wu Hao.

Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng walked toward the spatial maze. They stopped at the edge and talked to Zhang Ruochen, asking about the situation.

Zhang Ruochen didn't hide anything. He told them everything that he knew.

"The priest is the Time and Space Descendant," Wen Shucheng said. "You should have a way to decode the time formation, right?"

"Yes, but it'll take a long time," Zhang Ruochen said. "Also..."

"Also what?" Wu Hao asked.

"The Guanghan Field has small numbers. Even if I decode the time formation, we might not be able to get the Merits Records Wall. It's better not to decode it."

Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng exchanged glances and frowned at the same time.

The Luosha Princess smiled. “Then, let’s go get the treasures from the Phoenix Nest.”

Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng both stared at her. “Who is she?”

“She says she’s the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.”

Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng were taken aback. They studied her carefully.

The moment their eyes met the Luosha Princess’s eyes, their souls were attacked. They lost balance and almost fell to the ground.

However, Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng weren’t ordinary Saints. They had treasures that protected their minds. They quickly recovered and retreated pathetically.

“So impolite. How can you stare at a girl like this?” The Luosha Princess giggled.

Fear filled Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng’s eyes. They realized that the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was indeed a terrifying figure. They didn’t dare look at her eyes again.

# Chapter 1464 - Carve the Time Mark

Chapter 1464: Carve the Time Mark

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wen Shusheng kept sweating as he was worried, “Doesn’t Zhang Ruochen know that teaming up with Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine will put himself in grave dangers?”

Wu Hao was still very calm, “If Guanghan Field cooperate with Great Devil Ten Square Field, it’ll be an easy task to get Merits Records Wall.”

He then proposed the idea.

To Wu Hao, Guanghan Field wasn’t even a competitor to Great Devil Ten Square Field, after all, Great Devil Ten Square Field was extremely powerful, so there was no way it would be ranked the last in Merits Battle.

If Guanghan Field could form an alliance with Great Devil Ten Square Field, it would be greatly benefited, and perhaps it had a chance of getting the second place in Saints Merits Battle.

Whoosh!

A signal flare flew from outside the saint mountain and landed on Princess Luosha’s hand.

“Your highness, I’ve captured Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine with the help of ten first marquises.”

It was Lord Lingquan who sent the message.

“Why is that bugger here.”

Princess Luosha knew that Lord Lingquan was trying to be attentive, but she was also worried that he might mess up her plan.

Inside the signal flare floated the picture of Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, which looked so real as if it were a soul shadow of Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

Princess Luosha's eyes glinted wickedly seeing that picture.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the signal flare in Princess Luosha's hand and asked, "What happened?"

Princess Luosha pinched her fingers and said, "Nothing. It's just a pursuer who's worried that you might subdue me, so he sent a message to show some concerns. So sticking his nose into my business."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Someone dares pursue the concubine of a devil emperor?"

"Well, I'm too attractive, so there're always people trying to pursue me, which is so annoying."

Princess Luosha crushed the signal flare and said, "Let's team up! I'll go warn those from Great Evil Ten Square Field first so that they know who their friends are."

Princess Luosha walked out of the space formation and toward the saints from Great Evil Ten Square Field.

Every step she took, her face, body and temperament were all changing, and in the end, she looked exactly like Spiritual Flame Evil Concubine.

Zhang Ruochen thought, "She's changing her body, and she did it better than Traceless thirty-six Changes."

Wu Hao couldn't be happier after teaming up with Great Evil Ten Square Field. He smiled, "This is normal. As the heir of a large field, she'll naturally become the top target of Hell World, so she needs to hide herself by changing her appearance."

"Our priest is impressive. He managed to team up with Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. Seems like Guanghan

Field has a chance of getting into top three in this Saints Merits Battle.”

Zhang Ruochen watched Princess Luosha closely.

Princess Luosha walked into the team of Great Devil Ten Square Field and took off her mask, taking out a black token.

The saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field all saluted to her.

The monks from Heaven World were all speechless after seeing Princess Luosha’s scheming.

Supreme Saint Nine Spiritus sighed on Moon God Mountain, “Princess Luosha practiced Thousand-face Technique from Luosha race. She did it so well that none of the saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field noticed who she really was.”

“The mind power of Princess Luosha was already at saint king level. Even if she didn’t perform Thousand-face Technique, it’s not easy job for those saints to see through her,” Emperor Jimie said.

Wu Zu said, “Even Great Devil Ten Square Field has fall into her hands. There’s no need for this Saints Merits Battle to continue anymore. Those saints from Shatuo Seven Fields are not Princess Luosha’s match. If they keep the battle going, all the saints from the seven fields will be annihilated.”

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits said, “We’re not allowed to interrupt with Saints Merits Battle. We have to wait for Gods’ instructions.”

“There’s no way that Gods don’t know such a large group of Luosha marquises have entered Zuling Field, unfortunately, Gods haven’t given their oracles. Do they want all the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields to die?”

Everyone was gloomy on Moon God Mountain.

A devil emperor from Great Devil Ten Square Field yelled in a golden palace, “Damn Luo Sha. She tricked the saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field using Qianxu Demonic Emperor’s token.”

Seventeen years ago, Qianxu Demonic Emperor died in the astral sky beside Zuling Field, and Princess Luosha managed to seize his token.

With the token of Qianxu Demonic Emperor and her cunning skills, no saints were able to see through who she was.

The supreme saints from Shatuo Seven Fields didn't want to watch their saints die while they didn't do anything about it, so they all rushed to Merits Godly Palace to ask Gods to temporarily stop Saints Merits Battle first.

“The battle must go on, otherwise, all the Shatuo Seven Fields will become battlefields.”

The Gods from Shatuo Seven Fields were all in Gods Merits Battle instead of Heaven World, so they had no idea what was going on in Zuling Field.

Which was why the supreme saints couldn't do anything knowing that their saints might be annihilated.

Princess Luosha walked back to the space formation with the face of Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. She smiled and said, “I've already told the saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field that we're going to team up from now on. As long as you break the time formation and space formation in the saint mountain, we'll share Merits Records Wall.”

After learning that, even Wen Shusheng who was on guard against Princess Luosha smiled.

Guanghan Field might win big time in this Saints Merits Battle.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the saint mountain.

There were space marks in the saint mountain. Some of them were floating in the air while some were underground. They were arranged in a very mysterious way.

Every time mark was like a light spot, and when they were connected, they changed the time rules in this area.

Zhang Ruochen didn't break the formation, instead, he read and tried to comprehend those time marks.

“If I can write the same time marks, then I might be able to make my enemies age ten years instantly.”

There were similar time marks on ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’, and Zhang Ruochen started to cross-reference the two kinds of time marks.

Zhang Ruochen entered an abstruse realm, and the scenes around him had all disappeared.

There were time marks everywhere, and they were all flowing toward the same direction like a river.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the time river and started to draw some engravings which could make time flow faster.

Time marks were created naturally, so it was extremely difficult for a time monk to successfully draw time marks.

Failed.

Failed.

...

He drew five hundred and sixty-eight times in total, but none of them were a success.

However, he didn’t give up, instead, he kept studying and comprehending the time marks.

To the saints from the seven large fields, Zhang Ruochen was behaving bizarrely as he looked very childish using his fingers to draw circles. Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen was facing the saint mountain instead of them, otherwise they would think Zhang Ruochen was provoking them.

Both Sword Master Dongliu and Fang Yi had fully recovered.

“Guanghan Field and Great Devil Ten Square Field have formed an alliance, and they had become the greatest power in Zuling Field,” Fang Yi said.

Sword Master Dongliu said, “Even if they’ve teamed up, there’s no way they can defeat the other five fields. They’re not going to find it easy to have the Merits Records Wall all to themselves.”

Three days after.

Zhang Ruochen was still standing there, drawing circles, but the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields had lost their patience.

“Go get the Phoenix Nest deep in the ninety-nine saint mountains first. There might be a great opportunity which can further improve our strength.”

Both Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu were defeated by Princess Luosha, so they really wanted to obtain the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Every field of Shatuo Seven Fields sent out a team of elites heading toward the ninety-nine saint mountains.

Most of the saints were staying at the bottom of the mountain not just to get Merits Record Wall, but to fight Luosha race.

After another five days of trying, Zhang Ruochen finally made some progress.

As Zhang Ruochen drew the circles, his fingers started to gleam.

“Finally!”

Zhang Ruochen guffawed.

And then, Zhang Ruochen drew more than ten marks consecutively, and nodded after making sure that he mastered it.

“I can make my enemies age immediately after mastering the time-acceleration marks. If I can master the time-slowness prints, I might be able to make time and space valuable.”

Zhang Ruochen made up his mind that he would spend more time studying time marks after the Merits Battle was over.

As he looked out, he found there were several times more saints at the bottom of the saint mountain.

There were ten thousand saints from Guanghai Field.

As for Great Devil Ten Square Field, there were more than fifty thousand saints.



Zhang Ruochen felt more and more in danger seeing so many saints come to Phoenix Nest.

However, he wasn't strong enough to change the situation completely, so he had to keep improving his strength. The stronger he got, the more advantages he would have.

"I've been practicing drawing time marks and refining Nine True Saint Dew for days. I'm approaching the upper-stage true saint."

Zhang Ruochen had calculated before that he could rival 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine' once he reached the upper stage of true saints.

However, Zhang Ruochen still felt that 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine' still had some hidden skills as none of them, including Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu, managed to force her to show her real power.

This woman was an enigma.

Which was why advancing to an upper-stage true saint was only a short-term goal for Zhang Ruochen. He needed to become a pinnacle true saint or even an absolute saint to suppress 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine'.

Zhang Ruochen took out Abyss Ancient Sword and performed Twelve Hours Sword Technique to break the time formation.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the peak of the saint mountain while crushing all the time marks.

# Chapter 1465 - Snatch The Merits Records Wall

Chapter 1465: Snatch The Merits Records Wall

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

One day while Zhang Ruochen was decoding the time and space formations, a large group Saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields arrived at the Great Whale River Territory.

More and more armies gathered at the foot of the Merits Records Wall.

After ten full days, Zhang Ruochen finally decoded most of the time and space runes. He was only around 100 feet away.

The Saints of the seven worlds were already getting restless at the foot of the mountain. It seemed like they would charge up to the top at any time.

The Luosha Princess snickered inwardly. She saw this as a chance to weaken the Shatuo Seven Fields. They would fight each other. In the end, the Luosha army could destroy them all.

Zhang Ruochen naturally noticed the other Saints. He discovered they were getting impatient. Once the time and space formations were completely decoded, battle would be inevitable.

However, the Luosha marquises were stationed on the south side. They could hurry over instantly.

The generals of the seven worlds are probably frustrated too, Zhang Ruochen thought. Not fighting would mean that the Merits Records Wall would be taken by another world. Fighting would mean getting attacked by the Luosha.

He stopped and sent a message to Su Qingling and Bu Ji. “You two, return immediately to the Guanghan Field camp.”

Behind him, the Luosha Princess intercepted Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power. She was analyzing his intent when she sensed the space tremble.

Zhang Ruochen disappeared from the spot.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen charged into the time formation that hadn’t been fully decoded yet. He flashed four times and reached the Merits Records Wall.

The Luosha Princess guessed his intentions. Eyes gleaming sharply, she thought, This guy...

The Merits Records Wall was 33 feet tall and translucent. It seemed to be made out of saintly jade and contained a mysterious strength that connected to the rules of the world.

The Great Devil Ten Square Field.

The Eight Ministry Field.

The Purple Mansion Field.

The Hell Blade Field.

The Tianmu Field.

The Kunlun’s Field.

The Guanghan Field.

The seven worlds were listed from top to bottom. There was a number that represented the merits each world had. The Great Devil Ten Square Field had the highest number. The Guanghan Field had the lowest.

The four Merits Records Walls of Zuling Field weren’t independent. Instead, they were strongly connected.

If merits were exchanged for in the western world, the number and rank would also show on the other three walls.

Of course, the other three had already been destroyed, so only this wall could exchange merits.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Merits Records Wall. Letting out a roar, a burst of energy exploded from him, forming a

whirlpool.

“Rise.”

He lifted the Merits Records Wall slowly and placed it in his spatial ring.

He used the Spatial Move again and rushed out of the time formation. Standing at the middle of the mountain, he used the Great Spatial Move and vanished from the spot.

The Saints of the seven worlds all froze. When they recovered, Zhang Ruochen had already taken the Merits Records Wall away.

“What happened? Zhang Ruochen took the wall without decoding the time formation completely?”

“Does Zhang Ruochen want to monopolize the wall?”

“Zhang Ruochen went deep within the 99 mountains. Chase him! We must take the Merits Records Wall back.”

“Kill Zhang Ruochen. I hated him long ago.”

...

Even Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng of Guanghan Field were shocked. Didn't they make an agreement with the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine for the two worlds to work together and share the Merits Records Wall?

Why did Zhang Ruochen do this?

Did he think that the Guanghan Field alone could preserve the Merits Records Wall?

Zhang Ruochen had already escaped. Wu Hao and Wen Shucheng could only shamelessly chase after him with the Guanghan Field Saints and hope to meet up soon.

Zhang Ruochen didn't actually go too far. He was blocked by the spatial power in the 99 mountains and fell to the ground.

He'd already left the mountain where the Merits Records Wall was and had entered an ancient forest. He was surrounded by steel-like trees. Their trunks were wider than millstones.

Opening his Heavenly Eyes, he saw the spatial runes distributed throughout the forest. Some were carved on the trees while others were carved on the rocks.

This was actually an area with chaotic space.

I'll probably have to cross this forest to reach the innermost 33 mountains, Zhang Ruochen analyzed.

Suddenly, there was a spatial ripple.

Then the Luosha Princess's alluring figure appeared. She was only around 200 feet from Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. The phoenix and Luan appeared under his feet. With explosive speed, he tore into the depths of the woods.

The Luosha Princess was taken aback. She immediately streaked forward, yelling, "Zhang Ruochen, we're allies! Why are you hiding from me? Are you afraid that I'll steal the Merits Records Wall?"

"It's not impossible," Zhang Ruochen replied.

The Luosha Princess wasn't interested in the Merits Records Wall at all, but she couldn't show that. She was both furious and annoyed.

Originally, she'd planned to use the fight for the Merits Records Wall to weaken the seven worlds. Zhang Ruochen realized this, however. He sacrificed his lifespan and took the Merits Records Wall away, disrupting her plan.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was actually guarded against her so he could monopolize the Merits Records Wall.

The Luosha Princess wanted to use Zhang Ruochen to help her break down the last bit before the Phoenix Nest. Naturally, she wouldn't let him go. Even more, she didn't want to have conflicts with him.

"You think you can keep the Merits Records Wall by yourself?" the Luosha Princess asked. "If you work with the Great Devil Ten Square Field, I promise I'll let the Guanghan Field become second of the battle. How about that?"

If the Moon Goddess hadn't given him the order, Zhang Ruochen might really agree with the Luosha Princess. After all, it was already a feat for the Guanghan Field to take second place in the Saints Merits Battle.

However, his mission was to take first place.

"I'm sorry, Demonic Concubine," Zhang Ruochen said. "Our cooperation ends now."

The Luosha Princess furrowed her brows, growing more furious.

Since childhood, it had always been her toying with others. It was her first time getting played.

"What do you want? Make any requests, but don't leave me alone."

The pitiful way the Luosha Princess spoke would make outsiders think that she was a girl in love trying to win back a bad man.

"Demonic Concubine, please don't talk like that. If others hear, they'll think that we have a special relationship."

"Don't we?"

"Ha."

Zhang Ruochen had seen how powerful the Luosha Princess was. It was okay before, because he didn't have anything she wanted, so he could cooperate with her.

It was different now.

The Merits Records Wall was too important. He couldn't lose it. What if they continued to cooperate and she attacked secretly? Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to keep the wall at all.

Before, Zhang Ruochen wasn't as fast as the Luosha Princess.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had improved greatly. He was about as fast as the Luosha Princess.

The forest had a large amount of spatial runes. The spatial structure was confusing as well. It was impossible to catch up

with someone. Zhang Ruochen only used an hour's time to completely lose the Luosha Princess.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine is really a difficult figure. Compared to her, the other Heirs are far off.

Suddenly, weakness spread from deep within him.

It was the side effect of losing his lifespan.

In order to take the Merits Records Wall beforehand, Zhang Ruochen had lost nearly 100 years of life in the time formation. It was a great cost.

He took out a divine medicine and melted it. Then he swallowed it.

Next, he was wrapped in saintly light. The weak feeling gradually disappeared and his strength and spirit recovered.

He took out the Merits Records Wall from the spatial ring. Zhang Ruochen studied the merits count carefully.

Great Devil Ten Square Field, 154,603,500 merits.

Eight Ministry Field: 84,735,420 merits

...

Kunlun's Field: 29,747,400 merits

Guanghan Field: 27,753,000 merits

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "Only this many merits collected in an entire month? It must be that many Saints couldn't find the Merits Records Wall and couldn't exchange the Luosha blood and souls they have.

"The Kunlun's Field is quite powerful, though. They only have half as many Saints as the Guanghan Field, but they have more merits."

But thinking carefully, Zhang Ruochen found it quite normal.

The Kunlun's Field had many powerful figures whose abilities were like half-step Saint Kings. They could even fight with Heirs, such as Wan Zhaoyi, Chu Siyuan, Sword Saint Jiuyou...

"First, exchange the Luosha blood and souls for merits."

Without thinking further, Zhang Ruochen took out all the bottles filled with blood and souls.

Whoosh!

The Merits Records Wall sensed the Qi from the Luosha blood and souls and immediately shone with brilliant light. The light enveloped all the bottles.

The blood and souls in the bottles flew into the wall.

Guanghan Field's merit count rose sharply. It quickly surpassed 30 million, going for 40 million.

Even killing the weakest ninth marquis could be exchanged for 1,000 merits. Killing the strongest first marquis could be exchanged for 100,000 merits.

Zhang Ruochen had more than 3,000 drops of blood from Luosha marquises.

He also had more than 3,000 Luosha marquis souls.

In addition, he had the blood and souls from many earls and viscounts.

Zhang Ruochen taking the Merits Records Wall for himself caused an uproar in the Heaven World.

“Is the Priest from the Guanghan Field crazy? Does he think he can protect the Merits Records Wall by himself? Won't he be blasted to bits?”

“Even if all the Saints from the Guanghan Field are added in, they still won't be able to protect it.”

“Look, the Guanghan Field's merits are shooting up. It's surpassed 50 million now. It jumped from last to fourth place and... It's still growing.”

There was a Merits Records Wall in each of the seven worlds. It showed the current count and rank of the seven worlds.

Right now, there was a sea of people gathered under the wall. It wasn't just the Half-Saints. Some Supreme Saints from the seven worlds had gathered too.



They couldn't help it. The merit count of the Guanghai Field was growing too crazily.

# Chapter 1466 - Ranked Twenty-first

Chapter 1466: Ranked Twenty-first

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Sixty-five million three hundred and seventy-five thousand and fifty-four hundred and thirty merits.

It finally stopped increasing.

Guanghai Field was now ranked the third in Saints Merits Battle, being topped by Great Devil Ten Square Field and Eight Bu Field only.

All the half saints from Shatuo Seven Fields were astounded Zhang Ruochen obtained more than thirty-six million merits by himself only.

But after a second thought, they found it understandable.

Zhang Ruochen killed many saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field and seized all the Luosha blood and fragmented souls they had.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen was collecting bodies when the three fields were fighting Luosha race, by which he collected a large amount of Luosha blood and fragmented souls as well.

“Most of the merits should’ve belonged to Purple Mansion Field. That Zhang Ruochen deserves to die.”

All the half saints from Purple Mansion Field were furious.

Purple Mansion Field didn’t just have their merits seized, their rank dropped because of that too.

As for the creatures from Guanghan Field, they were bustling and all talking about Zhang Ruochen. They couldn't admire him more, and some of the most exhilarated monks even groveled."

"Our priest managed to fight off so many enemies all by himself. He's my idol from now on."

The supreme saints on Moon God Mountain all smiled as they now realized Moon God was shrewd and visionary enough to pick Zhang Ruochen.

"As long as Zhang Ruochen can guard the Merits Records Wall well, Guanghan Field can probably get the first place in Saints Merits Battle." Supreme Saint Manjian smiled.

The first place in Saints Merits Battle.

Even supreme saints were moved by that.

Some other supreme saints were cautious about it. After all, there were way too many saints from all the seven fields combined, so they reckoned Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to guard the Merits Records Wall, and that Zhang Ruochen might get killed.

Merits Star, on the shore of Heavenly River.

Aside from Merits Records and Merits Ranking, there were some individual rankings as well, like the ranking of saints' merits.

Zhang Ruochen's name suddenly showed up on 'Saints Merits Rank', followed by a number.

Only saints who earned more than ten million merits could enter 'Saints Merits Rank'.

Zhang Ruochen now had more than thirty million merits, making him the twenty-first on 'Saints Merits Rank'.

Which was a huge glory!

In the past, Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was the only saint from Shatuo Seven Fields who entered 'Saints Merits Rank', and she was ranked behind one thousandth place.

The greatest talents from Heaven World were thrilled seeing Zhang Ruochen enter 'Saints Merits Rank'. Even the large fields who were ranked high noticed this rising star.

Being ranked twenty-first on 'Saints Merits Rank' already said a lot about Zhang Ruochen's power, and scheming against Princess Luosha made him all the more precious.

Originally, many monks thought that the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields would be annihilated, but now, they had a trace of hope seeing Zhang Ruochen rise.

...

The light from Merits Records Wall spread so far that many saints in the distance were able to see that, so they rushed toward it as quickly as possible.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the data on Merits Record Wall and sighed, "Great Devil Ten Square Wall is so mighty. One hundred and fifty million merits. It's beyond difficult for Guanghan Field to get the first place in Saints Merits Battle."

Sensing some saints approaching him, Zhang Ruochen immediately put back Merits Records Wall and escaped this area.

Zhang Ruochen hid inside an ancient maple tree, triggered the power of Buddhist beads to cover his forces.

"The saints from the seven fields are all crazy. I'd better hide for a while before going out to collect merit again."

Zhang Ruochen took out Monument Shield, put his fingers on the space crystal and entered the inner area of the space crystal.

And then, Zhang Ruochen took out bottles of Nine True Saint Dew, swallowed it and started to refine saintly way rules.

Zhang Ruochen had left when Princess Luosha got to the forest, and there were only empty bottles left.

"Damn bastard. Seems like I need to use the trace of power I left in his mind power saint soul."

Princess Luosha formed an old mark with her fingers, and circular halos showed up. The crimson threads then flew into the circular halo and in the forest.

After a short while, those crimson threads flew back.

“He noticed that trace of power and refined it?”

Princess Luosha was a bit dismayed, then she smiled, “Interesting. Heaven World has finally cultivated a great talent who’s strong enough to rival me.”

The ground in front of Princess Luosha suddenly cracked, and black sha Qi gushed out from the underground, shaking all the ancient maple trees around it. And then, the leaves all withered and fell from the trees.

Lord Lingquan who was wearing a black lightning armor walked out from the underground. The black sha Qi came out of his body.

“Let me help you, your highness. I’ll lead the Luosha armies to annihilate all the saints from the seven large fields.”

Lord Lingquan bowed at Princess Luosha.

Princess Luosha was a bit irritated by Lord Lingquan.

Zhang Ruochen was indeed a huge problem for her to deal with, but he was at least a handsome and attractive guy. As for the males from Luosha race, they all looked hideous. Even though Lord Lingquan was considered a good-looking male in Luosha race, he was still below average to Princess Luosha.

Princess Luosha looked to another side and said, “We haven’t encircled everyone yet. It might be too early to make the final move.”

Lord Lingquan thought for a bit and asked, “Where is that human kid?”

“That’s my concern, not yours,” Princess Luosha said.

Lord Lingquan looked gloomy. He said, “Don’t be tempted by his face, your highness. You can’t count on human men.”

Princess Luosha glared at Lord Lingquan and said, “Are you trying to teach me how to do business?”

“Of course not.”

Princess Luosha sneered and said, “Now that you’re here, I’m going to ask you to do something for me. There’s a Confucius monk from Kunlun’s Field who has Saint Book Ruzu. Capture her and bring her to me.”

“Rest assured, your highness. A Confucius monk is nothing to me.”

Lord Lingquan smiled and took a look at Princess Luosha. Seeing how apathetic she was, he chose not to say anything before leaving.

Princess Luosha took a deep breath and rolled her eyes.

...

Zhang Ruochen spent half a month refining in the space crystal and successfully refined thousands of drops of Nine True Saint Dew, and Zhang Ruochen was almost at the upper stage of true saints now.

He then spent another month refining more than ten thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew, making to the pinnacle level of a true saint.

The saintly way rules in Heaven Pass River became solid like iron threads. Zhang Ruochen could hear the deafening thunder sound by barely mobilizing his saintly way rules.

Both Mu Lingxi and Qing Mo were awakened by the sound coming out of Zhang Ruochen, and they both looked at him in surprise.

“Have you become an absolute saint already?” Mu Lingxi asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Pinnacle true saint.”

“Only pinnacle true saint?”

Qing Mo stuck her tongue out as she found Zhang Ruochen unbelievably strong. The forces coming out of him could rival those of a saint king.

Qing Mo was also a pinnacle true saint with good body constitution and the inheritance of a God, however, she was

still way inferior to Zhang Ruochen.

With Ning True Saint Dew, Qing Mo and Mu Lingxi's cultivation surged. Mu Lingxi was now an elementary true saint.

Zhang Ruochen checked the time, and there was only one month left until the end of Saints Merits Battle. He had to walk out of the time and space crystal to conquer and kill.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to keep refining so that he could become an absolute saint.

However, he came to Zuling Field not to refine, but to collect merits.

There was a long way to go until Guanghan Field could make it to the top of Saints Merits Rank.

"I'll go collect merits as well," Qing Mo said.

"Okay."

Zhang Ruochen took a deep look at her, and he found that she was very perseverant, so he didn't try and stop her.

Qing Mo looked like a frail and timid girl, but sometimes, she could be very stubborn.

Zhang Ruochen then turned to Mu Lingxi, "Lingxi, I reckon you stay here to improve your cultivation first. I'll come for you again when we're heading to Phoenix Nest."

"Sure thing."

Mu Lingxi knew that she couldn't help Zhang Ruochen at all at the moment. Actually, she was under lots of pressure. After all, the huger the power gap between them, the less they could do together.

She must improve herself to catch up with Zhang Ruochen.

The inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix was a great chance for her, and she needed to seize this opportunity no matter what.

Just as they walked out of the time crystal, Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo could feel great evil sha Qi outside.

Lots of Luosha marquises were gathering in the forest.

They heard a deep voice, “Useless. You’re all useless. You can’t even capture a Confucius monk? You all useless.”

“Lord Fengxing, we’ve tried everything, but there’re a couple of prominent beings following that Confucius monk, and her Saint Book Ruzu can suppress our evil sha Qi. We’re at a huge disadvantage fighting them.”



# Chapter 1467 - Killing A First Marquis

Chapter 1467: Killing A First Marquis

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“One, two, three, four... There are 57 Luosha marquis in total. The strongest one has terrifying abilities. It should be a first marquis. In addition, there are two third marquises.”

Zhang Ruochen spoke to himself with his eyes shut.

Qing Mo’s delicate frame was curled beside Zhang Ruochen. She extended two slender fingers and tugged at the corner of Zhang Ruochen’s clothes. “Are they here to capture Sister Nalan?”

“Why don’t we arrest them and ask them personally?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Qing Mo shook her head. “There’s too many of them,” she whispered carefully. “There’s also a first marquis. A first marquis is scary...”

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Monument Shield and smashed the base of a tree. His other hand grabbed Qing Mo, who was curled up like a chick, and charged at the Luosha marquises.

Qing Mo was frightened. She kept screaming.

The Luosha marquises were surprised. They all activated their evil Qi and went into defense.

Clearly, they were very experienced and had fast reactions.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Monument Shield. Instead of activating the runes inside, he went for the fifth marquis closest to him.

Crack.

A huge explosion sounded within the fifth marquis. A huge bone stuck out and was pulverized.

After falling to the ground, the fifth aperture bled out of all his openings. His body trembled and he couldn't get back up again.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze swept across. He discovered a bonfire in the center of the Luosha marquis group. Four Saints were propped over it.

Four spires penetrated the four human Saints, like cooking four beasts over fire. Their flesh and skin had all been roasted to a golden color.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen's scalp turned numb.

It was recorded that the Luosha liked to eat human flesh.

To them, human Saints were the most delicious of all.

Zhang Ruochen placed Qing Mo on the ground and started killing again.

"How dare you! Marquis Fengxing is here. How dare you attack?"

Thirteen Luosha marquis in a row grabbed their weapons and charged to attack Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen killed a fifth marquis with one hit. Regular marquises wouldn't dare to attack. The ones attacking Zhang Ruochen now were fourth and third marquises.

The two third marquises were like Absolute Saints.

The two both had a pagoda-shaped Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. They activated the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

Holy Qi rumbled inside Zhang Ruochen's body.

Swinging his arm, he smashed the Monument Shield out, hitting a fourth marquis. At the same time, a dragon and elephant's projection appeared above his hands. As a dragon and elephant roared, he attacked the two Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons.

Boom.

The two huge pagodas were sent flying by the palm force.

The two three marquises were also sent flying back. They spat out blood as shock filled their eyes. They couldn't believe that their opponent could be this strong.

Before they could even land, Zhang Ruochen had formed another dozen-foot-long palm print. He slammed the two into the ground and their flesh exploded. Only two bloody skeletons remained.

In an instant, two third marquises were killed. Zhang Ruochen was awfully powerful.

The other marquises were intimidated. Not daring to fight with Zhang Ruochen anymore, they retreated behind Marquis Fengxing.

Marquis Fengxing was around 2.3 meters tall and had thick arms. His entire body was covered in strange demonic patterns. Merely standing there, he was like an unmoving demonic mountain.

Marquis Fengxing studied him and scoffed. "There are very few people as strong as you in the Shatuo Seven Fields. Who are you?"

"Zhang Ruochen, priest of the Guanghan Field."

"So you're Zhang Ruochen."

Shock filled Marquis Fengxing's face.

"Fight!" Zhang Ruochen yelled.

A battle here would definitely attract other Saints and Luosha marquises, so Zhang Ruochen had to do this quickly.

Whoosh!

The Holy Carnivorous Flower rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It extended green vines toward the Luosha marquises. Bolts of electricity snaked on the vine. Once they wrapped around a Luosha marquis, he would never be able to break free.

"This is the legendary aggressive plant, the Holy Carnivorous Flower. Someone could actually tame it."

"The Holy Carnivorous Flower is high up on the Aggressive Plants Rank. I thought that they'd gone extinct. I didn't think that I would discover one."

...

The Luosha marquises kept getting killed by the vines. Then they were dragged underground to become the flower's fertilizer.

Marquis Fengxing's eyes widened. Dark red evil Qi poured out of him and forced the incoming vines away. Then he rushed forward and punched Zhang Ruochen.

He could see that Zhang Ruochen was the master and the Holy Carnivorous Flower was only his parasite.

If he killed Zhang Ruochen, the flower would die too.

"Good. Come."

Thousands of dragons roared within Zhang Ruochen. His body burned and he pushed his palm out.

The palm and fist clashed, producing a shocking boom.

The shockwaves crushed the surrounding trees. Even Qing Mo and the Luosha marquises had to retreat.

If not for the large number of spatial runes in the forest, the destructive force caused by the clash may spread to even vaster areas.

Many of the Saints and Luosha marquises were shocked. Some of the powerful figures hurried over to where the shockwaves came from.

Marquis Fengxing had been forced back. His defensive runes kept exploding.

The human before him was too strong. He couldn't fend off the man.

One must know that Marquis Fengxing had once exchanged ten blows with a first step Saint King without falling back. He definitely wasn't weak.

"How can this be? He's only a True Saint, but he's no weaker than a first step Saint King. This is too messed up! No wonder the lord wants to take him out! This man is indeed a huge threat."

Marquis Fengxing took a deep breath. The demonic patterns on his body glowed dark red. Shreds of Qi that only a Supreme Saint possesses radiated from the patterns.

"Supreme Saint power."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes widened. Then he attacked with all his might, activating Divine Fire Jingmie and sending a palm out.

"Dragon and Elephant Divine Furnace."

Zhang Ruochen's palm was brighter than a blazing sun. The heat that radiated out seemed to melt the entire world.

The light from Marquis Fengxing's demonic patterns turned half of the forest into a dark world. "God-killing Technique!" he roared.

An ear-piercing screech sounded.

Then a huge dark hand reached out of Fengxing's body. It held a sharp thorn that clashed against Zhang Ruochen's palm print.

Crackle.

The Divine Fire Jingmie destroyed the dark hand.

Zhang Ruochen's palm hit Marquis Fengxing's body, collapsing it. His body flew backward like a cannonball.

Zhang Ruochen chased after him. He didn't give Marquis Fengxing the chance to fight back and continued striking.

Thud, thud.

He released a dozen palm prints in a row. Each blow distorted Marquis Fengxing's body. Almost all of his bones were

shattered now.

Even though Marquis Fengxing had many Supreme Saint demonic patterns carved onto him, he still couldn't take it. The Divine Fire Jingmie seeped into his body. He turned into a fireball and started burning.

When Zhang Ruochen pulled his hand back, Marquis Fengxing had already burned to ashes. Only a saint source hovered in the flames, shining with brilliant light.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to capture Marquis Fengxing and force some valuable things out of his mouth.

After all, Marquis Fengxing was too strong. With Zhang Ruochen's current abilities, he could defeat and even kill the marquis, but he couldn't control him.

If Marquis Fengxing deactivated his saint source, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to escape.

Thus, he used the most decisive method and killed the marquis so there was no chance they would die together.

In the other direction, the battle had ended as well. Other than one survivor, all the other Luosha marquises had been killed. It was worth mentioning that Qing Mo had also killed three marquisies and was collecting their blood.

The survivor was a seventh marquis.

Zhang Ruochen sensed many strong beings hurrying over. Thus, he immediately put the Holy Carnivorous Flower back into his body. Holding Qing Mo and the seventh marquis in either hand, he hurried away from the forest.

A moment later, a sinister black cloud descended from the sky, appearing in the forest.

Lord Lingquan stood in the cloud and scanned the surroundings. Sniffing lightly, fire poured out of his eyes. "Not even 15 minutes have passed and Marquis Fengxing has actually died. Who could be so powerful?"

Whoosh, whoosh!

The sound of wind traveled through.

Nine first marquises arrived from all over. They appeared around Lord Lingquan and were all investigating the traces on the ground for clues.

“Marquis Fengxing was burned to death by Divine Fire Jingmie. In addition, there are many Luosha marquis bodies, sucked dry of power and blood.”

“Could it be some powerful figure from the Shatuo Seven Fields who’d reached the Saint King Realm and killed Marquis Fengxing?”

“There are very few people in the Shatuo Seven Fields who can control Divine Fire Jingmie. The priest of the Guanghai Field is one of them.”

...

The nine first marquises were all geniuses among geniuses, the cream of the crop. They found many clues and used different analyses, even guessing Zhang Ruochen.

Lord Lingquan’s eyes turned cold. Staring at a beautiful Luosha woman, he said, “Marquis Xianling, can you track which direction he went?”

Marquis Xianling furrowed her brows tightly and shook her head. “That man must have a treasure that hides his aura. I can’t trace him even if I use Heavenly Calculation.”

“Your Spiritual Power has already reached the Saint King Realm and you still can’t trace him. Seems like we can only wait for him to appear.”

Lord Lingquan clenched his fists. He suddenly had a feeling that the person who killed Marquis Fengxing may be that priest from the Guanghai Field.

“Let’s go. We’ll capture that Confucian first. This time, I’ll do it personally and see where she can run to.”

Lord Lingquan led the nine first marquises and rushed underground, leaving this area.

# Chapter 1468 - Lord Lingquan

Chapter 1468: Lord Lingquan

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen didn't put that seventh marquis and Qing Mo on the ground until they arrived somewhere safe.

He then mobilized holy Qi and infused it into his Buddhist beads. All those twelve Buddhist beads flew up, floating at twelve directions, covering the area of a hundred square feet.

That seventh marquis was in a coma, falling on the leaves.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his finger and pressed his forehead. A trace of great mind power gushed out of his finger and entered the memory ocean of that seventh marquis, trying to search his memories.

There was a dark purple halo covering his brain, warding off Zhang Ruochen's mind power.

"The great beings from Luosha race sealed his memory ocean to protect important information."

Zhang Ruochen then mobilized his Divine Fire Jingmie and formed a fiery thorn, using it to pierce through the forehead of that seventh marquis, trying to melt the dark purple halo covering the memory ocean.

Sizzle!

Divine Fire Jingmie burned the dark purple halo. Zhang Ruochen seized this chance to penetrate his brain with his mind power, trying to search for some useful information in his memory ocean.



After a while, Zhang Ruochen retracted his finger.

“Even someone as powerful as Marquis Fengxing is a subordinate of Lord Lingquan. Seems like that Lord Lingquan is the real force to be reckoned with.”

“But why is Lord Lingquan trying to capture Saint Lady? How is she valuable to him?”

Zhang Ruochen obtained lots of important information in the memories of that seventh marquis, including the information of some of the top-tier beings from Luosha race.

Princess Luosha, Lord Lingquan, Marquis Xianling and Marquis Saint Arrow...

Among them, Lord Lingquan was a horrific being. He led a team of ten first marquises with extraordinary status in Luosha race.

What baffled Zhang Ruochen was that he seemed to be the target of Lord Lingquan as well.

“A son of a Luosha king came to Zuling Field for me and Saint Lady instead of Phoenix Nest. Why is that?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and thought for a bit, however, whenever he thought he was getting close to the right answer, something would contradict his assumptions.

In the end, he shook his head and pointed at the forehead of that seventh marquis.

But then, Zhang Ruochen discovered another layer of purple halo in the deeper area of his memory ocean, which was more solid than the one before.

“Is there a larger secret?”

Zhang Ruochen tried to use Divine Fire to break it again.

However, just as he burnt the purple halo using Divine Fire Jingmie, that seventh marquis's body started to shake fiercely, and then, a rumbling sound came out of his lower abdomen, followed by a destructive force.

“Spatial collapse.”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed. He immediately stepped back and pressed forward, breaking the space around that seventh marquis.

Before the seventh marquis released his destructive power, he was swallowed by the fragmented space.

Zhang Ruochen warded off the after waves with one arm, “I couldn’t even inspect further. What kind of secrets is the Luosha race hiding? Fortunately, I was well prepared, otherwise I would’ve been crushed.”

Zhang Ruochen took out Merits Records Wall and put it under the twelve Buddhist beads after the space was stable again.

Qing Mo’s eyes popped seeing Merits Records Wall. She rushed forward and strolled the wall, “Merits Records Wall. It’s Merits Records Wall... Can’t believe you seized Merits Records Wall from the saint mountain. Fantastic! There’s hope for Kunlun’s Field now.”

“What does Kunlun’s Field have to do with it?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Qing Mo was knocked back to the reality and rendered speechless.

Zhang Ruochen then put the Luosha blood and fragmented souls he just collected beside Merits Records Wall, increasing the merits of Guanghan Field by three hundred and seventy thousand points.

It was a huge number that many saints failed to collect in their lifetimes.

However, the gap between Guanghan Field and Great Devil Ten Square Field was enormous. Even if Zhang Ruochen kept killing Luosha marquises without any rest, he couldn’t close the gap.

Three hundred and seventy thousand merits were nothing.

“There’re only two ways.”

“Either, get in contact with the saints from Guanghan Field and transfer all their Luosha fragmented souls and blood into

merits, then I can increase the merits of Guanghai Field by large.”

“Or, seize...”

Seizing was the best way to collect merits.

Hearing the word ‘seize’, Qing Mo was horrified.

She immediately rushed to Merits Records Wall, took out her Luosha blood and fragmented souls to transfer them into merits.

Qing Mo only relieved after seeing the increase in the merits of Kunlun’s Field.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t give a damn about her merits.

Zhang Ruochen took out a signal flare and wrote a message on it. And then, he infused a trace of Su Qingling’s saintly way force and sent it out.

Whoosh!

The signal flare toured around the forest and fell on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the signal flare and said, “The space here is so chaotic that I can’t even send out a signal flare. Now this is trouble.”

How was he supposed to get Luosha blood and fragmented souls if he couldn’t get in contact with the saints from Guanghai Field.

Qing Mo walked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Did you just say Sister Nalan is in danger? Why can’t you go help her?”

“There’re many great beings from Kunlun’s Field to protect her, and besides, I have no idea where she is even if I want to,” Zhang Ruochen said.

He knew how much he owed Saint Lady, but now, they were in the opposite teams, so it’d be the best for them both to stop getting in contact, otherwise it would be no good to her.

Qing Mo pinched her hair a bit and said, “I can sense where she is.”

“How?”

Zhang Ruochen looked baffled.

Qing Mo said, “It is a secret, at least for now.”

Although Saint Lady was very intelligent, that Lord Lingquan was one of the most powerful saints.

There was no way that Zhang Ruochen wasn't worried at all.

“Great! I've been wanting to meet that Lord Lingquan to see how incredible he is.”

“Fantastic!”

Qing Mo led the way like a small teenage girl while Zhang Ruochne walked behind her with his hands behind his back. They walked out of the forest.

...

The second they walked out of the maple forest, they saw the thirty-three saint mountain in the inner area.

There was a huge swamp between the saint mountains and the forest, and there were crimson plants growing in the swamp. Their leaves and roots were transparent with fire burning.

Cold Qi ascended from the swamp, forming mist turtles, mist dragons and mist phoenixes. It was a magnificent scene, but it was hazardous.

There were saints and Luosha marquises who were frozen to death in the swamp, showing how terrifying the cold Qi was.

Cold Qi and fire intertwined with each other deep in the swamp.

Dozens of saints walked above the swamp, and there were characters under their feet and their heads, and around their bodies, which warded of the cold Qi and flames.

Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi walked at the very front, using their mind power to open a bamboo saint book.

The characters that were protecting them came out of that bamboo saint book.

Eight of the nine heavenly maidens, more than ten Confucius saints and domain kings of Ministry of War followed them two closely.

After so many fights, Martial Saint Canglan looked exhausted. She said, “Danqing, I reckon they’re coming for you this time. Do you know why?”

They’d been attacked fourteen times recently, and the attacks got fiercer and fiercer.

There were originally more than two hundred saints in their team, but now, there were only around forty left.

Saint Lady’s face paled because of the huge consumption of mind power. She said, “It might have something to do with Saint Book Ruzu. Based on the assumptions of each generation of Confucius monks, the mind power of the four Ruzu might’ve reached level seventy, which is at God’s level. It’s likely that they’re actually stronger than Gods to some extent.”

“Luosha race is known for having great mind power, so they must be very interested in Saint Book Ruzu. That’s the only explanation I can think of.”

The space above the swamp suddenly trembled.

A fire ball with a diameter of around one hundred feet knocked all the characters.

Boom!

All the characters were knocked away. A true saint from Ministry of War was hit by the fire wall, which burned him to the ground.

“No! The great beings from Luosha race have caught up with us again.”

Martial Saint Canglan and more than ten region kings from Ministry of War rushed out, trying to protect mind power monks like Chu Siyuan and Yue Shuzi. They all took out their saint weapons to be on guard.

“Haha!”

Lord Lingquan showed up from the swamp, wearing a black lightning armor. He looked like an unrivalled Demonic God.

The cold Qi and flames that could kill saints were all dispelled when they got close to Lord Lingquan.

“Do you really think you can escape Luosha spies by entering Bipolar Swamp? You’re too naïve.”

Lord Lingquan smiled disdainfully and said, “Confucius monks, stand at the left, and martial way monks, stand at the right. If you follow everything I say, I might spare you lives today.”

# Chapter 1469 - Disparity In Ability

Chapter 1469: Disparity In Ability

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The power radiating from Lord Lingquan was chaotic and wild, like an erupting volcano. Even a Saint would feel pressured when standing before him and shake involuntarily.

Fire poured out of Martial Saint Canglan's eyes. Staring at Lord Lingquan, she said, "You're too arrogant."

Lord Lingquan's eyes brightened. He studied Martial Saint Canglan, especially at her full breasts, and grew interested. Chuckling, he said, "Not bad, not bad. It's a feat for such a beauty to be born in the human race. And you have the Fire Phoenix Body... Yes... You'd be a good slave. You won't have to die today."

"Slave..." Martial Saint Canglan grew angrier.

Fire rules instantly poured out of her delicate frame. The surrounding flames condensed into feathers and appeared around her.

"Indeed," Lord Lingquan said. "Humans are high-level slaves in the Luosha Race. Of course, most slaves are turned into delicacies for our guests after we buy them. A beautiful Saint with the Fire Phoenix Body like you is very rare. It'll be wasteful to turn you into food, but you can be trained into a beautiful pet."

Martial Saint Canglan was furious. She was the leader of the Nine Heavenly Maidens, but someone wanted to capture her and train her into a pet. This was unsufferable.

“Flames Burning the Sky.”

Martial Saint Canglan raised the Fengtian Sword. Dense runes appeared on it instantly, radiating with scalding heat.

Boom.

She swung with all her might. Thousands of Sword Qi beams formed a 100-foot-tall wall of fire. It stretched right before Lord Lingquan.

“Not bad. Unfortunately, you’re still not strong enough.”

Mockery filled Lord Lingquan’s eyes. He stood there without moving.

Marquis Tiange rushed out from behind Lord Lingquan. He held a 12-foot-long bronze spear. Applying force with both arms, he swung forward. The projection of a human head with a bronze mask flew out of the spear.

The fire wall formed with Sword Qi actually shattered.

Chu Siyuan’s eyes widened. “Careful!” he yelled.

Martial Saint Canglan also sensed danger. The bronze masked head grew bigger in her eyes. It was rushing over 100 times faster than the speed of time. She couldn’t dodge it.

She could only block it with her sword.

Thud.

She felt an unstoppable force crash into her body. Clangs sounded in her ears and the world darkened. She flew back uncontrollably.

The Saint Lady stood behind her and pushed forward. She sent out two beams of the Great Spirit and dissolved the force on Martial Saint Canglan. Then she rushed forward, holding up Martial Saint Canglan’s back.

Poof.

After Martial Saint Canglan landed on the ground, she spat out blood. Her entire body was limp. She couldn’t stand up. Clearly, she was badly hurt.

“Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.”



Chu Siyuan opened the map. An aged hand pressed on the scroll. Then seven-colored light poured out, illuminating the surroundings, forming seven illusory worlds.

The seven worlds overlapped into a seven-colored tower of worlds.

Kaboom.

The seven-colored world tower collided 17 times with the incoming bronze-masked head and shattered it.

Marquis Tiange hurriedly pulled the spear back and retreated.

His arms were in immense pain and blood flowed down his fingers. His eyes trained on Chu Siyuan. “There’s someone as strong as you in the Kunlun’s Field? No wonder you can escape from us time and time again.”

Marquise Xianling flapped her wings and landed on the ground. Her snow-white feet stepped on a cloud of cold Qi shaped like a tortoise. Sniggering, she said, “Marquis Tiange, you can’t even take care of a level 54 Spiritual Power cultivator. How do you qualify as a first marquis?”

Then seven other first marquises walked out too.

Further away, Luosha marquises stood in the cold Qi and flames. There were many of them—at least more than 500.

Marquis Tiange held the bronze spear and muttered, “That old guy isn’t a typical Spiritual Power cultivator. The scroll in his hands is a very strong Spiritual Power Saint weapon.”

“Oh?”

Marquise Xianling’s starry eyes stared at Chu Siyuan. Her gaze fell upon the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

Chu Siyuan’s eyes met Marquise Xianling’s eyes and his expression changed drastically. “Hurry and leave this place! She’s a Spiritual Power Saint King.”

“What... Spiritual Power Saint King?”

The Saints of the Kunlun’s Field were terrified. They didn’t dare fight with this group of Luosha anymore. They immediately retreated, wanting to escape.

“You want to leave?”

Marquise Xianling’s red lips opened and let out a string of charming laughter. Her voice resonated in the air above the Bipolar Swamp.

The next moment, the Saints of the Kunlun’s Field fell into a hallucination.

Some Saints ran around blindly and accidentally fell into the icy waters, freezing into a block of ice.

Other Saints started fighting each other as if they were mortal enemies.

Some Saints with stronger Spiritual Power stood blankly in place. They had troubled expressions as they struggled against Marquise Xianling.

But Marquise Xianling was too strong. Even Chu Siyuan couldn’t counter her.

A speck of light flew out of the forehead of Goddess Siming, one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens.

Kaboom.

This speck of light transformed into a divine red temple in the swamp.

This was a true temple and was huge. The pillars, walls, and tiles all shown with divine light. A sacred force spread out, breaking through Marquise Xianling’s hallucination.

Then the Saints of the Kunlun’s Field all had their minds cleared.

Many Saints were hurt. Twelve had even died already.

The survivors were all dazed. Some felt despair. Their enemy was too strong this time. Any random one could kill them all.

Marquise Xianling looked at the temple underfoot, feeling both shocked and overjoyed. “A divine temple. A god used to live in this pavilion. Such a treasure was actually hidden in a human woman’s Sea of Qi.”

Lord Lingquan suddenly realized that this group of women from the Kunlun's Field wasn't simple.

One had the Confucius Saint Book, one had the Fire Phoenix Body, one had a divine temple...

Then he looked at the other women. He realized with a start that they were all beautiful and had strong bodies. They weren't typical Saints.

Fortunately, their cultivations were still low. If they'd all reached the half-step Saint King Realm, they would be a terrifying force.

"One hundred thousand years ago, the Kunlun's Field was a very strong world in the universe. I'd thought that after 100,000 years, the Kunlun's Field would have fell to ruins. I didn't think so many beautiful and talented maidens would appear."

Laughing, Lord Lingquan continued, "Gifts fall from the sky. Today, I'll domesticate you all and produce a group of beautiful pets. If I take you all out, Yang Qi and the others will be so jealous!"

"We'd rather die than submit to you."

Martial Saint Canglan's eyes were aggressive like a wild beast. She started burning her saintly blood directly and cast a forbidden spell. Her combat abilities shot up and she attacked Lord Lingquan again.

"If you want to fight him, you have to get past me first."

Marquis Tiange raised his spear and blocked Martial Saint Canglan. The two started fighting intensely in the temple.

This was like a one-sided fight. Even when the Kunlun's Field used the divine temple, the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, and the Confucius Saint Book, they still couldn't stop the nine first marquises.

Marquise Xianling stole the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. One hand pressing down on Chu Siyuan's head, strands of Spiritual Power surged from her fingers. "Kneel down," she said coldly.

“Im...possi...ble...”

Chu Siyuan quaked and blood poured out of him, but he was still fighting off Marquise Xianling’s will.

“Master!”

Yue Shuzi’s eyes were bloodshot. He roared and cast a saint print at Marquise Xianling to save Chu Siyuan.

Yue Shuzi was an Administrator of Kunlun’s Field. He was one of the top Saints.

But Marquise Xianling was even stronger and didn’t even care about Yue Shuzi. She pointed and a beam of light flew out.

Poof!

The light shattered the saint print and penetrated Yue Shuzi’s forehead, killing him.

Yue Shuzi’s death made the hearts of the Kunlun’s Field Saints fall. They felt extremely depressed.

“If I must die, then we die together. Die!”

“I’d rather be broken jade than a complete rock.”

The remaining three kings of the Ministry of War charged at Marquise Xianling, Marquis Tiange, and Lord Lingquan respectively. They activated their Holy Qi, preparing to deactivate their saint source and Sea of Qi to die together.

“No suicide allowed.”

Marquise Xianling’s eyes glared at the three Ministry of War kings. Three gusts of strong will entered their minds, repressing their thoughts.

They instantly collapsed onto the ground, losing consciousness.

Clearly, they didn’t have the chance for suicide attacks.

...

...

Qing Mo and Zhang Ruochen entered the Bipolar Swamp one after another, moving through the cold Qi and blazing flames.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward while the Rules of Truth that Fang Yi had used to multiply his power appeared in his mind.

“The Rules of Truth are part of the rules of the world. They should be everywhere, but how can I perceive them?”

Zhang Ruochen imitated Fang Yi’s movement, performing move after move, but he couldn’t sense the Rules of Truth at all.

Qing Mo was very worried. “How can you be cultivating all the time? Can’t you walk faster? I feel their auras are weakening rapidly. If we don’t hurry over, the consequences will be unimaginable.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped his movement. A bit shocked, he said, “You can sense that their auras are weakening?”

Qing Mo didn’t know how to explain to Zhang Ruochen. “I’m begging you, please? We really can’t keep dragging it out. If Sister Nalan is captured by the Luosha, you won’t feel at peace either, right?”

“Okay, okay, let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen was really annoyed at interacting with the Kunlun’s Field, but looking at Qing Mo’s pitiful expression, he couldn’t get annoyed at all.

A while later, they were deep within the Bipolar Swamp. From afar, they could see a divine temple standing among the flames and cold Qi 100 miles away.

“It’s Goddess Siming’s temple! They must be there.”

Qing Mo stopped waiting for Zhang Ruochen. She rushed toward the temple in a streak of green light.

However, Zhang Ruochen stopped. He looked around and sensed a large group of Luosha hiding in the darkness. “Holy Carnivorous Flower,” he said to himself. “How many can you take care of?”

“Master, I’m at the peak of the Absolute Saint Realm now. Even if I can’t kill them all, I can at least stop them.”

The Holy Carnivorous Flower rushed out of Zhang Ruo Chen's back and rooted into the swamp. Then thousands of roots spread in all directions.

# Chapter 1470 - One-on-All Combat

Chapter 1470: One-on-All Combat

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Luosha marquises that were hiding around the godly palace noticed Qing Mo. And then, a Luosha girl who was a third marquis threw a black saint scepter toward Qing Mo.

Just as Qing Mo was trying to run away, black feather flew out of the swamp and trying to envelop her.

Zhang Ruochen drew Blue Sky Bow and shot Shining Sun Arrow.

Whoosh!

Shining Sun Arrow annihilated all the black feather and hit that Luosha girl who was a third marquis.

Shining Sun Arrow then pierced through that Luosha girl's body, knocking it into the ocean of flames, burning her body to the ground.

Qing Mo was startled as she looked back.

Zhang Ruochen then showed up in front of her and said, "You were too careless. Don't you know it's very dangerous here?"

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the godly palace, drew the bow and shot at another direction.

...

The fight in the godly palace was nearing the end.

There were only around ten saints who were still alive.

Martial Saint Canglan was still a true saint, so she could barely rival Marquis Tiange even if she was burning her saint blood.

With time going by, Martial Saint Canglan started to feel the side effects of burning her saint blood as she felt her power tumbling while her body getting significantly weaker.

Marquis Tianget chuckled and drew out a golden chain from his waist.

“Saint-binding Chain.”

The golden chain was only three feet long, however, after being infused saint Qi, it started to spin fiercely and get longer and longer, leaving chain shadows in the sky.

Martial Saint Canglan couldn't dodge the chain at all.

“Come.”

Marquis Tiange dragged Martial Saint Canglan violently to his side.

“Don't you even think about enslaving me. If I'm dying, I'm dragging you down with me.”

Martial Saint Canglan felt shamed. She tried to blow up his lower abdomen and saint source by mobilizing her saint Qi, however, the weird wicked power in Saint-binding Chain suppressed her saint Qi, which forbade her from blowing up her body.

Bang!

Martial Saint Canglan fell onto the ground, and the golden chain locking her neck made clacking sounds, dragging her all the way to Lord Lingquan.

“Ah!”

Martial Saint Canglan, as the head of Nine Heavenly Maidens, was revered in Kunlun's Field. She'd never been humiliated like this before. Unfortunately, she couldn't even kill herself.

As for the other first marquises, they all used Saint-binding Chain to chain up other saints.



None of the saints from Kunlun's Field were able to fight anymore.

Lord Lingquan stared at Martial Saint Canglan's smooth and curvy body, and he looked to other heavenly maidens and Confucius monks. He sneered, "I've told you to surrender, but you chose to fight. Did you really think you were able to defeat us?"

Only Saint Lady was still fighting with the help of Saint Book Ruzu.

"Break."

Marquis Baiyu mobilized all his evil sha Qi holding a crimson axe. He wielded his axe toward Saing Book Ruzu, dragging a axe shadow that was dozens of feet long.

Boom!

The pages on Saint Blood Ruzu were flipped fiercely.

It was then knocked away by the power of the axe.

Saint Lady muffled and bounced back like a withering leaf. Without the support of mind power, Saint Book Ruzu started to fall.

Marquis Baiyun drew out Saint-binding Chain that looked like a long golden thread and waved it toward Saint Lady.

Just at this moment, a red hand showed up from under the godly palace. It grabbed Saint-binding Chain and dissolved all the power in it.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen surged from the underground of the godly palace. Within a blink of an eye, he was standing in front of Marquis Baiyun already.

Zhang Ruochen held Saint-binding Chain with one hand while catching Saint Lady with the other.

Saint Lady's book shook. She then turned around and saw Zhang Ruochen's well-defined face. She couldn't help smiling.

She immediately looked down and turned back to a poker face.

“It’s him.”

Martial Saint and the other heavenly maidens were all thrilled as they’d never expected Zhang Ruochen to come here.

All the first marquises were dazed seeing someone interrupt the fight unexpectedly, but then, they all sneered.

“What’re you waiting for, Marquis Baiyun? Kill him,”  
Marquis Tiange said.

Lightning gushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s hand, which crushed all the electric dragons. He then pulled back Saint-binding Chain, releasing tremendous power toward Marquis Baiyun, which pulled Marquis Baiyun to his side.

“Damn it...”

Marquis Baiyun realized that Zhang Ruochen was way stronger than the saints from Kunlun’s Field, so he immediately put back his battle axe and triggered the ten thousand inscriptions on the axe, wielding it against Zhang Ruochen.

The red boxing glove Zhang Ruochen was wearing in his right hand formed a palm mark and clashed with the axe.

Howl!

Followed by a deafening dragon sound, a blue fiery dragon that was hundreds of feet long flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s palm, clashing with Marquis Baiyun.

Boom!

As Marquis Baiyun bounced away, he hit a pillar in the godly palace, which slightly shook the entire palace.

Marquis then saw a small hole on his saint armor when he fell onto the ground.

“Divine Fire Jingmie.”

Marquis Baiyun was dazed. He then looked to Zhang Ruochen again, but this time, he was kind of scared.

The other first marquises all stopped smiling as they could see that Zhang Ruochen was a great force to be reckoned with from Heaven World.

Zhang Ruochen put Saint Lady on the ground safely, stood up and glanced across the Luosha marquises and the saints from Kunlun's Field.

Martial Saint Canglan lied on the ground with a chain entwined with her neck. Just as she shared an eye contact with Zhang Ruochen, she felt so shameful that she wanted to burrow.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen looked to Lord Lingquan.

Lord Lingquan seemed to be observing Zhang Ruochen as well. He smiled and said, "I've been looking for you for so long, Zhang Ruochen. Can't believe you deliver yourself to me."

Zhang Ruochen said in a cold voice, "Probably I delivered myself to kill you."

Lord Lingquan said, "You indeed have some power, but you're being too confident. There're nine marquises in total. How many do you think you can fight against?"

"I guess I need to fight all of you then."

Zhang Ruochen activated his Hundred Saints Blood Armor to cover his entire body, then he took out Abyss Ancient Sword, making himself fierce.

Marquis Tiange picked up his bronze dagger-axe and walked toward Zhang Ruochen, "I've killed many human saints before, but this is the first time I met someone conceited."

The saints from Kunlun's Field all sighed.

All of the ten Luosha monks were incredible beings, and each of them could rival a saint king.

If Zhang Ruochen showed up earlier and teamed up with them, they might be able to make their way out of it...

But now...

It was no easy task for Zhang Ruochen to fight two first marquises at the same time, not to mention nine first marquises plus Lord Lingquan whose power was unfathomable.

Even first-step saint kings had to shy away.

Lord Tiange was confident of his power, but he was also a careful person. He took a look at Marquis Baiyun and said, "Let's team up and defeat him."

Marquis Baiyun nodded as he wanted to defeat Zhang Ruochen as well to save face for what happened just now.

Lord Lingquan wrapped his arms in front of his chest and said, "Capture him alive."

Lord Lingquan came to Zuling Field to fight Zhang Ruochen. Now that the princess thought so highly of him, Lord Lingquan wanted to capture and tame him, by which he could show his princess that he was better and stronger.

Marquis Baiyun and Marquis Feige ascended to the sky, releasing tumbling evil sha Qi as if they were two crimson demonic clouds.

Lintian Battle Dagger-axe and Jubo Axe both shook fiercely, and two weapon spirits showed up inside. They were two giant demonic shadows.

"Suppress."

Both ten thousand patterns saint weapons were completely utilized under the manipulation of the two first marquises, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen trampled on the ground with his right foot, activated the first level power of Hundred Saints Blood Armor, and a hundred ghost shadows of lower-class saints rushed out, standing at one hundred different directions.

"Break."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of a hundred saints, performing True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique.

A torrent made of sword Qi and lightning bombarded toward the two ten thousand patterns saint weapons.

# Chapter 1471 - Nine Heavenly Maidens

Chapter 1471: Nine Heavenly Maidens

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Under the intense clash, the weapon spirits of the Lintian Spear and Great Ax were torn apart by the electric currents. They let out mournful cries and curled back within the weapons.

Marquis Tiange and Biayun were surprised. They quickly grabbed their weapons and fended off the flood of electric currents.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the electric flood. Wielding the Abyss Ancient Sword, he struck a dozen times, forcing the two first marquises back continuously. They could only defend passively and were very pathetic.

“Lay down.”

Zhang Ruochen raised the Abyss Ancient Sword with one hand. Dense runes appeared within the sword. It shone with inky black light.

At the same time, electric chains fell down from the heavens, connecting with the sword tip.

Zhang Ruochen cut down, splitting the weapons in the hands of Marquis Baiyun and Tiange. Electricity and Swod Qi fell upon them, striking them. They flew horizontally and fell heavily on the ground.

However, Marquis Baiyun and Tiange had very powerful protective treasures. They actually stopped the Abyss Ancient

Sword's destructive power and saved them.

“What kind of weapon can be this powerful?”

Marquis Tiange's organs seemed to have all been ripped apart, burning with pain. He lay on the ground and looked at his broken spear with shock.

Marquis Baiyun was covered in sword injuries. Blood flowed out. Fortunately, he was physically strong and able to hold on.

The other first marquises all had expressions of disbelief. They had to be more serious before this human enemy.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was like a war god radiating with a bloody aura. He was very strong and looked down on the group of Luosha marquises. “Can't even take a hit.”

This was too arrogant. All of the first marquises were infuriated.

“Looking for death!”

“I will break your hands and feet and imprison you for eternity. I'll cut off a piece of your flesh every day, making you wish for life or death but getting neither.”

Marquis Chengxuan took out a scroll and opened it before Zhang Ruochen. A blazing sun and a beast in chains was drawn on the scroll.

As evil Qi surged into the scroll, the furnace-like sun rushed out of the paper. It hovered above the temple.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head to look at the sun. He could feel the aggressive power contained in the sun. If it fell down, even he wouldn't be able to fend it off.

Roar!

A deafening beast's roar sounded. Even the air trembled.

The beast inside the scroll walked out slowly. It was dozens of feet tall and chains were wrapped around it. Each step it took, it would produce clanks.

Judging from the beast's aura, Zhang Ruochen could tell that it was like an eighth level beast. In other words, it was able to

fight with a human Saint King.

Clearly, Marquis Chengxuan was even stronger than Baiyun and Tiange. He was definitely one of the stronger first marquises.

The Saint Lady looked at the beast walking out of the scroll. Her expression changed. “Nine first marquises. Each of them is able to fight with a Saint King. Even if you have the Supreme Complete Body Constitution, you still can’t defeat them all. This has nothing to do with you. Hurry and leave.”

“Leave with me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Saint Lady shook her head. A wry smile appeared in her eyes. “You should know that I would never leave with you.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the other captured maidens. He knew that if the Saint Lady abandoned them and escaped alone, she would never recover from the trauma.

Death was terrifying.

But living as if you were death was even more terrifying.

Martial Saint Canglan’s voice came from the distance. “Zhang Ruochen, I’ve never begged anyone in my life. Today, I’m begging you to kill me.”

“Okay, I’ll help you.”

Grasping the sword with both hands, immense sword intent burst from Zhang Ruochen. The next moment, he became one with the sword. Transforming into a long streak of light, he crashed toward Martial Saint Canglan.

“That is the lord’s beautiful pet. You can’t kill her just because you want to.”

Marquis Chengxuan controlled the hovering sun and slammed it down at Zhang Ruochen. It clashed with the long streak of sword light.

Zhang Ruochen activated 30 protective scrolls. At the same time, he controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword and stabbed the sun. He cut down at Marquis Chengxuan who was standing behind the sun.



The three first marquises—Baiyun, Tiange, and Xiebai—attacked Zhang Ruochen from different directions.

“Reverse the World.”

Marquis Baiyun settled into horse stance and pushed his hands up. A huge white ball of light appeared above his head.

As the ball of light spun rapidly, the world in the temple seemed to spin too.

“Thousand-calamity Finger.”

Marquis Tiange extended a finger and activated the Rules of Sharpness. It converged at his fingertip and a three-meter-long finger force flew out.

Marquis Xiebai held a bone shield. It was made out of Supreme Saint bones. Once evil Qi entered it, it could activate a shred of a Supreme Saint’s power.

Marquis Chengxuan controlled the beast and attacked Zhang Ruochen as well.

Four first marquises worked together and finally stopped Zhang Ruochen. He was forced to pull back. Otherwise, he would die even if he could kill Martial Saint Canglan.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed in the air. He wanted to activate spatial power but realized that the space here was locked.

In the distance, Lord Lingquan held a strangely shaped purple stone. It shone with slivers of divine light. It sealed the space like a sacred purple mountain.

“Even if you cultivate the Ancient Ways, you still aren’t undefeatable. There is always something in the world that can restrict you.” Lord Lingquan chuckled.

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen drew lines in the air and formed a time print. Flicking his finger, the time print flew out, landing on Lord Lingquan.

“What is that?”

Lord Lingquan activated the purple stone but still couldn't stop the time print. He searched inside and discovered that he'd lost a lot of vitality and at least a dozen years of his life.

His expression was very cold. "Be careful!" he roared. "This man can also control time."

Zhang Ruochen activated the second level of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor. One hundred middle Saints appeared.

Boom!

He cut down with a sword.

Marquis Xiebai with the Supreme Saint bone shield was sent to his knees. He let out a muffled grunt.

Just as Zhang Ruochen prepared a second strike to severely injure Marquis Xiebai, Marquis Tiange cast a saint spell. He flew out from the back. Zhang Ruochen was forced to meet him, waving his sword and slicing the spell.

The fight was incredibly intense.

Zhang Ruochen combated four first marquises by himself. He seemed to have limitless power. Even though he was sometimes close to getting hit, he generally had the upper hand.

The first marquises who weren't fighting all felt stunned.

This human's combat abilities were too messed up. After all, even people like Lord Lingquan might not be able to fight four first marquises simultaneously.

Lord Lingquan finally understood why the princess valued Zhang Ruochen so much. This guy was quite impressive.

As long as he was alive, he would pose a great threat.

At that moment, Lord Lingquan changed his mind. "All marquises, attack and kill him," he ordered.

Other than Marquise Xianling who was holding down Chu Siyuan, the four other first marquises all tossed down the chains in their hands. They attacked Zhang Ruochen.

To them, the maidens weren't threats. Zhang Ruochen was the truly terrifying figure.

The Saint Lady snatched this chance. She put her pale hands together and released seven saint soul bodies. They rushed in seven directions and grabbed the seven chained maidens, bringing them back.

At the same time, Qing Mo rushed down the steps and appeared behind the Saint Lady. The Nine Heavenly Maidens were reunited, forming a beautiful scene.

Lord Lingquan glanced at them and his lips curled. Disdain filled his eyes. "So what if you rescue them? You think you can escape from me?"

The Saint Lady's eyelashes curled up. Opening her red lips, she said, "The Nine Heavenly Maidens are connected by blood and Holy Qi. We become one."

Suddenly, the Saint Lady, Martial Saint Canglan, Qing Mo, Goddess Siming... All of them shone with brilliant sacred light. Their mysterious apertures opened everywhere and thousands of shreds of light poured out, weaving their powers together.

A white cloud appeared above the Saint Lady. Words were printed onto it.

A red cloud appeared above Martial Saint Canglan. A blazing sun shone from the sky.

A green cloud appeared above Qing Mo. Sunlight shone down, transforming into peculiar clouds.

...

The Nine Heavenly Maidens all cultivated different techniques, but each one was strangely connected.

One person had a piece of the haven.

Nine people, nine heavens.

At this moment, the nine heavens were combined into one. Then the Nine Heavenly Maidens actually combined too. They transformed into one beautiful maiden.

Lord Lingquan was stunned when he saw this too. Nine women combining into one was too strange.

What exactly did they cultivate?

No longer hesitating, Lord Lingquan clenched his fist and punched forward. The fist print enlarged dramatically. It was like a meteorite in the universe and crushed toward the glowing Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Whoosh!

The Nine Heavenly Maiden extended a milky hand. Clutching the Confucius Saint Book, she pressed down. Instantly, billions of words flew out and rained down on Lord Lingquan, sending him flying back.

# Chapter 1472 - Retreat

Chapter 1472: Retreat

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the nine heavenly maidens merged with each other, the new heavenly maiden gleamed, and her power was stronger than ordinary saint kings.

Lord Lingquan was startled and he had never run into something so strange before, and neither had he come across someone so powerful as she managed to defeat him with one strike, and he had supreme complete body constitution.

Nine Heavenly Maiden looked like she was made of heavenly jade, giving out dimming fragrance. She had an ethereally beautiful face, and her temperament kept changing, elegant, overbearing, frail or mysterious.

She looked like a Goddess descending to the mortal realm, and nine different skies showed up above her head, and in each sky there were lots of saintly way rules, which looked divine.

Even Zhang Ruochen was thrilled, and he couldn't help looking at Nine Heavenly Maiden.

“No wonder Qing Mo was able to sense where they are, and she could even feel that they were getting weaker. That's the connection among the Nine Heavenly Maidens. What kind of extraordinary techniques have Chi Yao bestowed upon them?” Zhang Ruochen was perplexed.

Saint Book that was triggered by Nine Heavenly Maiden's power couldn't be more forceful, and the characters formed waves that tumbled in the godly palace, dispelling all the evil sha Qi.

The godly place also changed drastically as traces of godly light gushed out of the godly palace, attacking each of the first marquis, forcing them defend themselves.

“Screw you!”

Godly engravings emerged on the skin of Lord Lingquan as his forces surged.

The purple stone became larger and larger as it was driven by evil sha Qi, and in the end, it turned into a giant purple godly mountain.

“This stone was made by a weapon saint master from Luosha race. He collected a purple star near a black hole and made this secret valuable. It can guard or destroy the space.”

The purple godly mountain was massive. Even Lord Shaojun needed to use all his strength to carry it. He then threw it toward Nine Heavenly Maiden, breaking all the characters.

“Come back, godly palace.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden’s forehead shone as she stepped back, meanwhile, she released a great saint force from her arm, putting the godly palace back.

Although the godly palace shrunk a lot as it ascended to the sky, it was still more than three hundred feet tall.

Mysterious engravings flowed on the palace, releasing an ancient power.

The godly palace clashed with the purple godly mountain.

At the next moment, traces of godly light burst out of the swamp, annihilating all the cold Qi and flames.

Canivorous Holy Flower was fighting hundreds of Luosha marquises using its roots and vines. When the light burst out, most of its vines were destroyed.

Meanwhile, a large group of Luosha marquises were killed.

The power from the clash between Nine Heavenly Maiden and Lord Lingquan was way stronger than that from saints.

Their weapons, ‘godly palace’ and ‘purple godly mountain’ were both incredible weapons, much more forceful than ten thousand patterns saint weapons.

Lord Lingquan pressed his chest and stepped back more than ten miles.

That clash severely injured him.

Nine Heavenly Maiden was also slightly wounded as her hand was bleeding, yet she easily healed that after operating large circle.

All the eight first marquises retreated and stood behind Lord Lingquan, staring at Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen was also observing Nine Heavenly Maiden. She could see Saint Lady in her, and Martial Saint Canglan, Qing Mo, Siming Goddess and other heavenly maidens.

Their bodies and saint souls were all combined.

“Lord Lingquan obviously has supreme complete body constitution, and he’s a pinnacle absolute saint, yet he was also defeated by her. Is Nine Heavenly Maiden the real trump card cultivated by Chi Yao?”

Zhang Ruochen reckoned that he didn’t stand a chance higher than thirty percent against Nine Heavenly Maiden, even if he used the power of time and space, unless he became an absolute saint.

Lord Lingquan didn’t need to fear a Nine Heavenly Maiden as he could totally team up with nine first marquises to defeat her.

Yet they also needed to fight Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

Boom!

A tumbling mind power gushed out, turning the swamp upside down.

Everyone looked to where the mind power came from, and they saw Chu Siyuan who was being suppressed by Marquis Xianling started to gleam with holy light, and his hair and beard waved in the air.

He suddenly opened his eyes, and two light pillars gushed out of his pupils, knocking Marquis Xianling's body away, making her bleed.

Chu Siyuan immediately drew a blood-red line in the sky with his finger, and that blood-red line turned into a blood-red sword, piercing toward Marquis Xianling's heart.

Marquis Xianling formed a mark and wielded thirteen layers of light marks, clashing with the blood-red sword.

Bang Bang!

Blood-red sword pierced through the thirteen layers of light marks and hit the chest of Marquis Xianling.

“That stubborn old guy had his mind power reach level fifty-five and has become a mind power saint king.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, but he didn't find it surprising. After all, Chu Siyuan should've reached that level a long time ago.

Lord Lingquan jumped up and grabbed the waist of Marquis Xianling and yelled, “Retreat!”

Lord Lingquan spread his black wings and rushed toward the forest like a lightning ball, followed by the eight first marquises.

Although Chu Siyuan's mind power had reached level fifty-five, he was way too injured to catch Lord Lingquan.

It was the same for Nine Heavenly Maidens. Every one of them was severely injured, except Qing Mo, so they couldn't fight for a long time.

And besides, Lord Lingquan and the first marquises were all great beings, so nobody could say for sure who was going to win the fight.

Only four Confucius saints survived, aside from the nine heavenly maidens and Chu Siyuan. If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen, they might've been totally annihilated.

And this fight made them realize more than ever the real power of Luosha race.



Zhang Ruochen still looked calm. He took out a bottle, flew to above the swamp and collected Luosha fragmented souls, after which he waved at Carnivorous Holy Flower and said, "Let's go!"

"Are you going to leave without saying anything, Zhang Ruochen?" Chu Siyuan said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Why? Are you going to force me to stay after you've become a mind power saint king?"

Chu Siyuan sat on the ground with his legs crossed and said, "Thanks to you, we changed the situation and defeated those Luosha great beings, and for that, I'm very grateful."

Zhang Ruochen said, "It's not an easy thing to get a thank-you from Master Chu."

Chu Siyuan's eyes popped, "I'm always like this. I can distinguish between kindness and hatred."

"If you don't have anything else to say, I'll head now." Zhang Ruochen shrugged his shoulders.

"Wait."

Chu Siyuan stopped him and said, "You've seen how powerful those Luosha marquises are, and their targets seem to be you and our girl Nalan, and they'll definitely make another attack next time. You're far from enough to fight them alone. How about us teaming up to destroy them?"

"Not interested."

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the forest with his hands behind his back.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to crush Lord Lingquan and the others, but he didn't want to get too involved with the monks from Kunlun's Field, especially when there were working for the empress.

If it weren't for his friendship with Saint Lady, he wouldn't have come.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking after getting to a secret region, and he started to ponder how to fight Lord Lingquan

and the Luosha marquises he led.

It was indeed very difficult for him to fight them alone.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was only strong enough to fight one first marquis, which meant he needed to find other alliances.

“Master, my second fruit has matured, and my power will surge if I can combine it with my real body,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I remember you telling me that your second fruit is your flesh body?”

“That’s right. If I can integrate my second fruit, I’ll have the body of a human being,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “How long will it take you to achieve that?”

“Around a month.”

“Okay, then you should get into the space crystal to refine yourself. Form your human body as quickly as possible.”

Zhang Ruochen put Carnivorous Holy Flower back in the space crystal, then he picked up Abyss Ancient Sword and walked into the forest by himself, embarking on a journey of hunting.

# Chapter 1473 - Nine Yao Divine Tears

Chapter 1473: Nine Yao Divine Tears

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A large group of top Luosha cultivators gathered at a castle made from piled rock in the middle of the forest. Fourth and third marquises were everywhere, patrolling in the castle.

There was an extremely complicated formation in the center of the castle. It was more than 300 meters in diameter.

The Luosha Princess stood in the formation. She was studying the runes and was very focused. Her beautiful face looked translucent under the reflection of the formation's glow.

Yang Qi crossed his arms over his chest. He stood on the side of the formation and looked at her quietly, feeling impressed. No wonder the princess is the top genius of the Luosha Race. Not only is her fighting undefeatable, she's also comparable to those masters in the field of formations.

Even with Yang Qi's cultivation, he'd still suffered when he accidentally entered this ancient formation. But the princess stepped in easily and was studying it, seemingly wanting to set it up again.

The Luosha Princess smiled. "This formation is quite similar to the area deep within the Phoenix Nest. If I can decode it, I might be able to break through the enchantment."

"Your Highness has already gone past the 99 mountains to the Phoenix Nest?" Yang Qi asked.

"Indeed."

Yang Qi was stunned. “Not even the strongest of the Shatuo Seven Fields have crossed the last 33 saint mountains and yet you could come and go as you please. I am so impressed.”

The Luosha Princess stared at the formation while her lips curled up. “None of us are fools, so why are you praising me so purposefully? It won’t be hard for you to enter the last 33 mountains either.”

Yang Qi chuckled. He wanted to continue speaking but suddenly sensed something. He gazed toward the entrance of the castle.

Lord Lingquan walked in with nine first marquises.

What shocked Yang Qi was that they were all more or less injured.

Among them, Marquise Xianling was the most injured and had already fainted.

Yang Qi was Lord Lingquan’s competitor, so he knew how strong the lord was. This was his first time seeing him in such a state of loss.

“Lingquan, how come you look so miserable? Did you get attacked by the seven worlds?” Yang Qi grinned.

Lord Lingquan glared at him and scoffed. He bowed at Luosha Princess and gritted out, “Your Majesty, please let me lead the Luosha army and kill the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields.”

The Luosha Princess walked out of the formation. Looking at them, she was surprised too. “Marquis Fengxing couldn’t come back with you. It seems like you suffered quite a big loss. Tell me. Who did you meet that could make the famous Lord Lingquan lose like this?”

Gritting his teeth, Lord Lingquan was furious. “Marquis Fengxing was killed by that priest of the Guanghan Field. This is blood rivalry. I hope Your Majesty will give me the chance to take revenge.”

“Zhang Ruochen.”

The Luosha Princess was taken aback, but then a smile appeared on her pretty face again.

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed strong, but his cultivation hasn’t risen yet. He’s still only a True Saint. There’s no way he could be your match. How come you still lost so badly?”

“Zhang Ruochen by himself can’t defeat me,” Lord Lingquan said. “But this time, a strange thing happened. Another powerful figure appeared, or maybe...nine...”

“Is it one or nine?” Yang Qi asked.

Then Lord Lingquan described how the Nine Heavenly Maidens turned into one. He didn’t leave out any details.

He knew that the princess had read many books and knew everything. He didn’t understand, but the princess might be able to guess the reason.

After hearing Lord Lingquan’s description, the Luosha Princess’ expression grew serious. She sank into deep thought. Half a beat later, she finally murmured to herself, “Could it be the legendary Nine Yao Divine Tear?”

“What’s that?” Lord Lingquan asked in confusion.

“This has something to do with a super figure,” the Luosha Princess said. “However, that figure died in the god battle 100,000 years ago.”

Yang Qing’s features twitched. “Your Majesty, are you speaking of the Nine Yao God?”

“How can it be?”

Lord Lingquan was frightened. Even after 100,000 years, the Nine Yao God’s name was still known throughout the Hell World. Even a Luosha lord would feel fear at hearing his name.

Some figures still terrorized the world even in death.

The Luosha Princess nodded softly. “The “Nine Yao” point to nine types of extreme power: yang or the sun, yin or the moon, the Luohou, the Jidu, metal, wood, water, fire, and earth. Luohou represents destruction. Jidu represents wisdom. The Nine Yao God is the only one in the entire universe who cultivated all nine powers to the extreme. He was also the controller of a world’s Saintly Way 100,000 years ago.

“In legends, when the Nine Yao God died, all his divine power exploded. It destroyed a mass of stars. Only nine teardrops flowed out. They transformed into nine meteorites and landed in Kunlun’s Field.

“There are many legends about the Nine Yao Divine Tears. Some say that it’s the essence of the Nine Yao God’s power. Others say that his tears contained a vast knowledge inheritance. Even others say that it doesn’t exist at all. It’s just a story that people made up because they were unwilling to believe that the Nine Yao God had died.

“Based off of what Lord Lingquan said, the Nine Heavenly Maidens have different physiques, but are quite similar to the nine powers of the Nine Yao God.”

Yang Qi’s eyes sharpened. “If they really inherited the nine powers, then they aren’t any less threatening than Zhang Ruochen. We must kill them early on.”

The Luosha Princess touched her pointy chin with a slender finger. “After I finish studying this ancient formation, I’ll go meet them personally. If they really inherited the Nine Yao God’s power, then I can capture them and make the Nine Yao Divine Tears again.”

...

...

Mad Man was a 300-year-old strong cultivator from the Eight Ministry Field. He was already at the half-step Saint King Realm. He was definitely a top figure of the Saints Merits Battle.

In past half month, Mad Man had been walking through the forest, hunting Luosha marquises. He’d collected a lot of blood and souls.

Of course, he wouldn’t be merciful toward Saints of other words either. He would also rob them.

Right now, he stole all the Luosha blood and souls from a dozen Great Devil Ten Square Field Saints. However, Mad Man didn’t kill them. He spared their lives.

First, Mad Man was very confident in his abilities. He didn't fear their revenge.

Second, he thought that the Eight Ministry Field and Great Devil Ten Square Field were only competitors, not enemies. Since they were competitors, he only had to steal what he needed. There was no need to kill them.

This group of Great Devil Ten Square Field Saints have collected a lot of Luosha blood and souls. I can exchange them for at least 250,000 merits.

Holding the storage bag, Mad Man smiled in satisfaction.

Suddenly, his smile froze. He quickly grabbed the metal rod hanging from his waist and struck backward.

There was no one behind him.

However, when he struck with the rod, the space trembled. Rings of ripples spread out.

"As expected of the top five figures of the Tianmu Field. You're very perceptive." A woman's laugh rang out.

However, she changed her location quickly. Even with Mad Man's cultivation, it was still difficult to track her. He could only be on guard.

Not panicking, Mad Man asked, "What field are you from? Are you purposely testing me?"

"No one would try to test you." The woman's voice rang out again. "I'm here to steal the Luosha blood and souls from you."

Her voice was sometimes near, sometimes far.

Mad Man couldn't help but laugh. "Someone dares to steal from me? You really think I won't kill?"

Han Qiu walked out of the void and landed before Mad Man. "My sect leader has been watching you for a long time and thinks you're not bad. He decided to steal from you once."

Mad Man scoffed. "Who's your sect leader? The one who can steal from me hasn't been born yet."

“I suggest you cooperate. Then, you might keep your life.” A cold voice sounded behind Mad Man.

Holding a rusted sword, Le stepped on bloodied leaves and walked until he was within 100 feet of Mad Man.

One hundred feet was the distance where he could kill with one strike.

Mad Man sensed a dangerous aura on Le. “Who exactly is your sect leader?” he asked.

“A good guy, of course,” Han Qiu said.

A good guy steals from others? Mad Man cursed inwardly. Then he activated his Holy Qi and sneakily poured it into his metal rod. Tadpole-shaped golden patterns emerged on the rod.

Whoosh!

The surrounding space trembled furiously. It was like the world was shattering.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air beside Mad Man. He was less than three feet away. Reaching out, he pressed onto Mad Man’s shoulder. “I only steal Luosha blood and souls. I don’t kill. Of course, if you attack me, I’ll definitely fight back. If something goes wrong and you die here, then I can only say sorry.”

Zhang Ruochen slapped Mad Man’s shoulder. He used horrible inner strength to make Mad Man lose feeling in his arm.

Mad Man recognized Zhang Ruochen. It was the priest from the Guanghan Field—the shameless guy who liked to take advantage of others’ troubles.

Earlier, if he wasn’t focused on Le and Han Qiu, he wouldn’t have dislocated his arm even if Zhang Ruochen used spatial power.

It was a ploy.

It was a ploy from the start.

Mad Man had witnessed Zhang Ruochen’s cruelty. He didn’t dare to gamble his life, so he chuckled wryly. “What do you



mean you'll only steal once?"

Han Qiu smiled, showing her white teeth. "It means that we're friends after this time. We won't steal from you again. You can even come with us to steal from other people. Don't you think you're lucky to have met us?"

# Chapter 1474 - Pillage!

Chapter 1474: Pillage!

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mad Man was indeed a top-tier being as he had four hundred and thirty-six drops of Luosha marquis blood and five hundred and seventy Luosha fragmented souls.

Obviously, he wasn't capable enough of killing so many Luosha marquises, which meant he got most of them from other participants.

Zhagn Ruochen took out Merits Records Wall and traded all Luosha blood and fragmented souls into merits.

“Two million, five hundred and forty thousand merits. Not bad, not bad. It's always efficient to rob the top-tier great beings.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

After ten days of killings and robbing, Guanghai Field's merits had exceeded eighty million, and it was close to Eight Ministry Field who was ranked the second.

Zhang Ruochen's personal merits had reached fifty-two million, making him the eleventh place on 'Saints Merits Rank'.

Mad Man looked miserable.

He spent two months collecting so many Luosha blood and fragmented souls, yet he was robbed by Zhang Ruochen all at once.

If it weren't for his strong state of mind, he would've gone mad already.

However, as he looked at the Merits Records Wall again, his eyes glinted and started to plot a plan.

Han Qiu and Le had also collected lots of Luosha blood and fragmented souls, but Zhang Ruochen let them trade them for the merits of Kunlun's Field.

Deep down, Zhang Ruochen didn't want Kunlun's Field to be ranked last.

Mad Man seemed to have made up his mind. He stood up, spit on the ground and said, "Is this going to be the only time you robbed me, Zhang Ruochen?"

"Of course. I'm a man of my word," Zhang Ruochen said.

Mad Man said, "Okay, then how about we robbing others together?"

Zhang Ruochen looked surprised. He said, "What do you mean?"

Mad Man said, "Let's team up to rob other saints and trade them for merits. Saints Merits Battle will end in twenty days, and I can fight the saints who want to kill you, but I need to make sure that I'll have all the Luosha blood and fragmented souls I obtain myself, and you're going to let me trade them for merits."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Eight Ministry Field is second only to Great Devil Ten Square Field among Shatuo Seven Fields. You guys don't need merits that much, do you?"

Mad Man said, "But I need merits. Ever since the battle against Hell World began, I've collected five million and two hundred thousand merits. If I can get more than ten million merits, I can get into Heaven World's 'Saints Merits Battle'. Saints Merits Battle is where I can collect merits most quickly, so I have to seize this chance."

Zhang Ruochen nodded.

If a talent entered 'Saints Merits Rank' of Heaven World, he would gain lots of valuables and resources from his mother field, and he would have a much higher status in his own field.

He would be revered by countless monks. He might even be bestowed valuable treasures by Heaven World.

To the fields that were ranked low, they would place higher value on the saints who could enter ‘Saints Merits Rank’.

Obviously, Mad Man wanted to enter the rank too.

“Okay, I’ll count you in.”

Zhang Ruochen gave Le a look.

Le knew that Zhang Ruochen wanted him to make sure Mad Man behave.

Le walked a few steps farther and walked on Mad Man’s side. If Mad Man attempted anything else, he would kill him without hesitation.

Mad Man looked at Le, but he couldn’t figure out his cultivation as Le looked like a country boy who had never practiced martial way.

However, this seemingly ordinary country boy felt very dangerous.

Mad Man then looked to Han Qiu, yet he couldn’t even see her real face.

“Two prominent beings from Kunlun’s Field are following the priest of Guanghan Field. How strange...”

A seductively charming girl showed up in front of Zhang Ruochen. She looked like someone who just became an adult, and her dark hair looked smooth and clean. Her eyebrows were flat above her glinting eyes. She had an exquisite nose and sparkling lips. Even Mad Man who had become a half-step saint king got extremely horny seeing her.

She was seductive with the perfect body. Both her long legs and curves attracted the men around her.

However, she bowed at Zhang Ruochen and called him ‘master’.

“Zhang Ruochen, you have such luck in girls.”

Mad Man swallowed some saliva as he felt his blood was about to boil and his organs were burning. However, the girl who was standing in front of Zhang Ruochen couldn't be calmer.

“Damn it.”

Mad Man cursed and immediately performed techniques to suppress his emotions. He feared that he might humiliate himself by jumping on her.

Carnivorous Holy Flower had merged her flesh and become a half-step saint king.

Probably due to the saint soul of Princess Moran in her body, Carnivorous Holy Flower looked almost exactly like her.

There was mysterious fragrance coming out of her body. Any creature, even females, would be attracted by that smell.

However, they would be immediately swallowed if they got close to her.

After talking with Carnivorous Holy Flower for a second, he looked to Han Qiu and said, “Have you been in contact with Princess White Li?”

Han Qiu said, “I've left the special marks of Sacred Sect in the forest. If she sees it, she'll follow us.”

“Okay, let's wait for her for a couple for days then,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Han Qiu, Le and Princess White Li were among the strongest saints from Sacred Sect, even Monster Yuan and Guoguo were only at second level.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to gather them together before he went to Phoenix Nest. If so, he would be able to defeat or even kill Lord Lingquan and the Luosha marquises he led.

Mad Man said, “We can totally go rob the heirs of Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field. They must've collected ton of Luosha blood and fragmented souls.”

“Do you know where they are?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Mad Man said, "I robbed a true saint from Purple Mansion Field not long ago, and I managed to get some information out of him. He said that Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu are in Wujin Saint Mountain, one of the thirty-three inner saint mountains, and they've discovered something incredible."

Zhang Ruochen stared at Mad Man's eyes, and he could tell that he wasn't lying. He nodded and said, "Then let's go meet those saints from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field."

...

Wujin Saint Mountain was the saint mountain closest to Phoenix Nest. Its previous owner was Wujin Ancestor, the most powerful great being under Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Wujin Ancestor had tremendous power, which led many monks to suspect that it'd become a supreme saint.

Wujin Saint Mountain was extraordinary, and the thick saint Qi formed a mist bridge that surrounded the mountain. There was a saint spring with crimson water in the south as if it descended from heaven.

There were many saint pills and saint trees growing beside the saint spring, and they were all picked by the saints from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field. Some saints even found saint stone minerals and saint jade minerals in Wujin Saint Mountain.

There were many saints from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field gathering at the bottom of the saint spring waterfall. They tried to collect as much water of the saint spring as possible as they found the water in the saint spring highly helpful for their refining as the water was like diluted Nine True Saint Dew.

A drop of water from the saint spring was equal to one ten thousandth drop of Nine True Saint Dew.

There seemed to be limitless water coming out of the saint spring, which made the saints from the two large fields manic.

"Wujin Ancestor must've become a supreme saint. Only places where supreme saints used to live can gather so much heaven and earth saint Qi which gives rise to so many refining

resources,” an old woman with six spider legs on her back said with excitement.

A pill master from Purple Mansion Field opened an alchemy furnace which gave out thick medicinal fragrance.

That pill master’s eyes popped, “I’ve made it. I’ve made Ning True Saint Dew using the water from the saint spring. If we can get all the water from the saint spring, we can make hundreds of thousands of drops of Nine True Saint Dew, or even a million drops!”

Absolute saints would fight to death for ten thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew.

As for one million drops of Nine True Saint Dew, it was a huge amount of refining resources even to a large field.

Mad Man landed beside the alchemy furnace and said, “Really? That fantastic?”

“Of course. If we can turn all the water in the saint spring into Nine True Saint Dew, even supreme saints will crave for it. Go tell our heir,” that pill master yelled with excitement.

“Why? This furnace belongs to me now!”

Mad Man guffawed and waved his hand. He dragged the alchemy furnace into his spring ring with black saint Qi.

That space ring was given by Zhang Ruochen to him as a present whose inner space was a thousand times larger than his previous storage bag.

That pill master couldn’t be angrier as he had never met a saint this rude. He never knew him before, yet he robbed him of his alchemy furnace the first time they met.

“Who the hell are you? Why should I give you my alchemy furnace? This is pillage.”

“Yes, it is.”

Mad Man smirked.

Mad Man was upset for a long time after being robbed by Zhang Ruochen, and now, he felt significantly better after robbing someone else.

Mad Man stood on a black rock beside the saint spring and yelled at the saints who were collecting water from the saint spring, “Did you hear that? Robbing!”



# Chapter 1475 - Big Robbery, Big Rewards

Chapter 1475: Big Robbery, Big Rewards

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Robbery?

The Saints of the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field were all shocked.

There were more than 1,000 Saints gathered under the Holy Spring Waterfall. None of them were weak. But a crazy cultivator had suddenly jumped out to rob them.

Was he actually crazy?

A forty-year-old True Saint from the Purple Mansion Field recognized Mad Man. Shocked, he said, “He... He’s Mad Man, a half-step Saint King from the Eight Ministry Field. A while ago, I was robbed by him in the Chaotic Forest. Now... He’s actually come here...”

Boom!

Under the Holy Spring Waterfall, fire poured out of all the Saints’ eyes. Holy power flooded out.

“So the Mad Man of the Eight Ministry Field is this arrogant and wild.”

“So what if it’s the Mad Man? If he comes to Wujin Saint Mountain and dares to rob us, he’s looking for death.”

The Mad Man was well-known. Even many Saints from the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field had heard of him before. He was able to fight a first step Saint King. Of course,

there were many people from both worlds and they didn't fear him.

An elder with a long golden sword walked out and landed before Mad Man. His eyes were like eagles. "Wujin Saint Mountain is the territory of the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field. There are more than 50,000 Saints gathered here. You think you can succeed?"

The golden sword elder was very strong. He was actually at the peak of the Absolute Saint Realm.

"It's the death penalty for those who dare to steal from the Purple Mansion Field."

At least 100 Saints at the waterside took out their saint weapons. They poured Holy Qi in and activated the runes inside the weapons, preparing to kill Mad Man.

The air in that area hardened a bit. A murderous aura spread throughout.

Faced with this, Mad Man didn't show any fear. He just cackled.

Whoosh!

Wearing a blood armor, Zhang Ruochen walked out of rings of spatial ripples. As if walking through a curtain of water, he hovered above the waterfall.

He waved his hand, sending out 12 Buddhist pearls.

These pearls hovered in 12 spots in the sky. Like 12 stars, they shone and wrapped the 1,000-some Saints in the light.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the sky like a god. His aura gave the Saints below him great pressure.

The Saints of the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field realized with a start that their connection with the outside world had been cut off. It was like they'd entered an independent space.

"That is...the priest of the Guanghan Field."

One Saint recognized Zhang Ruochen.

“Is Zhang Ruochen working with mad Man?”

The Saints of the two worlds were in uproar again. Some of the older ones sensed something wrong and hurriedly said, “Everyone, work together and kill them.”

Without hesitating further, more than 100 Saints attacked at once. Instantly, swords, broadswords, towers, pagodas... All sorts of weapons were sent out like raining light, attacking Zhang Ruochen and the Mad Man.

Zhang Ruochen stood calmly at the height. He used Spiritual Power to control the 12 Buddhist pearls. The dozens of weapons were about to hit his body.

Whoosh!

A black vortex appeared before him. A great attractive force swallowed all of the weapons.

The Saints below were stunned. They felt their connection with the weapons break off.

“Ha.”

Long black hair falling down, Han Qiu walked out of the vortex. She held a pile of broken weapons and scattered them down at the Saints of the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field. “What scrap metal is this?” she said with disdain.

Thud, thud.

The saint weapons fell onto the ground, creating huge craters.

On the other end, Mad Man held his metal rod and sent all the incoming weapons flying. He laughed maniacally. “I suggest you hand over all your treasures. Why struggle meaninglessly?”

“How dare you? Do you really think that the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field are weaklings that you can toy with?”

The gold sword elder was upset. He grabbed in the air and a piercing clang sounded. The golden sword flew out of its sheath and cut down at Mad Man with a streak of gold.

However, its light suddenly darkened halfway through.

The strong sword Qi actually thinned.

Because the elder had already died.

A rusty metal sword had penetrated his forehead, leaving a bloody hole. Strands of Holy Qi dispersed from the hole.

Le stood to the elder's side. He'd already pulled his sword back, leaving a trail of blood.

“Powerful indeed.”

Mad Man was shocked inside.

After all, even with his cultivation, he would have to work to kill the gold sword elder. However, Le had killed him with just one strike.

The sword technique was clean, sharp, and fatal. It was impressive.

The gold sword elder didn't even know who had killed him.

Four top strong figures had appeared in a row. The Saints present panicked even further. More importantly, they didn't have anyone who could calm them down and take charge. Without a leader, it was difficult to face such dangers.

One Absolute Saint gathered his courage and yelled, “Everyone, get into a formation and face the en...emy...ah!”

Before he could finish, Han Qiu tore him apart with dark power. His body turned into bits of black dust.

A black vortex appeared in Han Qiu's palm. She sucked all the saintly power of the Absolute Saint.

“Rules of Darkness.”

Mad Man's scalp went numb. He finally realized how terrifying the woman beside Zhang Ruochen was. She actually cultivated the Way of Darkness, one of the nine ancient ways.

Darkness swallowed all.

Han Qiu followed the map of meridians from the Taichi Natural Techniques, one of the six legendary books. She circulated the power from the Absolute Saint and converted it all into her own power.

In the span of a breath, her cultivation improved greatly again.

“Whoever dares to move will die.”

Dark Power spewed out of Han Qiu, filling the air. Fear instantly arose in all the Saints for no reason.

The so-called “Way of Darkness” was the source of all negative power.

The Evil Way, Demonic Way, Ghost Way, Way of Death, Way of Curses, Way of Devouring, Way of Destruction etc. all branched from the Way of Darkness. This naturally contained people’s fears.

“Such a terrifying woman. She’s like a devil from the Hell World.”

Mad Man shuddered. He realized deeply that he couldn’t offend Han Qiu. Even more, he couldn’t offend Zhang Ruochen.

Everyone was intimidated. The Saints of the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field didn’t dare to fight back. They obediently handed over all their treasures.

Treasures were good, but their lives were more important.

Among the 1,000 Saints, there were more than 2,000 storage bags. The treasures poured out of them were piled into a big mountain.

Treasure bottles, saint stones, jades, medicines, scrolls, pills, weapons... All sorts of treasures shone brilliantly. Seeing the mountain before them, the lips of all the Saints twitched. They ground their teeth in hatred, but no one dared to fight back.

“What are you waiting for? Let’s split the spoils!”

Mad Man flew to the foot of the mountain. He rubbed his hands in excitement.

Right now, he realized that it was only child’s play before. This was a true robbery. Only people as crazy as him and Zhang Ruochen had the guts to do something so crazy.

It affected the survival of their mother worlds. They carried millions of lives on their backs. Who cared about morals?

The Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field had stolen many goods and killed many participants too.

Han Qiu gazed at Zhang Ruochen. “How should we split it?”  
“I’ll take half. You all divide the rest equally.”

Zhang Ruochen used Spiritual Power to scan the treasure mountain. The number of treasures appeared in his mind clearly.

Then he took out his spatial ring and collected half.

Mad Man, Han Qiu, and Le didn’t object to this distribution method. They all started taking their portion.

This time, Zhang Ruochen exchanged more than six million merit points. The Guanghan Field surpassed the Eight Ministry Field on the Merits Records Rank, becoming second.

As Han Qiu and Le exchanged their merits, the Kunlun’s Field rose from last place to sixth.

Tianmu Field became last place.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the edge of the spring and took a deep breath. The Holy Qi in him instantly became active. His limbs felt very refreshed.

“This is indeed an incredible spring.”

He took out the Mercury Gourd and absorbed the entire spring and waterfall.

Before the Saints Merits Battle had started, Zhang Ruochen had taken the Mercury Gourd back from the Crazy Alcoholic.

Adding in the saintly spring stolen from the Saints of the two worlds, Zhang Ruochen estimated that the spring inside the gourd could produce 200,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew.

Splash!

The spring didn’t dry. It quickly flowed down from the top, forming a waterfall again.

Han Qiu looked up. “Fang Yi, Heir of the Hell Blade Field, and Sword Master Dongliu, Heir of the Purple Mansion Field, had led a group of the top figures from the two worlds up the

saint spring. They entered the mountain and discovered a mansion. The mansion might contain the Wujin Patriarch's secret collection.”

“A Supreme Saint's secret collection,” Zhang Ruochen repeated. Interest colored his eyes.

However, Mad Man was confused. He couldn't help but ask Han Qiu, “How do you know where Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu went? And about Wujin Patriarch's secret collection?”

“I didn't only absorb that Absolute Saint's power. I also absorbed some valuable information from his mind.” Han Qiu frowned. “However, the most important memories were sealed by a strong force. I couldn't extract them at all. They're already destroyed, along with his physical body.”

# Chapter 1476 - Rules Emperor Weapons

Chapter 1476: Rules Emperor Weapons

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen set up a large spatial maze which trapped all the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field inside, and then, he entered the saint mountain through the saint spring waterfall.

Han Qiu's hands released traces of dark light, covering everyone.

Doing so made sure the monks from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field weren't able to detect their forces.

Mad Mad carried his iron rod on his shoulder and walked behind Zhang Ruochen. He asked, "How long can your maze trap them?"

"They've lost their saint weapons, which greatly decreased their power. I reckon the spatial maze can trap them for at least half an hour," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Half an hour... Still a bit pressing," Mad Man said.

Han Qiu's hair touched the ground. She sneered and said, "We should've killed them all."

Mad Man felt scared hearing that. He said, "The monks from the seven fields, and some of the prominent beings from Heaven World are all watching through the battlefield reflection. If we actually kill them all, it'll be a massacre, and we'll be punished after getting back to Heaven World."



Han Qiu said, “Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field killed many saints, didn’t they?”

“That’s different! Although Heaven World usually turns a blind eye to the conflicts among the large fields, there’s still a bottom line we can’t cross. If we cross it, Heaven World will definitely interfere. If we really kill more than a thousand saints who’ve given up fighting back, we’ll cross that line, no doubt,” Mad Man said.

Han Qiu said, “If we don’t kill them, they’ll soon lead a large group of saints to come for us.”

Le who had been silent the whole time spoke out, “Why are we wasting time thinking about it? To me, it really doesn’t matter.”

In the end, they stopped fighting and walked toward the inner area of the saint mountain.

The pillage in Wujin Saint Mountain shocked many saints from the seven fields to their core.

More than one thousand saints were robbed like that, and not by some saint king or a supreme saint, but for saints.

“This is insane!”

Many monks had that thought.

“None of the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field fought back at all? Are they all freaking useless? How the hell did they become saints in the first place?”

“If all of them teamed up, they stood a chance of destroying those four robbers.”

“They brought shame to Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field! How are they going to return to their mother world?”

Strangely, almost no monks cursed Zhang Ruochen and the others, instead, they found the inaction of the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field totally unacceptable, and that they brought shame to both their own fields and the entire Heaven World.

Even the monks from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field were infuriated.

As for the supreme saints, they focused on Han Qiu and Le as they found them unbelievably powerful.

And besides, they were perceptive enough to see some of the tiny details in the battlefield.

“I reckon the woman is practicing Way of Darkness. Perhaps the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field only gave up fighting back because they were affected by the power of darkness.”

“How can a human being withstand the power of darkness?”

“For what it’s worth, she’s a highly gifted person. We must send someone to get in contact with her after Saints Merits Battle is over.”

“Who would’ve thought there were so many great talents in Kunlun’s Field if it weren’t for Saints Merits Battle? If we give them five hundred more years, Kunlun’s Field’s power will surge.”

...

As he walked forward, Zhang Ruochen put the water from the saint spring into his Mercury Gourd.

After walking for God knew how long, the tunnel started to get darker and colder. Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen stopped walking as he sensed traces of tremendous saintly way ripples.

He stopped collecting the water from the saint spring and hung Mercury Gourd at his waist. He took out Abyss Ancient Sword and walked forward carefully.

After fifteen minutes, they entered an underground cave.

The wall was more solid than iron, and the gravity inside was way higher than outside. They felt like they were carrying an entire Wujin Saint Mountain.

They found it very difficult to handle the pressure even with their cultivation, and that their bodies would explode if they fought fiercely.

Whoosh!

Traces of golden light spread like golden rivers.

At the center of the golden light floated a towering palace. It looked like it was made of golden, and the thirty-six pillars around it had phantoms of thirty-six different phantoms as if thirty-six saint souls were crafted in the pillars.

The saint spring flowed from that divine palace.

Zhang Ruochen had collected enough water from the saint spring to make hundreds of thousands of drops of Nine True Saint Dew, but apparently, it was only a very small part of it. There should be more saint spring in that palace.

“It’s indeed a saint mansion. Are there treasures of supreme saints hidden inside?” Mad Man’s eyes popped with mania.

No creatures could stay calm when it comes to supreme saints’ treasures.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the golden river flowing out of the saint mansion, and he grabbed forward, forming a large hand print.

The second his hand print touched the golden river, it was immediately dispelled into saint Qi, merging with the golden river.

Mad Man was confused seeing that.

“Just as what I expected.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “That golden river is made of saintly way rules. I reckon that saint mansion is a rules emperor weapon Wujin Ancestor.”

Everyone who was present knew about rules emperor weapons.

When a monk reached Heaven Pass Realm, he or she would be able to form an object using saintly way rules, and that object was the embryonic form of a rules saint weapon.

As the monks improved their cultivation, their saintly way rules would get denser and more solid, and the embryonic form would turn into a real rules saint weapon.

Only saint kings were able to make rules saint weapons, which represented the essence of saint kings to some extent.

To most of the saint kings, their rules saint weapons would crumble when they were killed, and the only thing left was a saint source.

Refining saint sources of saint kings meant having the inheritance of saint kings, but it couldn't compare with refining rules saint weapons.

When a monk obtained the rules saint weapons of saint kings, he or she would find it easier to comprehend saintly way rules, and they might even be able to absorb the saintly way rules from rules saint weapons and transferred them into their own saintly way rules.

Which meant saint sources of saint kings were the most precious for monks under Heaven Pass Realm, but for absolute saints, the rules saint weapons were the most important.

“A golden saint mansion made of saintly way rules? How many saintly way rules are there? How important was the owner of the saint mansion?” Han Qiu was surprised.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Which means Wujin Ancestor must have been a supreme saint, and this saint mansion is a rules emperor weapon.”

Rules saint weapons of first-step saint kings were ‘class-one rules saint weapons’.

Rules saint weapons of second-step saint kings were ‘class-two rules saint weapons’.

...

Rules saint weapons of ninth-step saint kings were ‘class-nine rules saint weapons’.

Only rules saint weapons were qualified as ‘rules emperor weapons’.

Rules saint weapons could only be preserved if saint kings gave them to their heirs, otherwise they would be broken when the saint kings were killed.

Which was why rules saint weapons were scarce, and in the auction of Heaven World, any rules saint weapon would be craved for.

Even a class-one rules saint weapon could help an absolute saint become a saint king immediately, saving decades of time.

As for the higher-class rules saint weapons, nobody would put them in the market.

As for rules emperor weapons, they were one of the most valuable treasures, and they were valuable enough to instigate a battle between two large fields which might involve supreme saints.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The saint spring is transferred from the saint mansion absorbing the saint Qi from heaven and land. If we can get the saint mansion, we can get the saint spring, and we’ll be able to make thousands of drops of Nine True Saint Dew everyday.”

“That’s a rules emperor weapon. I’ll try everything to get it.” Mad Man’s wanted to go and get it now.

However, a large group of saints gathered below the saint mansion.

Almost half of the top-tier beings from Purple Mansion Field and Blade Hell Field were there.

There were thirty-four of them.

Even the weakest ones were pinnacle absolute saints, and twelve of them were half-step saint kings. They guarded the saint mansion like twelve Gods of War.

A team like that was already strong enough to encircle a saint king.

However, there seemed to be formation around the saint mansion, so it was very difficult for them to approach it. Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu had to move very slowly, and every step required lots of energies.

“No wonder Sword Master Dongliu and Fang Yi haven’t been around for half a month. This is what they’re aiming at.”

“They’re very close to the saint mansion already.”

Zhang Ruochen activated Hundred Saints Blood Armor to cover his body and said, “Mad Man, when Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu break the formation around the saint mansion, we’ll attack them at the front. Han Qiu, Le, you guys know what you’re supposed to do, right?”

# Chapter 1477 - Kill There

Chapter 1477: Kill There

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Around 300 feet away from the saint mansion, two tiny dots were walking forward. If one was closer, one would realize that the two dots were people shining with divine light. They were Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu.

They were too small compared to the saint mansion, so they looked like dots.

Fang Yi and Sword Saint Dongliu's expressions were somber. Every step that they took would create dense patterns under their feet.

Right then, they took a rune scroll out of their bags and hit it toward the ground.

Following an explosion, the patterns all cracked and disappeared.

Then the two continued forward.

They used countless scrolls and finally, Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu were approaching the saint mansion. Even with their mindsets, they still couldn't contain their excitement.

The rules emperor weapon.

Once they received it, it would mean that they could create large amounts of Ning True Saint Dew and become the richest Saints. Even more, they would have a higher chance of reaching the Supreme Saint Realm. It would take less time and they could surpass others their age.

With the rules emperor weapon, their status in the Heaven World would improve too.

Argh!

Kaboom.

Suddenly, the air in the cave shook. It was accompanied by roaring dragons and the sound of wheels turning.

“What’s happening?”

Fang Yi turned to look. He saw a brilliant war chariot pulled by nine dragons. It rushed out of the darkness.

Both the chariot and the nine dragons radiated with extremely strong auras that even made the air tremble.

“Zhang...Ruochen...”

Fang Yi was taken aback. Then fury flashed past his eyes.

Mad Man stood on one of the dragon skeletons of the Golden Dragon Carriage. “Brother Fang, Brother Dongliu, long time no see. How about you give us this saint mansion?”

Give you?

Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu had spent great effort to undo the formations outside the saint mansion. Why should they hand it over?

Sword Master Dongliu was quite composed. “The top figures of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field are here. They can take care of these people. Let’s try to take the saint mansion.”

Fang Yi issued an order to the strong figures outside the saint mansion. “Kill these two.”

At least ten Saints started moving. Some attacked the Golden Dragon Carriage from afar with saint spells and weapons. Others charged over directly.

The ones who didn’t participate released their Spiritual Power, putting up their guards.

Since Zhang Ruochen and Mad Man appeared, it was possible that other strong figures were hiding too.



A 30-meter-long fish-shaped Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon unleashed complete force and crashed against the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Rings of golden light instantly flooded out of the carriage. A dozen dragons flew out, forcing the purple fish back.

“Such a powerful carriage. I wonder what type of Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon it is.”

Mad Man was quite shocked. He knew that Zhang Ruochen’s chariot was very advanced. Otherwise, it couldn’t force back a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon at full power so easily.

They were both Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, but they still had a great difference in power.

Weapons with 10,000 to 20,000 patterns were known as First-Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Their complete power could form one ring of saintly halo.

Weapons with 20,000 to 30,000 patterns were known as Second-Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Their complete power could form two rings.

The more patterns a weapon had, the higher the grade and the stronger it was.

Of course, for Absolute Saints and half-step Saint Kings, Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons were mostly used for intimidation. Even with their saintly powers, they could only sustain the complete activation of a First-Yao weapon once or twice.

Only top figures with a complete body constitution like Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu had wider Sea of Qi than other Saints. They could activate a First-Yao weapon completely multiple times.

Second-Yao weapons needed even more saintly power. Even a Saint with complete body constitution was far from able to activate it completely before reaching the Saint King Realm.

Thus, even if the Golden Dragon Carriage was a Nine-Yao weapon, it only had one halo now. The power that it unleashed was far from a Second-Yao weapon’s complete power.

The Golden Dragon Carriage powerfully broke through three Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and four spells. It charged toward the saint mansion.

“Break!”

A half-transparent water tribe half-step Saint King rushed out to stop the Golden Dragon Carriage. He activated the water Rules of Saintly Way. A silver river hovered above his hand.

The river started spinning almost transforming into a liquid spear. He stabbed the carriage.

Poof.

The liquid river quickly froze into sturdy white ice. It was still in a spiral shape and carried strong penetrative abilities.

Mad Man pushed off, flying from the Golden Dragon Carriage. He grabbed his metal stick and slammed down powerfully. His metal stick wasn't an ordinary item. It was heavier than a mountain and created ripples when he swung it down.

Kaboom.

The spiral ice river was shattered by the metal. Even the water half-step Saint King was hit. He took seven steps back. Each step was a dozen feet apart.

Cracks appeared on the half-step Saint King's body. He was actually injured.

“Such a powerful Mad Man.”

The water tribe half-step Saint King opened his arms. He hurriedly lifted up a hundred-foot-wide water ball and protected his body in it.

Mad Man laughed. “You're the palace lord of the Jellyfish Palace from the Purple Mansion Field? You're pretty strong, but unfortunately, you encountered me.”

Suddenly, two strong beams of power came from behind Mad Man. Two other half-step Saint Kings charged toward him.

One was covered in purple flames. He looked like a monkey and was 30 feet tall. This was the leader of the Flaming

Monkey Tribe from the Hell Blade Field.

The other was a human. He was very old and held a crescent-shaped sword. He was the disciple of a human Supreme Saint from the Hell Blade Field, Super-strength Elder.

The three half-step Saint Kings attacked the same time. Mad Man felt pressured and wiped his smile away. He touched his metal rod. Many tadpole-shaped patterns appeared on it.

“Fight!”

Mad Man swung the metal rod. A large mass of tadpole-shaped power waves surged out, sweeping toward the three half-step Saint Kings.

Mad Man was in the top five figures of the Eight Ministry Field. He could take care of three half-step Saint Kings by himself with ease.

While attacking, Mad Man made weird sounds like crying or laughing. He was truly like a crazy demon.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen steered the Golden Dragon Carriage and was unobstructed. He sent seven peak Absolute Saints flying in a row. Three of them were badly hurt.

Kaboom.

The nine dragons ran at the same time. Their auras were stronger than a first step Saint King.

Soon, the Golden Dragon Carriage caught up to Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu. It reached the foot of the saint mansion.

The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were far behind the chariot.

“Such a shameless fellow.” Fang Yi huffed coldly. “We spent all that time and effort to undo the formation and you just rushed over like that. You want to take advantage of our efforts?”

“How can I be more shameless than you?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Back then, you and the Saints from the Hell Blade

Field had forced us on a suicide mission in the gorge. I still remember that.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yi’s anger grew. “Okay, since you’re here, then let’s take care of all our past conflicts.”

Fang Yi pressed his hands to his temples. He activated the White Micro Star with all his might.

The next moment, a white pillar of light flew out of his forehead and crashed toward the galloping Golden Dragon Carriage.

Boom.

A ring of golden light formed around the Golden Dragon Carriage. It clashed violently with the white pillar of light. Beams of chaotic Saintly Way power flooded out.

Unfortunately, even the White Micro Star couldn’t get past the Golden Dragon Carriage’s defense.

The carriage was about to crush Fang Yi, but he still wasn’t panicking. He bit down on his tongue harshly and red lines appeared on his face. They extended from his forehead to the White Micro Star.

Whoosh!

A huge white star projected before him.

The Golden Dragon Carriage crashed against the White Micro Star’s projection. It shook violently and then was sent to the right.

Standing to the side, Sword Master Dongliu’s pupils narrowed to the size of needles. He snatched this opportunity and stabbed forward.

Because he was too fast, he actually formed 18 afterimages. All of them were connected in a straight line.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen flew out of the carriage like a soaring bird. The space before him twisted into a whirlpool.

Sword Master Dongliu's sword stabbed into the whirlpool but didn't change direction. It went straight for Zhang Ruochen's heart.

It was obvious that this strike's power and speed, as well as Sword Master Dongliu's sword intent were very terrifying. They could fend off Zhang Ruochen's twisted space.

Of course, Sword Master Dongliu's sword was slowing down. The Sword Qi also scattered in the twisted space.

Finally, the sharp sword tip stopped around three inches from Zhang Ruochen's heart.

"It's only a little bit. If my cultivation improved more, Zhang Ruochen might not be able to stop me." Sword Master Dongliu found this disappointing.

"Zhang Ruochen, it seems that you've improved greatly. No wonder you dare to charge over alone. Unfortunately, you ran into the two of us. Today, you are destined to die."

An exquisite dagger flew out of Fang Yi's palm. It transformed into a thin glint and stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

From what Fang Yi saw, Zhang Ruochen was focusing on Sword Master Dongliu and wouldn't be able to dodge this dagger.

# Chapter 1478 - Sword Master versus Sword Moves

Chapter 1478

: Sword Master versus Sword Moves

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The white dagger was one inch long, giving out the power of a supreme saint.

It was a supreme saint ancient weapon.

With Fang Yi's attainments on blade technique, coupled with the power of the dagger itself, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't end well if he got hit, even if he was wearing a Hundred Saints blood Armor.

The saint sword in Sword Master Dongliu's hand was only three inches away from Zhang Ruochen. If Zhang Ruochen shifted his focus to the dagger, he would definitely be hit by the saint sword.

At this moment, Abyss Ancient Sword flew out and clashed with the flying dagger.

The sword spirit of Abyss Ancient Sword also showed up. It had a pair of black wings on its back, which kind of looked like Zhang Ruochen standing on the sword.

As Abyss Ancient Sword being upgraded, the sword spirit would get more intelligent and powerful, and it could fight as an individual.

Certainly, without Zhang Ruochen's operation, it couldn't defend itself against Fang Yi.

“Seven Stars Dagger.”

Fang Yi’s hands gleamed, and he wielded the dagger downwards through space.

The inch-long dagger formed a dagger shadow that was more than a hundred feet long, hitting Abyss Ancient Sword.

Bang!

Abyss Ancient Sword fell on the ground, making the solid land crumble.

Blade Qi rushed toward Zhang Ruochen as if it were going to tear him apart.

Zhang Ruochen pressed forward, getting out of the sword way suppression of Sword Master Dongliu, and when the dagger Qi flew toward him, Zhang Ruochen formed a dragon shadow and an elephant shadow at the same time.

As the dragon shadow and the elephant shadow crumbled, Zhang Ruochen stepped back dozens of feet. Blade traces showed up on his arms.

Hundred Saints Blood Armor could heal itself, so it immediately repaired itself.

Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu teamed up. One of them was using a dagger while the other, blade. They looked like a perfect team.

“You’ve improved quite a bit that you managed to ward off our combined attack,” Fang Yi said.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen’s greatest threat was the godly spirit weapon he had to Fang Yi. As for his power, it wasn’t at the top-tier level.

But now, Zhang Ruochen was already at their level, making him a tremendous threat.

Zhang Ruochen put back his Abyss Ancient Sword and said, “You’ve advanced as well. You’re now a pinnacle absolute saint.”

Sword Saint Dongliu said, “He’s called Descendant of Time and Space, which means he masters the power of time and

space at the same time. We must eradicate the threat today.”

Fang Yi looked the back of Zhang Ruochen, and he saw seventeen states rush out like seventeen gleaming stars.

“You’re not getting away today,” Fang Yi said.

Zhang Ruochen also noticed the seventeen saints at his back. Three of them were half-step saint kings who the rest were pinnacle absolute saints.

All of them were holding supreme saint bones, using which they froze the space.

To them, the power of space was Zhang Ruochen’s greatest advantage. If they managed to freeze the space, it would make Zhang Ruochen limp.

Zhang Ruochen realized that he would be in danger if he was encircled. He then initiated an attack against Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu.

“Do you really think you can fight two heirs?”

Fang Yi mobilized the power of White Micro Star, and he wielded Seven Stars Dagger. Seven levels of dagger waves spun and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

The dagger Qi looked like seven waterfalls sweeping across everywhere. Even a needle couldn’t pierce through, not to mention a person. At the other side, Sword Master Dongliu stared at Zhang Ruochen and prepared to perform the best sword technique.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t fight Fang Yi directly, instead, he vanished.

“No! The power of space.”

Sword Master Dongliu immediately dragged his sword saint.

And then, hundreds of sword butterflies flew out of the sword.

The power from the sword butterflies shook the space.

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen was forced to show up among the hundreds of sword butterflies, falling into the sword circle of Sword Master Dongliu.



“All the heirs of large fields are extraordinary beings. I can’t even dodge them using the power of space,” a thought flashed through Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword faster than lightning, and just as Zhang Ruochen showed his body, he tried to stab him.

Meanwhile, all the sword butterfly exploded, turning into tens of thousands of traces of sword Qi flying toward Zhang Ruochen, stripping him of the chance to use the power of space again.

To Sword Master Dongliu, he’d rather use the space to suppress Zhang Ruochen instead of freezing the space with supreme saint bones.

Speed was the most invincible thing.

Zhang Ruochen was also rapid. He performed dozens of abstruse sword techniques using Abyss Ancient Sword, and suddenly, ten thousand traces of sword Qi flew out.

Bang Bang!

They kept wielding their swords fiercely like traces of lightning.

They fought each other three hundred times after a breath, and there were seventeen sword traces on Zhang Ruochen’s armor. Although his armor managed to dissolve most of the forces, some of them still hit his body.

As for Sword Master Dongliu, there were seven sword traces on his saint coat.

Sword Master Dongliu said, “Your sword way cultivation is great, but still pales compared to mine.”

Sword Master Dongliu also followed Taoist line practicing his sword way.

Sword Master Dongliu’s sword way attainment had reached sword eight based on the classification of ‘Wordless Sword Manual’, but he still had something improve before completing sword eight.

It was impressive that he managed to attain such sword techniques at such a young age. Among the warriors Zhang Ruochen knew, only Ling Feiyu was more talented than him.

It took Ling Feiyu three hundred years to complete sword nine.

Yet Sword Master Dongliu only refined for less than two hundred years.

“Last move, Light Rain Butterflies.”

The light of the saint sword surged, swallowing the entire body of Sword Master Dongliu, and then, rules of truth were formed, merging with the sword techniques.

Whoosh!

Both the speed and strength of the sword were way superior to Sword Master Dongliu’s own cultivation.

The sword looked like a butterfly engulfed in light rains that was about to devour Zhang Ruochen.

However, Zhang Ruochen paused the time for an instant, and then he released a circle of sword Qi which torn the rain butterfly apart.

At the next moment, Sword Master Dongliu’s body showed up again as he bounced back holding his saint sword.

A long sword trace emerged on his body where saint Qi gushed out, and then, his body was broken in halves.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he wasn’t injured at all.

Sword Master Dongliu didn’t die, instead, his lower body turned into a long river while his upper body floated in the river, which looked bizarre.

Sword Master Dongliu said, “Your sword way isn’t even at my level...”

“Who told you that sword way determines everything? I can still defeat you if I have better sword moves,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sword Master Dongliu said, “To a sword warrior, sword way attainment is the foundation. As long as I have profound sword way, every move I make will be the most delicate sword move.”

“Have you heard of Sword Technique of Time before? It’s the most powerful sword move in the world, which can break your sword way,” Zhang Ruochen.

It had been debated among sword warriors that whether sword moves or sword way was more important.

The vast majority of sword warriors, like Sword Master Dongliu, reckoned the sword way was more important as they were convinced that they could create great enough sword moves as long as they had profound sword way.

But some sword warriors thought that sword move were more important.

To Zhang Ruochen, ‘Wordless Sword Manual’ was the most profound sword way, which was connected to Taoist origin, and ‘Sword Technique of Time’ represented the greatest sword moves, which merged with time. Both of them were the best attack skills and it was hard to tell which one was better.

Sword Master Dongliu merged his sword way with rules of truth while Zhang Ruochen broke it with Sword Technique of Time; in this round sword moves prevailed.

However, Sword Master Dongliu wasn’t a human being. His original body was a river, and Zhang Ruochen only managed to turn him into his original shape.

“Demonic Sound,” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

Demonic Sound was the real name of Princess Moran, which was the name Zhang Ruochen gave to Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Whoosh!

A seductive girl walked out of Zhang Ruochen’s back. She didn’t even need Zhang Ruochen’s instructions as she flew toward Sword Saint Dongliu directly.

There were fluorescent roots under her feet which stuck into the river under Sword Master Dongliu's body.

Sword Master Dongliu was amazed when he just saw Demonic Sound, however, he immediately realized the girl was very dangerous, so he formed a sword technique against her.

Demonic Sound chuckled and waved her sleeves, which turned into two lightning clouds.

Hundreds of saint weapons dived under the control of the vines, warding off the sword technique of Sword Master Dongliu.

# Chapter 1479 - A True Saint King

Chapter 1479: A True Saint King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Even further, 17 Saints hurried over but ran into big trouble. Two had already been killed. They were turned to black particles on the spot.

For someone at the peak of the Absolute Saint Realm, the Rules of Sainthood inside them had already become tangible. Their vitalities were extremely strong, but they were killed instantly by someone in the shadows. This was terrifying.

“It’s the power of darkness. A terrifying figure who cultivates the Way of Darkness is attacking us.”

A half-step Saint King with six purple eyes discovered the aura of darkness. He instantly lifted up a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon and went on high alert.

“What? The Way of Darkness?”

The other Saints all grew fearful too. They stopped and huddled together.

Han Qiu didn’t appear, but she seemed to be omnipresent. She would rush out randomly and make a fatal strike. Whether she succeeded or not, she would immediately disappear into the darkness.

The 15 Saints were caught up by her. They couldn’t hurry to the saint mansion to kill Zhang Ruochen.

He took advantage of this to use a physical technique and rushed toward the saint mansion.

“Ugh, where did Zhang Ruochen get so many strong Saints? Each one is able to hold their ground.”

Fang Yi’s eyes turned colder. He was about to pursue Zhang Ruochen.

Suddenly, a man in plain clothes appeared before him. He held a rusted sword and stopped him.

This was a very ordinary-looking human but gave Fang Yi an extreme sense of danger.

However, Fang Yi couldn’t care about all that. He must stop Zhang Ruochen.

If he let Zhang Ruochen take the saint mansion, he would become furious and lose his mind.

“Move.”

Fang Yi didn’t slow down. A beam of light flew out of his forehead toward Le.

Le’s frame shook and disappeared from the spot. He dodged the light.

Oh no...

Fang Yi felt the danger intensity. Without even thinking, he activated the ten protective runes on him, forming ten layers of defensive shields.

Almost at the same time, there were ten explosions. A beam of sword light passed through the ten shields, going straight for Fang Yi’s forehead.

“White Micro Protection.”

A beam of divine power burst from Fang Yi’s forehead. The projection of a star appeared, protecting his entire body.

Boom.

Fang Yi flew backward, landing on the ground.

In the sky, a strand of his hair had been cut by the sword Qi. It floated down slowly.

I was careless, Fang Yi thought. This ordinary young man is such a dangerous figure. It's fortunate that I reacted fast enough. Otherwise, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Holding the metal sword, Le was emotionless. He reappeared in the original spot, but blood flowed down his arm. It dripped down the sword blade.

The power from the White Micro Star had hurt him earlier.

...

...

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew that time was tight. It clearly was impossible for the few of them to go against a dozen top Saints from the two worlds. They could only delay the Saints for a while.

Thus, he took out the Mercury Gourd when he was under the saint mansion. He hit it upward.

Only the Mercury Gourd could contain the entire saint mansion.

Under his full-powered urging, the Mercury Gourd grew bigger and bigger. A huge vortex burst from the opening and enveloped the entire saint mansion.

However, the mansion didn't budge. He couldn't collect it at all.

Instead, a dozen-mile-long golden river of rules flew out of the mansion and shattered the vortex from the gourd.

"So powerful. No wonder it's the rules emperor weapon."

It was clear that he couldn't move the rules emperor weapon with regular tactics. Zhang Ruochen put the Mercury Gourd away and immediately climbed the steps. He rushed through the doors.

As soon as he entered, he seemed to have jumped into a golden sea. The heavy Rules of Saintly Way had liquified in the mansion. It poured in from all directions and was thousands of times heavier than mercury.

Rules of thunder, sword, sharpness, penetration, wind and more were all very strong. They seemed to want try to melt Zhang Ruochen and assimilate him into the mansion.

Whoosh!

He took out the Buddha's sarira. A ring of Buddhist light protected his entire body, fending off the incoming Rules of Saintly Way.

At the same time, Holy Qi inside Zhang Ruochen's body spewed out like a fountain. It quickly filled every corner of the mansion.

Rays of Divine Fire Jingmie followed the Holy Qi and spread toward 72 directions, entangling the mansion.

“Collect.”

The Time and Space Martial Deity Print in his forehead appeared and spun quickly.

In his Sea of Qi, the Heaven Pass River doubled its speed of flowing.

Wujin Ancestor didn't leave any Supreme Saint tactics in the rules emperor weapon. Under the burning of the Divine Fire Jingmie, the entire mansion started shaking soon. Then it became smaller and smaller, flying into Zhang Ruochen's Sea of Qi.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen collect the saint mansion, the Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field all let out furious screams.

“Retreat!”

Steering the Golden Dragon Carriage, Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the underground cave. Le, Han Qiu, Demonic Sound, and Mad Man all abandoned their opponents. They streaked into the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Mad Man was covered in injuries and his robe was dyed red, but he still laughed maniacally. “Five top fighters charged into Wujin Saint Mountain and stole a rules emperor weapon under the siege of a dozen top figures from the Purple Mansion Field



and Hell Blade Field. This time, my name will be known throughout the Shatuo Fields. Amazing, so f\*cking amazing.”

The Golden Dragon Carriage was extremely fast. The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field couldn't even catch up.

Just as they were about to exit the cave, Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He saw a half-human half-beast with a bald head standing before them.

The man was seven feet tall. The upper half of his body had muscles the size of water tanks and shone with metallic light. His lower half was two beastly legs covered in dragon scales. They were as thick as millstones and red sparks flew off of them.

He opened his legs and clutched his hands before his chest. He stood before the Golden Dragon Carriage. His eyes burned like furnaces and his body was an unmovable mountain.

His aura was extremely terrifying. It was even stronger than Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu.

“Yue Kong.”

Mad Man's smile disappeared as he said, “He... He actually reached the Saint King Realm.”

Mad Man used Spiritual Power to tell Zhang Ruochen, Le, Han Qiu, and the Holy Carnivorous Flower about Yue Kong.

In the half-step Saint King Realm, Yue Kong had been already been in the top ten of the Purple Mansion Field. He was very well-known. Mad Man had researched him before entering the Zuling Field. He knew this person would be a great enemy.

Now, Yue Kong had reached the Saint King Realm. He could be the strongest figure of the Purple Mansion Field now.

Mad Man and Han Qiu flew out of the Golden Dragon Carriage at the same time. They attacked Yue Kong with their strongest force.

“Power of the Ancient Tuo.”

Mad Man raised his staff with both hands. Thousands of tadpole patterns climbed up. The next moment, the staff was more than one meter wide and hundreds of meters long. He slammed down at Yue Kong's head.

“Lotus of Darkness.”

Han Qiu lifted both hands. Strands of dark power formed a level 36 black lotus between her fingers. She slapped them toward Yue Kong.

Yue Kong spat out fire. It was like a volcano erupting toward the level 36 black lotus.

The Lotus of Darkness was indeed powerful, but it kept melting under Yue Kong's flames until it disappeared.

“How is this possible?”

Han Qiu's slender brows furrowed. The fire before her turned her pale face red. Her skin even hurt from the baking.

Roar!

Yue Kong seemed to have limitless strength. He grabbed at Mad Man's staff with one hand; the other slapped down at Han Qiu like a huge fan.

Thud, thud.

Han Qiu and Mad Man flew backward, landing heavily on the ground, forming man-shaped ditches. They spat out blood.

“That strong?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect that Han Qiu and Mad Man would be sent flying back with one exchange and also be badly injured.

It was a crushing defeat.

Yue Kong's huge frame charged out of the sea of fire. He extended two large hands and grabbed two of the dragon souls' necks. He crushed the two dragon souls into specks of light.

Then his tower-like body crashed toward the Golden Dragon Carriage.

The carriage was a Nine-Yao Saint Weapon, but Yue Kong also had a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor. He wasn't afraid.

Boom.

The two great forces collided.

Yue Kong's body kept retreating. His ground crumbled the sturdy ground. He retreated more than 300 feet before steadying himself. The Golden Dragon Carriage finally stopped his aggression.

"No wonder he's so strong. This big guy has actually saintified his body."

Zhang Ruochen saw 144 apertures appear on Yue Kong's body. They were like 144 stars embedded into his body.

A regular first step Half-Saint was still a bit weaker than a first step Half-Saint with a saintified body in combat.

Yue Kong was the latter.

The instant the Golden Dragon Carriage stopped, Zhang Ruochen dragged his finger across. He tore open the space.

A dozen-foot-long spatial crack went toward Yue Kong.

Unexpectedly, Yue Kong was big but also very agile. He used an advanced dragon technique and actually dodged the spatial crack. He appeared on the side of the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Using both arms, he lifted the carriage above his head. Then he tossed it toward the underground cave.

The Golden Dragon Carriage tumbled quickly in the air. Inside it, Zhang Ruochen quickly steadied himself and peered down. He happened to see Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu, and the dozen Saints from the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. He couldn't help but smile wryly.

This was troublesome!

# Chapter 1480 - Ten Thousand Saints Formation

Chapter 1480: Ten Thousand Saints Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Dozens of top-tier saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Moon Field looked hostile as they saw Golden Dragon Carriage falling over.

Fang Yi couldn't even wait till Golden Dragon Carriage to fall down, instead, he mobilized the power of White Micro Star, and a light pillar flew out of his forehead.

The other saints all formed saint spells against Golden Dragon Carriage.

The space around them trembled, releasing circles of waves.

Whoosh!

Golden Dragon Carriage fell into space ripples, which rendered their saint spells in vain.

“Get the hell out.”

Sword Master Dongliu mobilized his saint Qi and stuck his sword into the ground. Suddenly, butterfly shadows flew out of his sword and shook Golden Dragon Carriage out of the inner space.

Golden Dragon Carriage had moved a thousand feet farther, and it gleamed with golden light again. Nine dragon souls rushed out of the carriage, dragging the carriage forward.

Both Han Qiu and Mad Man who were heavily injured rushed into the carriage.

“What should we do that? Yue Kong is blocking our way, and there’re dozens of top-tier saints chasing us. Seems like we’re not likely to make it out today. How about burning our saint blood and fighting them to death?”

Mad Man’s face paled, yet his eyes were still glinting with insanity.

Demonic Sound stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Great spatial move?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “The space structure in the ninety-nine saint mountains is different from outside. It’s stable but chaotic, so it’s very difficult for me to perform great spatial move.”

“And besides, Sword Master Dongliu has practiced an incredible sword technique that can lead to irregular movements in space. I’m not strong enough to counteract that movement yet. I have to give up spatial move if he performs that sword technique.”

Fang Yi wielded a trace of white light which hit Golden Dragon Carriage, making the saint light mist around the carriage burst, shaking the carriage fiercely.

And then, saint weapons started to hit the carriage without stop. Zhang Ruochen threw out lots of defense runes to ward them off.

It was very dangerous, and they might have to burn saint blood to fight them.

“Let’s infuse Golden Dragon Carriage into Golden Dragon Carriage to activate its level-two complete power.”

Inscriptions emerged on the dragon carriage, and its forces surged. Its golden light was so bright that the saints couldn’t even open their eyes.

Fifteen thousand inscriptions, sixteen thousand inscriptions...

Eighteen thousand inscriptions...

Rumbling sounds came from their bodies, and saint Qi flowed meridians and saint meridians like rivers.

Under their saint Qi, more and more inscriptions showed up on the carriage, and eventually, there were twenty thousand inscriptions on the carriage.

Boom!

The second circle of saint power light mist showed up around Golden Dragon Carriage, which made its power surge. The sound from the wheels itself was deafening and sickening.

Yue Kong who was standing before Golden Dragon Carriage was also dazed.

Howl!

Yue Kong clenched his fist, and flames gushed out of all his one hundred and forty-four apertures. He trampled the ground, dashing toward Golden Dragon Carriage.

The ground caved.

It was a saint king who had sanctified his body, and his full strength was enough to destroy an iron mountain, not to mention a carriage.

However, Yue Kong was knocked away.

Boom!

Golden Dragon Carriage knocked a huge hole in the saint mountain.

The people sitting in Golden Dragon Carriage were all pleased as if they just survived hell.

The second-level complete power of Golden Dragon Carriage had tremendous power, but it also consumed lots of their saint Qi, which forced them to take pills to recover.

Pills exploded in their bodies and turned into thick saint Qi, flowing in their meridians and saint meridians.

Unfortunately, before they managed to fully recover their saint power, Golden Dragon Carriage suddenly slowed down as if it was stuck in a swamp.

“Oh no.”

Zhang Ruochen sensed great saintly Qi ripples coming at the carriage, which almost froze the space.

Golden Dragon stopped because the saintly Qi ripples were too dense.

Saints walked toward Golden Dragon Carriage. Some of them looked like human beings, and some looked like beasts, forming a huge formation.

“Ten Thousand Saints Formation.”

Mad Man took a deep breath and said, “Damn it. There’s no way we can do anything against it now.”

Zhang Ruochen and the others had been stuck in the cave for more than half an hour already, so it was normal that the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field had set up Ten Thousand Saints Formation.

Even if Zhang Ruochen and the others had killed more than a thousand saints who were trapped in the spatial maze, they hadn’t changed anything. It’d been half an hour, so the saints in the saint mountain would naturally notice something.

However, rules emperor weapons were too attractive, which was why Zhang Ruochen and the others spent too long in the underground cave.

Ten Thousand Saints Formation could easily trump the second-level complete power of Golden Dragon Carriage.

Ten Thousand Saints Formation was indeed extraordinary. Even some senior saint kings would be killed if he was encircled. It was almost impossible for them to break the formation.

Zhang Ruochen had expected that to happen, but he still decided to seize the rules emperor weapon because he had a godly spirits weapon.

He was calmer than everyone else.

Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu, Yue Kong and the other great beings also came to the border of Ten Thousand Saints Formation.

Fang Yi finally smiled and said, “Ten Thousand Saints Formation can easily suppress the space. Let’s see how you’re going to escape this time.”

Zhang Ruochen was in no rush.

He just heard a mind power voice transmission, and he knew that a great help was coming to Wujin Saint Mountain.

It was very difficult to break out of Ten Thousand Saints Formation, but it was easier to break it from the outside.

“Let’s fight!”

Han Qiu’s eyes turned black, and tumbling evil Qi emanated from her.

Zhang Ruochen pressed her arms and looked to where Fang Yi was. He smiled and said, “I’m not running!”

Fang Yi said, “Then give us the rules emperor weapon. I might give you all a quick death if you cooperate.”

Zhang Ruochen took out Buddha Emperor’s sarira and said, “I’m not running, because I’m going to take us all down.”

Zhang Ruochen then infused Buddha Emperor sarira with a trace of saint Qi, and then, the sarira gleamed.

“What’s he doing? Does Zhang Ruochen want to blow up the sarira?”

“That’s... That’s a sarira of a supreme saint of Buddhism. If he blows it up, we might all get killed.”

“Zhang Ruochen knows how to blow up the sarira of a supreme saint?”

All the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field were shocked as they thought Zhang Ruochen might actually blow up the sarira to drag them all down with him.

Fang Yi said, “Are you crazy? Do you really think it’s that easy to blow up the sarira? I don’t believe you.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen smirked and mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie and pressed toward the Buddha emperor sarira.



The supreme saint sarira was very stable as it needed lots of saint power to mobilize. It was almost impossible for a saint to do it.

However, when the saints saw Zhang Ruochen mobilize Divine Fire Jingmie, they all felt intimidated. They weren't sure whether Divine Fire Jingmie could blow up the sarira or not, but it might be possible.

If all the saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field died here, the two fields would suffer a huge loss.

Fang Yi knew that Zhang Ruochen didn't actually want to blow up the sarira, instead, he just wanted to intimidate them.

The saints in Ten Thousand Saints Formation were nervous as they wanted to get as far from Zhang Ruochen as possible, and because of that, the power from the formation got weaker and weaker.

Fang Yi was also under lots of pressure. After talking with Sword Master for a while, he said, "Give me the rules emperor weapon, then we'll let you go."

"Okay! Come get it! I'll give it to you."

Fang Yi stared at Zhang Ruochen as he reckoned he wouldn't give up the rules emperor weapon that easily.

Sword Master Dongliu said, "Zhang Ruochen might want to hold you captive and escape here. I'll follow Yue Kong into the formation. He has his ways."

"Okay."

Fang Yi nodded.

Fang Yi then gave an order to open a crack in the formation.

Just as Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu and Yue Kong stepped in Ten Thousand Saints Formation, light spots came from the south, hitting Ten Thousand Saints Formation.

Each of the light spot was a character.

# Chapter 1481 - Strong Reinforcement

Chapter 1481: Strong Reinforcement

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The people at the center of the Ten Thousand Saints Formation were nervous. They'd also created a hole in the formation to let Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu and Yue Kong in.

The hole wasn't filled completely yet. The power of the ten thousand Saints wasn't connected and was at their weakest moment. If they were attacked by the Confucius Saint Book, they would break down quickly.

The Nine Heavenly Maiden appeared at the foot of the mountain. She was a like fairy walking in the mundane world. A milky hand grasped the Confucius Saint Book. Activating the power within, she formed a towering mountain of books.

It was formed by books piled on each other and soared into the clouds. The sound of chanting rose up in the mountain and spread out.

Boom!

The book mountain flew out, crashing toward the Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. It lifted a powerful energy storm, completely breaking the Ten Thousand Saint Formation.

“Now is the time.”

Steering the Golden Dragon Carriage, Zhang Ruochen rushed toward the opening created with his fastest speed.

He stood at the top of the carriage, holding the Buddha's sarira. He sent out the origin power that he'd already gathered. Instantly, blood spurted from the noses of many Saints. They flew out like wind sweeping leaves.

The Golden Dragon Carriage crashed forward and had the Buddha's sarira opening up the path. No one could stop it.

"How dare the Saints of the Kunlun's Field get involved with the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field?"

Fang Yi recognized the Confucius Saint Book and knew that they were from the Kunlun's Field.

He also realized that he'd fallen into Zhang Ruochen's trap.

Zhang Ruochen didn't have to activate the Supreme Saint sarira at all. Perhaps, he wasn't even able to activate it. He did all this to work with the strong figure from the Kunlun's Field and break open the Ten Thousand Saint Formation.

Fang Yi was furious. Eyes reddening, he burst out with high speed and roared, "Stop them! Don't waste time talking and kill them all."

Even if he lost the rules emperor weapon, he would still kill Zhang Ruochen's group today.

"Saint of the Kunlun's Field, you dare fight with the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field. Kill her as well." Sword Master Dongliu had a very advanced mindset. Now, his eyes shone with murderous intent too.

Yue Kong roared. He jumped, going 300 meters into the air, and arrived above the Nine Heavenly Maiden. He punched down at the word barrier formed by the Confucius Saint Book.

In his eyes, the Nine Heavenly Maiden controlling the book was a huge threat. She was constantly creating trouble for the Saints of the two worlds. If she was killed, he would be able to kill Zhang Ruochen's group more easily.

Suddenly, he caught a robed elder in the corner of his vision. He stood at the top of a flaming tree on the left.

He took a paint scroll out of his sleeve.

Whoosh!

Seven colored rivers burst from the scroll. As the rivers kept spinning, they formed the projections of seven worlds.

The seven worlds overlapped, forming a tower of worlds. It was crashing toward Yue Kong, who was attacking the Nine Heavenly Maiden.

Yue Kong felt extreme pressure, but he wasn't afraid. He was in the Saint King Realm and able to kill all enemies in the Zuling Field.

“Rising Dragon Fist.”

Yue Kong sent out a fist print. It clashed with the seven-world tower. He instantly felt a flood of power, as if the seven worlds had crashed into him.

Kaboom.

The seven-world tower pressed down on Yue Kong. He fell a dozen meters. Beams of saintly power flooded out, turning the space below the saint mountain into an overturning sea.

“Saint King Yue Kong was suppressed. The Kunlun's Field has a Saint King too, and he's not the ordinary kind.”

The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field stared at Chu Siyuan, who was holding the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. Their faces paled. But Chu Siyuan stuck his chin up, looking very arrogant.

There were countless Saints gathered at Wujin Saint Mountain. They kept attacking to stop the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Every time, at least 100 Saints would gather and use a composite formation or fire up a weapon together.

After rushing out of the Ten Thousand Saint Formation, seven of these small forces appeared before the Golden Dragon Carriage to stop them.

Le, Han Qiu, Mad Man, and Demonic Sound rushed out of the carriage. They each attacked one small force.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the carriage. He raised his hands, lifting a heavy saintly cloud. The Abyss Ancient Sword and Monument Shield hovered in the mist. They burst with complete power and attacked two forces in different directions.

There were more than 400 Saints gathered before the carriage. They all activated a saint weapon. Instantly, beams of dazzling saint light connected into one mass.

An attack by more than 400 Saints at once was difficult for even a Saint King to take.

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows. He felt a suffocating pressure, so he pushed up the Buddha's sarira and activated the Supreme Saint origin power.

Suddenly, something happened.

Behind the 400 Saints, Nanling Dragon Fire poured out. The flames were dozens of meters tall and melted the ground.

The Saints of the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field all changed drastically. Some escaped into directions, some attacked the fire with their weapons, and others activated defensive runes to protect themselves.

Hundreds of fiery feathers flew out of the wall of fire. Merely the first wave killed a dozen Saints. Countless more were injured.

In an instant, the 400 Saints were defeated with many casualties.

Seeing this, shock appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

The Luosha Princess's tall figure walked out of the Nanling Dragon Fire. Her mesmerizing eyes looked at Zhang Ruochen from afar with some resentment.

"It really is her," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Luosha Princess's curvaceous frame flew out like a snake.

Poof!

The Luosha Princess stabbed her finger through a Purple Mansion True Saint's forehead. The next moment, Nanling

Dragon Fire burned through the True Saint's body and turned him into a pile of ashes.

Whoosh!

She kept attacking, picking the top True Saints and Absolute Saints. They all died with one strike.

In the blink of an eye, a dozen top figures had died. The surrounding Saints were all terrified and avoided the Luosha Princess.

She really is a demoness, Zhang Ruochen thought. She's too cruel.

With the Nine Heavenly Maiden, Chu Siyuan and the Luosha Princess's help, paired with the fact that Zhang Ruochen's group were all top fighters, they quickly escaped from Wujin Saint Mountain. They entered the Bipolar Swamp again.

Here, there were fewer Saints from the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. The pressure lifted.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he could activate spatial power again, so he flew to the top of the Golden Dragon Carriage. The Holy Qi within him circulated wildly and he struck with a dozen huge spatial cracks at once.

Each spatial crack was a dozen meters long.

Instantly, the Saints of the two worlds were forced back. They also kept retreating.

No Saint dared to counter a spatial crack.

By the time the spatial cracks closed, the Golden Dragon Carriage had already disappeared into the depths of the Bipolar Swamp. It was impossible to pursue and kill them now. Even if they caught up to Zhang Ruochen's group, it would be difficult to keep them there.

“Zhang Ruochen, Kunlun's Field, and Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, you will all pay for this.”

Fang Yi stared in the direction of the Golden Dragon Carriage. He shook in anger as if he was turning into a demon.

The carriage rushed into the forest with chaotic space and gradually slowed.

Faced with hundreds of thousands of Saints, even the Nine Heavenly Maiden and the Luosha Princess were hurt. They didn't get out of this unharmed.

As for Mad Man, Le, Han Qiu, and Demonic Sound, they were more heavily injured. Thankfully, they had many defensive runes and strong vitalities, so they survived.

Ignoring her injuries, the Luosha Princess stared at Zhang Ruochen with her pretty eyes. "Zhang Ruochen, now you should see that I'm sincere, right? Last time, you did everything to avoid me. It really hurt me for a long time."

This time, they really did owe the Luosha Princess. Otherwise, it wouldn't be easy for them to break free from the siege of the two worlds.

"Thank you."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure out the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine's motive, but he still said those two words.

He was also on guard. After all, he had the Merits Records Wall and the rules emperor weapon. The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine could attack him at any point.

One couldn't become careless on the battlefield.

Le, Han Qiu, and the others swallowed healing pills and sat on the ground to recover.

1

The Nine Heavenly Maiden shone with brilliant light and split into nine beautiful girls. They were either elegant, divine, handsome, or shy.

Light gleamed in the Luosha Princess's eyes. Pretending to be in disbelief, she said, "Nine as one, how is that possible? Zhang Ruochen, what technique does your nine friends cultivate?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and didn't speak.

The Saint Lady studied the Luosha Princess. “Your cultivation technique is very special too. You clearly have a cold body constitution, but you could control the Nanling Dragon Fire. That isn’t normal. I also saw a different kind of light in your eyes just then. It feels like you’re not truly shocked.”

This time, the Luosha Princess was truly shocked. She’d never met someone who was so observant and could catch the tiniest changes in her eyes.

She knew that she’d met a match, so she grew interested in the Saint Lady. Smiling, she said, “Who said that a cold body constitution can’t control the Nanling Dragon Fire? The Ice Fire Phoenix can control the Pluto Ice and Divine Fire Jingmie at the same time. So, I suggest you don’t think you’re so clever. It’s easy to offend people that you shouldn’t.”

The Luosha Princess said this to anger the Saint Lady.



# Chapter 1482 - Confrontation

Chapter 1482: Confrontation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Princess Luosha couldn't probe who she was unless she successfully provoked Saint Lady.

If 'Nine Yao Divine Tear' was indeed in her body, it was be a huge news.

Saint Lady wasn't triggered at all. She said, "Really? Seems like you haven't figured out what's going on here. Most of the saints here are from Kunlun's Field, and one of them is a mind power saint king. I don't think it's a difficult job for us to kill you here."

Princess Luosha said, "Do you want to try?"

"Let's."

Saint Lady's eyes glinted as she felt there was a veil around Princess Luosha, which made her mysterious and dangerous.

She was a powerful and cunning girl with charming appearance. She must be approaching Zhang Ruochen for some reason, which might be uncovered if she fought her. Zhang Ruochen said, "The saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field will come after us again, and there're many great beings of Luosha race hidden in the forest. I suggest you both stay calm."

Princess Luosha said, "She was the one who provoked me first. When have I ever gone through this before?"

Martial Saint Canglan was very upfront, and she couldn't handle the unreasonable of Princess Luosha. She said, "Who was provoking whom?"

Other heavenly maidens all looked hostile.

The nine heavenly maidens seemed to be ready to merge with each other again to fight Princess Luosha.

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit irritated. He looked to Chu Siyuan, but he found that old man looking down at the ground as if he didn't care about the conflict going on.

"Wait... Something's happening down there..."

Zhang Ruochen felt a strange ripple coming from underground.

Chu Siyuan's mind power was stronger than Zhang Ruochen, so he noticed the unusual ripples coming from underground. His eyes immediately gleamed.

"Get the hell out."

Great spirits came out of Chu Siyuan's mouth, piercing through the mud and hitting the underground. Suddenly, the area around him turned white.

Boom!

The great spirits knocked Lord Lingquan and two first marquises out from the underground, and they showed up a thousand feet away from Zhang Ruochen.

Lord Lingquan looked to Princess Luosha, and then, he looked to Zhang Ruochen ruthlessly.

Saint Lady noticed that.

Princess Luosha felt a headache as she wanted to kill Lord Lingquan. She'd told them not to follow her. Now that they'd done it, she was put in a very awkward situation.

"Go."

Lord Lingquan fled with the two first marquises.

"Where're you going?"

Chu Siyuan used a bronze painting pen to draw a circle in the air to trap those three Luosha monks.

Zhang Ruochen rushed out and utilized the complete power of Abyss Ancient Sword. Sword Qi gushed out, turning into a sword river, attacking the three Luosha monks.

Meanwhile, Le, Han Qiu, Demonic Sound and Mad Man all ascended and rushed toward them from four different directions.

Princess Luosha couldn't do nothing under this situation. She then knocked a space crack and rushed toward them too.

Saint Lady stood under a tree and stared at Princess Luosha.

Princess Luosha felt pressured seeing Saint Lady stare at her. Is she suspecting my identity after Lord Lingquan showed up?

Lord Lingquan took out a purple stone in the circle and threw it forward.

Boom!

The purple stone turned into a purple godly mountain and broke the boundary of Chu Siyuan, and then, they rushed out of the circle to dodge the attacks.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was already right behind me.

“Please go first, my lord. I'll ward him off.”

Marquis Tiange drew his Lintian Spear while a saintly way rules gushed out, forming circles of ripples.

Boom!

Lintian Spear and Abyss Ancient Sword clashed with each other.

Marquis Tiange felt that his spear got much heavier that he couldn't even hold it anymore. As for his hands, they were numb and bleeding.

“How is it possible? It's only been ten days? How did he get so much stronger?”

Marquis Tiange was still able to fight Zhang Ruochen for a while ten days ago, but now, he reckoned he might not even be

able to exchange five moves with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation got closer to being an absolute saint, so it was easy for him to fight a first marquis.

He didn't want to waste time talking to Marquis Tiange, instead, he dashed against him with his sword.

Sizzle!

After three moves, Zhang Ruochen broke all the defense skills of Lord Tiange. He then stabbed his forehead, killing him.

At the other side, Marquis Baiyun mobilized his secret technique, burnt his blood to fight against Le and Han Qiu, trying to cover Lord Lingquan.

Princess Luosha saw that all of them were great beings, and there were a mind power saint king and Nine Heavenly Maiden to backup, so she killed Marquis Baiyun herself.

Lord Lingquan seized this chance to run away.

Saint Lady walked toward Princess Luosha and said, "Why didn't you go chase Lord Lingquan but fighting a first marquis?"

"What do you mean?"

Princess Luosha shot Saint Lady a glance.

Saint Lady said, "I'm just curious. It'll only take some time for Le, Han Qiu and Zhang Ruochen to kill Marquis Baiyun. If you can go chase Lord Lingquan, you can at least stall him for a while even if you can't kill him. When they finish off Marquis Baiyun, they'll meet with you and get Lord Lingquan."

Princess Luosha sneered, "Are you suspecting me? If you guys merged with each other, Lord Lingquan wouldn't have gone away, but you didn't do anything. I think you were the ones who let Lord Lingquan get away."

Saint Lady said, "Because we need time to merge together, and also, I think you're a greater threat than Lord Lingquan."

Princess Luosha walked close to Saint Lady and almost pressed her breasts against Saint Lady's body. He said, "What

do you mean? Make yourself clear.”

Saint Lady was shorter than Princess Luosha, but she wasn't weak at all. She said, “You approached Zhang Ruochen for something else.”

“That's right! I have some other purpose. Zhang Ruochen took off my clothes once, so he's the person of my destiny. Are you uncomfortable that I'm flirty with her? Why are you targeting me? You can take initiatives just like me, you know?”

Princess Luosha could tell that Saint Lady was attracted to Zhang Ruochen, so she said it on purpose to provoke her.

Saint Lady was a monk from Way of Confucius, so she couldn't be as reckless as Princess Luosha.

She felt nervous and a faster heartbeat. She pursed her lips and said, “You're a concubine of a demonic emperor. How can you behave like that?”

Princess Luosha said, “So what? Let me tell you, I've linked my mind power with Zhang Ruochen's. We're much more connected than you thought.”

Saint Lady's heart beat faster, and she couldn't help looking to Zhang Ruochen, but Zhang Ruochen didn't react.

Did they really...

Martial Saint Canglan glared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Don't you think it's gross?”

Princess Luosha walked to Zhang Ruochen and grabbed his arms and said, “We share a close bond. How would I hurt him? And even if I wanted to, I'd have done it a long time ago. A girl like you will never understand.”

Even Chu Siyuan could tell that Saint Lady was a bit out of character today as she was targeting Princess Luosha the whole time. It probably had something to do with emotions.

“What a brat.”

Chu Siyuan cursed and tried to stop Saint Lady from arguing, “Girl Nalan, stop it. The Zhang Ruochen today isn't the Zhang

Ruochen you knew before. I won't be surprised about anything he did."

Saint Lady also realized that she wasn't behaving well today, so she stopped talking.

Chu Siyuan said, "Zhang Ruochen, Nine Heavenly Maiden and I helped you break out of the encirclement of Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field. I've paid you back the favor. Let's talk about real stuff now."

Zhang Ruochen didn't react at all no matter what Chu Siyuan and Martial Saint Canglan said about him. He asked, "What real stuff?"

Chu Siyuan said, "You have Merits Records Wall, don't you?"  
"So what?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Chu Siyuan said, "You've seen the number of saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field that gathered in Wujin Saint Mountain. The merits battle is going to end soon, and there'll only be more saints coming here. You won't be able to hide or keep the Merits Records Wall. How about teaming up with Kunlun's Field?"

"Why would I team up with Kunlun's Field. Isn't it better for me to cooperate with Great Devil Ten Square Field?"

Zhang Ruochen then looked to Princess Luosha standing beside her, staring at that seductive face.

# Chapter 1483 - Let Me Control The Merits Battleground

Chapter 1483: Let Me Control The Merits Battleground

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Luosha Princess giggles and nods her pale chin. “Yes. As long as you work with the Great Devil Ten Square Field, the Hell Blade and Purple Mansion Field won’t be able to do anything.”

Chu Siyuan didn’t think Zhang Ruochen would answer like this. Furious, he said, “You... You were part of the Kunlun’s Field before. Did you forget your roots so quickly just for a demoness?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t reply. He was very cold.

The Saint Lady’s pretty eyes were trained on Zhang Ruochen. She knew that Zhang Ruochen hadn’t changed, but he’d suffered too many restrictions, insults, lies, and misunderstandings in the Kunlun’s Field. This was why he hated it so much.

Deep inside, he might still want to help Kunlun’s Field.

Seeing how close Zhang Ruochen and the Luosha Princess were, Martial Saint Canglan was greatly annoyed. She turned and prepared to leave. “Whatever. Since he’s not willing to work with us, we’ll go right now. What use is there to speak more? Zhang Ruochen, the next time we meet will be a battle to the death.”

“Wait.”

The Saint Lady walked over and said to Zhang Ruochen, “How about we talk alone?”

“Sure,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen and the Saint Lady walked side by side. One wore armor while the other wore a white scholarly robe. One harsh and one soft, they walked among the red fallen leaves, forming a beautiful view.

The Saint Lady was gentle, scholarly, and elegant. She thought for a moment before saying, “The merits affect the survival of an entire world. If they’re really forced to desperation, the three weaker worlds—the Kunlun’s Field, Hell Blade Field, and Tianmu Field—will do everything to get the Merits Records Wall. By then, no matter how strong the Great Devil Ten Square Field is, they’ll suffer great losses.

“The Great Devil Ten Square Field is the strongest of the Shatuo Seven Fields. They don’t have to worry about being last at all. Even if they’re last in the Saints Merits Battle, they’ll still win the other three battlegrounds. This way, they won’t want to cooperate with the Guanghan Field if their losses are too much. By then, you and the Guanghan Field may end up alone.”

“I know,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Saint Lady stopped walking. Her slender eyebrows raised as she stared at Zhang Ruochen’s chiseled face. “With the current situation, no world will dare to work with you unless you hand over the Merits Records Wall. Even the Saints of the Guanghan Field will be in danger of dying if they protect you.”

There was nothing that couldn’t be said before the Saint Lady. Zhang Ruochen’s expression became solemn. “I sense great danger. You should sense it too, right?”

The Saint Lady nodded softly. “The Luosha Race.”

“Yes.” Zhang Ruochen continued, “No matter how we fight, our true enemy is definitely the Luosha Race. I stole the Merits Records Wall because I didn’t want to see the



bloodshed from the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields and get taken by the Luosha in the end.”

“The Luosha destroyed the other three Merits Records Walls,” the Saint Lady said. “They only left the one in the Phoenix Nest to make us fight each other.”

“If I agreed to work with the Kunlun’s Field,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Even if the Kunlun’s Field can exchange for a large amount of merits, it’ll still be done under attacks from the other worlds. Is that kind of partnership meaningful?”

The Saint Lady realized that Zhang Ruochen was clearer about the situation than anyone else. He didn’t need her reminders at all, so she asked, “Then what is your plan now?”

“My only way to survive now is to control the entire Saints Merits Battle by myself.”

“Are you serious?” The Saint Lady was a bit shocked.

“Do you think I’m joking?”

The Saint Lady pressed her lips together in deep thought. Suddenly, her eyes brightened. She seemed to understand Zhang Ruochen’s intent. “The Merits Records Wall is a hot potato but also your most important trump card. If you use it well, you might really be able to control the entire Saints Merits Battle.”

“So, I need partners, and not only the Kunlun’s Field,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I also need the Great Devil Ten Square Field, Tianmu Field, and Eight Ministry Field. I also need to choose someone for the bottom, such as the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field.”

The Saint Lady was very wise, so she understood Zhang Ruochen’s goal.

First, the Hell Blade and Purple Mansion Field would never be last place in a regular Saints Merits Battle. This way, the last place would most likely be the Kunlun’s Field or Tianmu Field. They would choose to work with Zhang Ruochen and defeat the other two fields.

Second, if the Great Devil Ten Square Field, Guanghan Field, Kunlun's Field, and Tianmu Field were on one side, how would the Eight Ministry Field not know how to choose? With Mad Man's help, the Eight Ministry Field would probably work with Zhang Ruochen too.

If the five worlds were on one side, only the Purple Mansion Field and Hell Blade Field would be left. No matter how unwilling they were, there was a great difference in power. They probably wouldn't dare to attack the other five fields.

Zhang Ruochen's solution could avoid internal conflicts between the seven worlds and also benefit himself.

"It works technically," the Saint Lady said. "But there are too many variables in actuality. It's too difficult and filled with dangers. If you make one mistake, you'll never be able to recover. That Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine is a huge variable. In addition, the Eight Ministry Field is very strong. They might not be willing to be used by you."

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the sunlight poking in from between the leaves. "There is no perfect strategy in this dangerous battlefield. If there's a path that I can take, I should try it. Come, let us return."

The Saint Lady was silent for a moment as if pondering something. "Do you know? Huang Yanchen went missing!"

"Yes," Zhang Ruochen said.

Seeing how indifferent Zhang Ruochen's eyes were, the Saint Lady asked, "Don't you want to know where she is? Or if she's still alive?"

"It doesn't matter."

"Does it really not matter?" the Saint Lady asked.

"Let's not talk about this. Come."

Zhang Ruochen walked back, hands behind his back.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and the Saint Lady return, Martial Saint Canglan's eyes went to the Saint Lady inquisitively. The Saint Lady just smiled and nodded in answer.

“I already discussed with Lady Nalan,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It’s not impossible to work with the Kunlun’s Field. But if you want to exchange merits here, you must give me 30%.”

“Thirty percent?” Chu Siyuan asked. “You want to take 30% of the merits that we risked our lives for without doing anything? You’re heartless.”

“It’s okay if you’re unwilling,” Zhang Ruochen said. “There will be other worlds who are willing to work with me.”

“Wait.”

Chu Siyuan combed his whiskers and his eyes looked around. “How about 20%?”

“Anyway, when the Guanghan Field becomes number one of the Saints Merits Battle, I will destroy the Merits Records Wall. By then, you won’t be able to exchange for merits no matter how much Luosha blood and souls you have.”

“Okay, I accept,” Chu Siyuan said quickly.

After coming to an agreement, Chu Siyuan and the Nine Heavenly Maidens took out all of their Luosha blood and souls. They gave one-third to Zhang Ruochen.

Even if it was one-third, Zhang Ruochen still got five million merits. Now, the Guanghan Field had more than 93 million merits.

The Kunlun’s Field had more than 42 million merits. They became one spot higher, surpassing the Hell Blade Field to become fifth place.

After exchanging the merits, the Nine Heavenly Maidens and Chu Siyuan left immediately. They would go look for other Saints of the Kunlun’s Field and bring more Luosha blood and souls to exchange with Zhang Ruochen.

The Luosha Princess watched calmly. When the Nine Heavenly Maidens and Chu Siyuan were far away, she finally said, “The Kunlun’s Field won’t allow you to control them like this. They’ll definitely have take some sort of action. What if they bring a large group of strong figures and suddenly try to steal the Merits Records Wall?”

Zhang Ruochen issued an order to Han Qiu and Demonic Sound. “You two, spread the news as fast as possible. The Kunlun’s Field, Tianmu Field, Eight Ministry Field, and Great Devil Ten Square Field only have to give up a little to exchange merits with Zhang Ruochen. As for the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field, they are enemies of Zhang Ruochen. Zhang Ruochen refuses to work with them.”

Han Qiu and Demonic Sound exchanged glances with a smile. They understood Zhang Ruochen’s intentions. They transformed into two shadows and disappeared in the forest.

It suddenly dawned on the Luosha Princess. “You want the Kunlun’s Field, Tianmu Field, Eight Ministry Field, and Great Devil Ten Square to restrict each other. You purposely suppress the Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion, to make the others feel better and fight to work with you. This is smart, but aren’t you afraid of getting bitten?”

“Of course,” Zhang Ruochen said. “That’s why I must be careful. First, I need to find a safe place as the exchange spot.”

“Are there still any safe spots?”

Zhang Ruochen pointed into the depths of the 99 mountains. “The most dangerous place is the safest. It is very dangerous deep within the Phoenix Nest. Very few Saints can enter. This way, I won’t fall into the desperate situation of being surrounded by thousands of Saints.”

Once Han Qiu and Demonic Sound spread the news, it would definitely cause an uproar. Many people would be furious and feel that Zhang Ruochen was wildly greedy. The Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field would be especially furious.

By then, many people would try to take action.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen didn’t dare to stay in the forest. He immediately went into the 99 saint mountains.

Mad Man knew of Zhang Ruochen’s plan. He was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would destroy the Merits Records Wall after the Guanghan Field reached first place. Thus, he hurried to contact the Saints of the Eight Ministry Field to persuade them to work with Zhang Ruochen.

Of course, this was also a good chance for Mad Man to get benefits.

# Chapter 1484 - Bone Phoenix

Chapter 1484: Bone Phoenix

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“This is preposterous! He not only seized the ruler emperor weapon, but also tried to use the saints from the other five worlds to suppress us.”

“We need to find Zhang Ruochen and kill him.”

...

The saints from Blade Hell Field and Purple Mansion Field who had learnt about this were all furious.

Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu were also dismayed. Knowing that they shouldn't do nothing, they immediately summoned all the absolute saints from their fields to discuss about ways to kill Zhang Ruochen.

If they couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen, they would be put in a very awkward situation as they might actually be ranked last.

Zhang Ruochen, Le and Princess Luosha had already arrived at the bottom of Xifeng Saint Mountain where there were ancient maple trees growing. There were circles of saint Qi of heaven and earth surrounding the mountain, making it look like a heaven.

Xifeng Saint Mountain was one of the thirty-three inner saint mountains where the phoenixes from Zuling Field lived.

After the phoenixes from Zuling Field died out, Xifeng Saint Mountain also became lifeless.

The second they stepped into Xifeng Saint Mountain, the ground started to shake.

Rumble!

Giant white bones climbed out of the mud, and each bone was more than thirty feet long with blue engravings on them. Terrifying cold Qi gushed out of the bones, filling half the Xifeng Saint Mountain with white mist.

Every mountain in the inner area was hazardous.

Zhang Ruochen, Princess Luosha and Le weren't afraid, but they immediately stepped back and distanced themselves from the bones.

When all the bones climbed out of the ground, they saw that they formed a complete phoenix, and the bone wings at its back were more than one thousand feet long.

"They're nothing but bones, yet they still climbed out from the underground." Princess Luosha smiled wickedly.

Zhang Ruochen said, "There's a trace of saint soul deep in its bone, and it's able to move because of the saint soul.

Le said, "No just saint soul, but lots of grudges as well."

Ah!

The bone phoenix yelled in a shrill voice, and the sound waves were highly destructive.

The saint Qi in Xifeng Saint Mountain tumbled, and rocks were crushed into powders. Even the maple trees that had grown for ten thousand years weren't able to handle it, making clacking sounds while leaves kept falling from them.

Zhang Ruochen took out his Buddha Emperor sarira to activate a layer of Buddha protection to ward off that sound waves.

"How mighty. That bone phoenix should be a third-step saint king when it was still alive," Zhang Ruochen said.

Princess Luosha said, "Then it's going to be a problem. Even if a third-step saint king has turned into a skeleton, it's still way more powerful than a third-step saint king."

Boom!

The bone phoenix flapped its wing, surged to the sky and dived toward them three.

It then grabbed downwards with one of its bone claws.

And then, a shock wave pressed on their bodies, freezing the air around them. He couldn't get out from the underground.

An airwave pressed their bodies and seemed to have freeze the air around them.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized saint Qi and reached his fingers upwards.

Sizzle!

He tore the space apart and slashed upwards.

Phoenix inscriptions emerged on each bone of the bone phoenix, and space power emanated from the phoenix inscriptions, closing the space cracks.

“That's... Space seal...”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked seeing the center of the bone claws. He then activated Hundred Saints Blood Armor, summoned Abyss Ancient Sword and triggered the inscriptions inside the sword.

They found lots of space inscriptions and time seals in those ninety-nine saint mountains, which showed that the master of Phoenix Nest must be an incredible time and space monk.

And that being was likely to be Ice and Fire Phoenix, who had extraordinary status in Zuling Field.

If that was the case, then Ice and Fire Phoenix had refined space way to a profound level. It was normal that it left a third-step saint king some space seals.

Princess Luosha took out a blue saint scepter that was seven feet long, infused mind power into the scepter, and a light screen rushed out of a strange stone at the top of the scepter.

The bone claw clashed with the light screen.

Even Princess Luosha was shaken to tremble with her level-fifty-five mind power.



The bone phoenix struck again, hit through the light screen toward them three.

Zhagn Ruochen then activated the complete power of Abyss Ancient Sword, jumped up and wielded his sword upwards.

Bang!

Abyss Ancient Sword was sharp enough to cut off a small piece of the phoenix bone claw.

However, Zhang Ruochen was also injured by the power of the bone claw. He fell on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen wiped away the blood at the corner of his lips, stared at the giant bone phoenix using heavenly eyes and said, "The trace of saint soul is hidden in its saint source. The saint source is at the center of the third phoenix bone. I'll check the bone phoenix with Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. Le, go get the saint source."

Bone Phoenix was very cautious, and it had space seal which could suppress the power of space. It was very risky to get the saint source using spatial move.

They stood a higher chance if they worked together.

Whoosh!

Le jumped up hundreds of feet high, grabbed a bone of the tail of the bone phoenix and rushed upwards along it.

Bone phoenix noticed another small being on its body. It made a shrill scream as its phoenix inscriptions got brighter.

Zhang Ruochen flew up with a Luan and a phoenix under his feet, mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie and hit the bone phoenix.

Princess Luosha then used her saint scepter to form an iceberg that was more than three hundred feet tall, hitting the body of the bone phoenix.

The bone phoenix was furious. It shifted its focus to Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha instead of that small being on its body.

The phoenix inscriptions on its body warded off Divine Fire Jingmie, and its bone wings hit Zhang Ruochen's waist

through the fire and knocked him away to a wall like a fly.

Even with Hundred Saints Blood Armor, Zhang Ruochen felt extremely painful as he lied on the ground, not being able to move.

“Incredible... A third-step saint king is so powerful even after death...”

Zhang Ruochen spit out blood.

Bang!

Princess Luosha was also knocked away to the wall, cracking it. She also spit out blood.

Even so, there was a smile on her face, “I wanted to use spatial move to dodge it, but the bone phoenix is too fast for me to do that.”

Ga!

The bone phoenix was covered with cold Qi like a demonic God from hell. It dived and tried to scratch Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha with its large bone claws.

Princess Luosha was about to put her fingers on her belly to use her trump card.

Suddenly, the bone phoenix stopped moving, and the phoenix inscriptions on its body stopped giving out light.

Boom!

The murderous look on the bone phoenix disappeared, and the phoenix fell off the cliff.

Le was holding his sword in one hand and the saint source he just took out from the bone phoenix in the other, “You guys okay?”

“Sure thing.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Bang!

Something unexpected happened.

A ball of flames hit Le and knocked him away.

After the flames went away, they turned into sycamore tree leaves waving in the air.

Le's body also fell off the cliff.

Zhang Ruochen had never expected that. He yelled, "Le!"

Princess Luosha was also very surprised. Not even she sensed the dangers with her mind power.

An ancient sycamore tree shook under the cliff, and a handsome young man walked out of the trunk, engulfed crimson light.

It seemed that the handsome man had sucked the sycamore tree dry. They leave quickly withered away.

Seeing that handsome man, Zhang Ruochen immediately looked hostile, "You."

Qiu Yu took the saint source out of the bone phoenix and strolled it with his hand, "I hid in Xifeng Saint Mountain to absorb the essence of sycamore trees. I didn't expect you to be here."

"Did you ambush Le?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Qiu Yu walked up the cliff and walked close to Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, "I've killed him once. I don't mind killing him again."

Zhang Ruochen looked belligerent. He said, "You survived last time because Chi Yao protected you. Can't believe you still dare go against me."

Qiu Yu was furious thinking about what happened last time. It was the greatest shame of his life. He was defeated by Zhang Ruochen within three moves, put in a cauldron, forced to beg and got his fiancé robbed.

He lost his face and was laughed at by the entire Kunlun's Field, which was a fate worse than death.

Qiu Yu immediately calmed him down, smiled and said, "I can easily end your life now, but you know what? I won't let you die that easily. Prepare to suffer and wish that you could die, Zhang Ruochen."

# Chapter 1485 - Beat Up

Chapter 1485: Beat Up

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Luosha Princess's delicate frame was embedded in the stone wall, but she still let out a laugh from her red lips. "Who is this man? Why is he so proud?"

"He has the body of a true god," Zhang Ruochen said. "And he's the World Spiritual Root decided by the goddess of the Kunlun's Field. It's normal that he's proud."

The Luosha Princess burst into laughter. Her round breasts actually moved up and down. "I've seen many World Spiritual Roots before, but I've never seen one like him before. Is the goddess of the Kunlun's Field blind or stupid?"

"Perhaps," Zhang Ruochen said.

Qiu Yu naturally heard the mockery in the Luosha Princess' voice. He was quite unhappy, so his gaze moved from Zhang Ruochen to her.

The Luosha Princess was very beautiful and had a mesmerizing aura. She also had a cold body constitution, so she was especially attractive to Qiu Yu.

Jealousy flashed past Qiu Yu's eyes.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had been driven out of the Kunlun's Field, he was still doing great. He always had such beautiful girls around him.

This woman was also very strong physically. If he could cultivate with her, he might be able to resolve the swelling fire within him.

Just as Qiu Yu got this idea, his eyes met the Luosha Princess's eyes.

It was a pair of demonic eyes, like two black holes. It was about to swallow up Qiu Yu's mind.

Qiu Yu's eyes emptied and his body swayed. Then he fell from the sky.

In the stone wall, the Luosha Princess's lips twitched, curling into an alluring smile. "He has such a low will but he's trained as the World Spiritual Root. It seems like I've overestimated the Kunlun's Field."

Zhang Ruochen clenched his jaw. His eyes turned menacing. Suppressing his pain, he lifted the Abyss Ancient Sword from the stone wall and rushed out. He flew down the cliff and cut down.

Qiu Yu was plummeting quickly. Suddenly, fiery runes appeared on his forehead. He'd actually resolved the power from the Luosha Princess's two demonic eyes. His eyes brightened again.

In his eyes, the downward point of the Abyss Ancient Sword was getting closer and closer.

"Oh no..."

Qiu Yu was still a top talent. He processed everything in a very short time and the Holy Qi circulated rapidly in him, pouring into his boxing gloves.

Poof, poof.

Two red clouds of fire poured out of the gloves.

A gust of earth-splitting Sword Qi crashed against the two fiery clouds. Qiu Yu plummeted down even faster.

Boom.

He smashed into the ground, forming a huge crater of cracked rock. Plumes of dust lifted. Bloody injuries appeared on his face, arms, and back.

Even though his true form is a tree, Qiu Yu was in a flesh body now and still had blood.

Before Qiu Yu could climb out of the crater, Zhang Ruochen stabbed down straight, going for his forehead.

Qiu Yu let out a roar. He lifted his right hand. The fire pouring out of his gloves turned even more frightening. It formed a 100-foot-tall projection of a fire god.

Boom!

This clash forced Qiu Yu down even more and he spat out blood, but he'd finally stopped the Abyss Ancient Sword.

First, it was because Qiu Yu had improved greatly and had reached the Absolute Saint Realm.

Second, his gloves had a special background. They were part of the Fire God Armor.

In legends, the Fire God Armor had been worn by a Kunlun god in the middle ages. Not only did it have supernatural defensive abilities, it could also improve a cultivator's combat abilities.

Zhang Ruochen had been badly hurt. His injuries worsened after clashing with Qiu Yu. The pain traveling through him grew more intense.

The Luosha Princess recovered a bit of her abilities. She flew down like a blue butterfly. Grabbing in the air, she collected the staff that had been sent flying by the bone phoenix.

"Do you need help?" she asked.

"No," Zhang Ruochen said. "I will take care of him personally."

Qiu Yu walked out of the bottom of the crater. He was covered in bloody sword marks and looked very miserable. "You wouldn't have been able to hurt me if she hadn't tricked me earlier," he said in a low voice. "Zhang Ruochen, I've been cultivating with all my might, just to defeat you personally."

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel like wasting time. He directly used spatial power and struck with seven spatial cracks.

Qiu Yu immediately flew up, dodging the spatial cracks. He crossed his arms. Ancient runes instantly appeared on his Fire

God wrist guards. Then a beam of firelight poured down at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen struck with the Buddha's sarira. It crashed against the firelight.

The two forces were at a stalemate in the air. Energy rippled out, dyeing half of the space golden, the other half red.

Zhang Ruochen held the Buddha's sarira with one hand. He controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword with the other, attacking Qiu Yu with a sword technique.

Golden branches grew out of Qiu Yu's body, clashing with the sword.

They looked like tree branches, but they seemed to be made out of metal. The Abyss Ancient Sword's sharpness couldn't cut them. Soon, the dense branches enveloped the sword.

"Even in your best state, you still weren't my match, let alone in your injured state now. What use is there to continue fighting? Why don't you beg forgiveness?"

He'd begged for Zhang Ruochen's forgiveness at the Demonic Sect, so Qiu Yu had a strong resentment.

"Beg forgiveness?"

Zhang Ruochen scoffed. He activated spatial power and disappeared from the spot.

Spatial Move.

Qiu Yu sensed something wrong. He immediately pulled back his power and pushed up, forming a hundred-foot-wide fire territory.

"Soul of Fire God."

A fire god's projection appeared behind Qiu Yu.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the space, appearing in front of Qiu Yu. Then he activated the second level of the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. Gathering the power of 100 mid-level Saints, he punched Qiu Yu's chest.

Panic flashed past Qiu Yu's eyes.

He'd thought that Zhang Ruochen would use the Spatial Move to appear behind him and attack from there. That was why he'd activated the Fire God Soul.

Who would've thought that Zhang Ruochen would attack from the front?

Now, it was too late to dodge.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen's palm hit Qiu Yu's chest. Blood spurted from his nose and he shot back like a canon.

Before Qiu Yu could steady himself, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move and appeared before him again. He slammed another palm onto his body.

Thud, thud.

After that, Zhang Ruochen completely controlled the situation. He made it so that Qiu Yu couldn't fight back at all. He could only get beaten.

Mad Man led the three big figures of the Eight Ministry Field into Xifeng Saint Mountain. Seeing the one-sided battle in the mountain, he wasn't surprised at all. Instead, he asked the Luosha Princess, "Demonic Concubine, who is Zhang Ruochen torturing now?"

"A guy who doesn't know his place. He seems to have an old rivalry with Zhang Ruochen."

The Luosha Princess's gaze was trained on Qiu Yu's gloves and wrist guards. Her gaze was hot. With her knowledge, she actually recognized the Fire God Armor.

If not for the Fire God Armor, Qiu Yu probably would've fallen down much earlier from Zhang Ruochen's attacks.

Of the three who'd hurried over with Mad Man, one of them was the Heir of the Eight Ministry Field. His name was Yuan Hun.

He looked quite young. He wore a loose Buddhist robe and had short hair. He gripped a string of golden beads and looked very energetic.



The other two...

Actually, they were two divine beasts in human form. They were one male and one female, called Zhentian Tiger and Golden Leopard.

They were both more than two meters tall and extremely burly. Their cultivations had reached the half-step Saint King Realm.

“It’s best to make Zhang Ruochen stop fighting,” Zhentian Tiger said gruffly. “Our business is the most important.”

Mad Man was about to send a message to Zhang Ruochen when he saw a figure fly horizontally toward him. He hurriedly moved aside.

Thud.

Qiu Yu crashed onto the ground. His body was deformed. Many places had turned into wood. He lay on the ground on his last breath and was unable to continue fighting.

Zhang Ruochen flew down from the sky. Blood Qi surged from his stomach to his throat. He was about to spit out a mouthful of blood.

But when he saw Mad Man, Yuan Hun, Zhentian Tiger, and Golden Leopard standing to the side, he swallowed the Blood Qi again.

Four top figures of the Eight Ministry Field had appeared at the same time. Even if they’d come to work with him, they might attack him immediately if they discovered that he was hurt.

After all, Zhang Ruochen only had a shallow relationship with Mad Man.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was also the Heir of the Great Devil Ten Square Field. Before Demonic Sound and Han Qiu hurried back, Zhang Ruochen was surrounded by danger and treading on thin ice.

Thus, he worked to suppress his injuries. He stood up straight and put on a powerful front. Then he took a Saint-binding Chain taken from a first marquis to tie Qiu Yu up.

Qiu Yu was unwilling. “Zhang Ruochen,” he roared. “Let me go and fight again.”

“You’re already beaten up like this and you’re still so annoying. Pah, don’t disturb our business.”

Zhentian Tiger stepped on Qiu Yu’s head, crushing his head into the dirt. Then he spat a mouthful of saliva.

He had a lot of spit and dampened Qiu Yu’s entire head.

“Zhang Ruochen, our Heir would like to discuss exchanging merits with you,” Golden Leopard said. “Look...”

Zhang Ruochen ignored her. He used the Saint-binding Chain to drag Qiu Yu and went to find Le, who Qiu Yu had forced down the abyss.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen didn’t even look at her, she felt like he was too rude. She immediately grew furious and saintly power surged from her claws.

“Even Ning Dongliu isn’t his match,” Mad Man warned. “You still dare to attack him?”

Golden Leopard thought of Ning Dongliu’s terrifying abilities. Her lips twitched and she pulled her power back.

Yuan Hun’s eyes were trained on Zhang Ruochen’s back. He felt like Zhang Ruochen was badly hurt but was pretending to be strong.

He wanted to investigate further, but he saw in the corner of his vision that the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was staring at him.

She’s big trouble, Yuan Hun thought. With her on the side, it’s unsuitable to attack Zhang Ruochen now. I can wait and look for another chance after exchanging for merits.

# Chapter 1486 - Skate on Thin Ice

Chapter 1486: Skate on Thin Ice

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen found Le in poisonous brambles under the cliff.

Half of Le's body was burnt, and many of his bones cracked. His face paled, making him look like a corpse.

Zhang Ruochen bore the extreme pain and dragged Le out of the brambles.

Princess Luosha walked to Zhang Ruochen, looked at the 'corpse' on the ground and said, "Merits Battles are always this brutal as you never know when you'll die. Let's bury him!"

Zhang Ruochen slightly shook his head, still staring at Le.

Princess Luosha didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be this stubborn. Just when she tried to persuade him again to give up, she sensed something and started to observe the 'corpse' on the ground carefully.

"How is that possible... There's life Qi and death Qi in his body, and they're intertwined."

Princess Luosha's mind power was strong enough for her to sense the bizarre circulation in Le's body, which shocked even her.

Le had formed Taichi Life and Death Mark in his body, and he was able to turn life Qi into death Qi, and vice versa.

As long as he had strong enough mind power, he could be immortal.

Unless he ran into an enemy who was powerful enough to crush his body into ashes and thus the Taichi Life and Death Mark.

Le had only refined the seventh circle of 'Nine-Circle Life-Death Code'. If he finished the eighth, or even the ninth circle, he could survive even his body was crushed into ashes.

Le started to regain his vigor, and the life Qi in his body got thicker.

Zhang Ruochen relieved.

The four great beings from Eight Ministry Field were all amazed by the changes in Le's body.

Mad Man was thrilled. He thought, "Zhang Ruochen has so many great talents following him. Han Qiu who practices Way of Darkness, an immortal and cold-blooded sword warrior and a Taigu remains Carnivorous Holy Flower. Even the greatest saints from a large field can't fight them off."

"Amitabha."

Yuan Hun walked to Zhang Ruochen, smiled and said, "I'm Yuan Hun, the heir of Eight Ministry Field. Do you have time to talk about merits exchange, Donor Zhang?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded as he knew he needed to treat an heir with respect, "Mad Man has told you about the rules, hasn't he?"

"Certainly."

Yuan Hun said, "But thirty percent is a bit too much. How about twenty percent for the sake of a potential friendship?"

Yuan Hun followed Mad Man here voluntarily instead of ambushing Zhang Ruochen, which showed he was okay with Zhang Ruochen's terms.

He only negotiated because he wanted to test Zhang Ruochen's real power.

If Zhang Ruochen was indeed severely injured, he might agree to the bargain.

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect the saints from Eight Ministry Field to arrive this soon.

He had had dealings with many cunning people before, so Zhang Ruochen knew what Yuan Hun had in mind. He said, "The saints from Kunlun's Field have given me thirty percent of their merits. If I only get twenty percent from you guys, how will the saints from Kunlun's Field feel about it?"

Princess Luosha chuckled and said, "What if we Great Devil Ten Square Field only give ten percent?"

Yuan Hun thought for a bit and said, "Then I won't push you, Zhang. I'll give you thirty percent."

And then, Yuan Hun, Golden Leopard and Zhentian Tiger all took out their Luosha blood and fragmented souls, putting them in bottles.

Princess Luosha clenched his fist seeing the Luosha blood and fragmented souls on the ground, but she hid it very well on the surface.

Zhang Ruochen only took out the Merits Records Wall after getting thirty percent of the Luosha blood and fragmented souls.

Suddenly, the eyes of Golden Leopard and Zhentian Tiger gleamed. A great saint force started to tumble in their bodies.

When Zhang Ruochen brought out a Merits Records Wall, he also took out a saint sword.

It was the godly spirits weapon given by Moon God.

All the great beings who were present could sense the godly power contained in the saint sword.

Golden Leopard and Zhentian Tiger were startled. They immediately retracted their saint power and yelled, "How did you get a godly spirits weapon? Isn't that not allowed in Zuling Field?"

Yuan Hun knew that all the priests from Shatuo Seven Fields had a godly spirits weapon, so he was very calm.

“Can’t believe Zhang Ruochen showed his godly spirits weapon. Seems like he doesn’t actually have that much bargaining power. But he can easily kill us with his godly spirits weapon if we try to seize the Merits Records Wall. We need to wait,” Yuan Hun thought.

Yuan Hun walked to the Merits Records Wall, opened his bottle and converted his Luosha blood and fragmented souls into three million and two hundred thousand merits.

Golden Leopard and Zhentian Tiger followed, getting eight hundred thousand merits and one point two million merits respectively.

Eight Ministry Field had now collected ninety-two million merits in total, and it was still at the third place.

As for Zhagn Ruochen, he obtained two point two million merits. Guanghai Field now had ninety-five million merits.

Yuan Hun smiled and said, “We had a good run. Mad Man will bring more saints from Eight Ministry Field for merits.”

“Hope we can cooperate well,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Yuan Hun looked to Princess Luosha and said, “Demonic Concubine, can we talk somewhere else.”

Princess Luosha said, “Sure thing.”

Yuan Hun and Princess Luosha walked down the saint mountain, followed by Mad Man, Golden Leopard and Zhentian Tiger.

Xifeng Saint Mountain became extremely quiet. Zhang Ruochen couldn’t suppress his wounds anymore. He spit out blood while his body shook. He stood on the ground slowly, tying up his meridians.

He was severely injured during the fight against the bone phoenix, and the fight against Qiu Yu only exacerbated it.

Zhang Ruochen should’ve treated his wounds earlier, but he had to sustain to intimidate the great beings from Eight

Ministry Field.

Qiu Yu sneered, “You’ve finally had a taste of your own medicine. You can’t even move a finger of yours.”

Qiu Yu, though being tied, still managed to stand up and laughed, “I’m the winner today.”

Although Qiu Yu couldn’t mobilize saint Qi, his body constitution was still strong. He stuck his fingers out of the Saint-binding Chain and reached toward the sword, walking toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes, “Lingxi.”

The space around them trembled, and Mu Lingxi walked out of the space crystal. As she saw Qiu Yu trying to stab Zhang Ruochen, she slapped him without hesitation.

Bang!

Qiu Yu bounced away after muffling, and his sword fell onto the ground.

“No! I... I almost won...”

Qiu Yu yelled.

Mu Lingxi immediately realized what was going on here.

Both Le and Zhang Ruochen were heavily injured, and neither of them was able to move.

How about the others?

“What happened?” Mu Lingxi asked.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the ground and sent a message using his mind power, “Make sure Qiu Yu stay. I’ll tell you everything after I recover.”

“Okay.”

Mu Lingxi held Le’s iron sword in one hand and Monument Shield in the other. She looked around as Zhang Ruochen’s and Le’s safety was in her hands now.

Qiu Yu lied on the ground and begged, “Lingxi, even if we’re not married, we were at least engaged. Please let me go. Zhang Ruochen will definitely kill me when he recovers.”

Mu Lingxi said, “My father forced me to get engaged with you. I didn’t want that.”

“But I’m your fiancé after all. Are you really going to let Zhang Ruochen kill me?”

Qiu Yu then said, “Have you forgotten that I saved your life in Blue Dragon Void World before? Is it really that difficult for you to spare my life? I don’t believe the girl I’m into is an ungrateful and vile person.”

Mu Lingxi looked conflicted and said, “You don’t need to use that against me. I’ll forever remember the favor I owe you, but there’s no way I can let you go, but I’ll ask Zhang Ruochen to spare your life.”

“Zhang Ruochen is ruthless! There’s no way he’ll spare my life. If you don’t let me go, you’re practically killing me, Lingxi. How are you going to sleep knowing that Qiu Yu dies because of you?” Qiu Yu said.



# Chapter 1487 - Life-Risking Battle

Chapter 1487: Life-Risking Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mu Lingxi was able to become the Saintess of the Demonic Sect and infiltrate the Martial City Academy for so long. It was evident that she was very smart and strategic.

Thus, she could naturally see that Qiu Yu was purposely using “kindness” to threaten her.

If she’d really softened and freed Qiu Yu, then today would probably be the day of Zhang Ruochen and Le’s deaths.

Qiu Yu could see the worry in Mu Lingxi’s heart. “Lingxi,” he quickly said. “Don’t worry. I swear that as long as you free, I definitely won’t take revenge on Zhang Ruochen. You should know that, for top cultivators, going against their word would affect their mindset greatly.”

Holding her sword, Mu Lingxi walked over and pointed it to Qiu Yu’s forehead. “No need to speak further. Since I said I’ll ask forgiveness from Zhang Ruochen, I will definitely try my best to save you.”

Ugh, I’m already acting so low, but she still stands on Zhang Ruochen’s side. If I’d known this, I wouldn’t have saved her in the Blue Dragon Void World. If she falls into my hands, I’ll make her wish she’s dead. Menace flashed past the depths of Qiu Yu’s eyes.

A laugh came from a poisonous cloud in the distance. “I didn’t expect this. I didn’t expect to see such an incredible scene.”

Hearing the laugh, Mu Lingxi was taken aback. “Who is it?”

Zhentian Tiger walked out of the cloud with his thick arms behind his back. Looking at Zhang Ruochen sitting cross-legged, he said, “I’d come on the Heir’s orders to investigate on Zhang Ruochen’s true state. Seems like I don’t have to do anything myself.”

Yuan Hun had led the Luosha Princess away to send someone back secretly and check if Zhang Ruochen really was injured. If he was, then Zhentian Tiger could force Zhang Ruochen to use the divine weapon even if he couldn’t kill him.

Once the divine weapon lost its power, Zhang Ruochen would be defenseless.

Faced with Zhentian Tiger, Mu Lingxi felt great pressure. It was like a mountain-sized tiger walking over to her.

Each word that Zhentian Tiger spoke was like an earsplitting roar. Mu Lingxi’s delicate frame was about to fly out from the vibrations.

But Mu Lingxi was fighting hard against the pressure. She activated the Ice Phoenix blood, forming the huge projection of a phoenix. It blocked Zhang Ruochen and Le.

Zhentian Tiger eyed Mu Lingxi. “The Ice Phoenix Body isn’t bad, but you’re only in the middle of the True Saint Realm. You’re no different from an ant to me.”

Mu Lingxi’s eyes were sharp. “Not necessarily. A True Saint deactivating her saintly source might still be enough to kill me.”

“You think you can scare me by threatening with your life?”

Zhentian Tiger scoffed. Looking at Qiu Yu on the ground, he said, “How about I undo the Saint-binding Chain and you kill Zhang Ruochen for me?”

Earlier, Qiu Yu was already in despair. Hearing Zhentian Tiger’s words, he seemed to see hope again.

He finally had a chance to turn the tides.

“I have an irrevocable rivalry with Zhang Ruochen,” Qiu Yu said quickly. “As long as you undo the Saint-binding Chain, today will be the day that he dies.”

“I want all the treasures on Zhang Ruochen,” Zhentian Tiger said.

“I only want to kill him and erase my humiliation. As for his treasures... With my cultivation, I won't dare to compete with you.”

Actually, Qiu Yu didn't care about Zhentian Tiger at all. If he killed Zhang Ruochen, Zhentian Tiger would be the next one.

Even a Supreme Saint would be tempted by Zhang Ruochen's treasures. How could Qiu Yu not want them?

Plus, Zhentian Tiger had stepped on his head and spat in his face earlier. Qiu Yu had already been furious. It would be stranger if he didn't kill Zhentian Tiger.

However, he was restricted, so he had to act weaker.

Zhentian Tiger nodded in satisfaction. He sent a crescent sword flying. It cut an arc and hit the Saint-binding Chain.

Mu Lingxi couldn't stop that. Merely the destructive power that radiated from the sword forced her back.

With a thud, the Saint-binding Chain was broken.

Next, the restriction on Qiu Yu's Holy Qi disappeared.

With a loud scream, Qiu Yu cut the remaining chains into dozens of pieces. Pressing on the ground, he spun and flew up, going straight for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhentian Tiger retreated into the distance. He crossed his arms as if watching a good show.

He didn't attack because he couldn't figure out if Zhang Ruochen was still able to activate the divine weapon. He was also a bit afraid that Mu Lingxi would really deactivate her saintly source.

It was the best that someone was willing to do it for him.

“Zhang Ruochen, I will extract your saint soul and turn you into a ghost slave. You’ll be my slave for eternity.”

Qiu Yu’s eyes were bloodshot and the murderous intent in him was extremely strong. Seeing Mu Lingxi before Zhang Ruochen, he said coldly, “Move if you don’t want to die.”

“If you want to kill Zhang Ruochen, you must cross over my dead body.”

“It’s not so easy to die. Zhang Ruochen will be turned into a ghost slave while you’ll be my furnace.”

Qiu Yu was badly hurt, but he still didn’t think highly about Mu Lingxi. He grabbed in the air and instantly, a dozen-meter-long hand of fire appeared. It went down to grab Mu Lingxi.

A rune scroll appeared between Mu Lingxi’s slender fingers. A wisp of Holy Qi was added in.

“Nine Overlapping Trial Runes.”

The runes flew out and dissolved. Then nine trial thunders descended from the sky. They actually shattered Qiu Yu’s flame hand into wisps of smoke.

Next, Mu Lingxi took out a thick stack of defensive and offensive scrolls, hitting them out.

In an instant, a dozen layers of shields rose up around Mu Lingxi, Zhang Ruochen and Le. At the same time, an offensive rune hit Qiu Yu. He was actually forced into a miserable state and scorch marks appeared on him. Electricity flowed on his body and he would occasionally get frozen too.

Zhang Ruochen had stolen these scrolls from other Saints. He didn’t like to rely on outer force, so he gave almost all of them to Mu Lingxi.

However, Qiu Yu was strong and had advanced cultivation too. These scrolls could only delay him, rather than hurt him.

On the side, Zhentian Tiger was a bit worried. Yuan Hun couldn’t delay the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine for long. She could return at any time. With the unspeakable relationship between the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine and Zhang Ruochen, she would definitely help him.

“You can’t even take down a little girl,” Zhentian Tiger said in a low voice. “No wonder you can’t defeat Zhang Ruochen.”

Qiu Yu felt embarrassed too. He activated a shred of the Tree God Qi and sent it into the Fire God Boxing Glove.

Whoosh!

Fire kept surging from within the Fire God Armor, transforming into a sea of fire.

“Break!”

Qiu Yu punched forward. An overwhelming force shattered the layers of rune shields. Even Mu Lingxi was sent flying while spitting out blood.

“Useless struggling.”

Qiu Yu ignored the injured Mu Lingxi and strode toward Zhang Ruochen. The murderous intent bursting from him grew heavier.

Zhang Ruochen was working hard on recovering. He naturally sensed Qiu Yu approaching, but he was at the critical moment of recovery. He couldn’t even move a finger, let alone strike back.

Just as Qiu Yu was around seven feet from Zhang Ruochen, a gust of piercing coldness surged from the distance, forming a layer of thick ice on the ground.

Cold fire burned around Mu Lingxi. She flew back again, holding her sword before Zhang Ruochen. She stared at Qiu Yu. “I said, you must cross over my dead body if you want to kill him.”

“You’re actually burning your blood to protect him.”

“For him, so what if I burn my last drop of blood?”

The fire pouring out of Mu Lingxi was extremely cold. The surrounding temperature dropped drastically and the land under the abyss turned into a tundra.

“Okay, I’ll make it easy for you.”

Qiu Yu activated the Fire God Boxing Glove and attacked, preparing to end this quickly.

After burning her saintly blood, Mu Lingxi's combat abilities shot up. She blocked Qiu Yu's strike.

However, her goal was to protect Zhang Ruochen and Le, so she was restricted in battle. After around 30 exchanges, Qiu Yu seized the opportunity. He punched Mu Lingxi's abdomen, making her spit out blood and fly back.

However, Mu Lingxi was extremely resilient. She stood up again and waved her sword at Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu lost all patience. Murderous intent gleaming in his eyes, he punched out with full force. Instantly, a huge fist print shattered half of Mu Lingxi's bones. She fell to the ground and couldn't stand up again.

Mu Lingxi lay in the pool of blood. She was in so much pain that she felt numb. Only her eyes could continue moving. She looked toward Zhang Ruochen with a helpless and tragic gaze.

Her bloodied fingers twitched, but she couldn't pick up her sword again.

Mu Lingxi's eyelids grew heavier and heavier. Her vision grew darker and darker. Just as she was about to lose consciousness, she seemed to see a figure in white stand before Zhang Ruochen.

It was a white-robed woman enveloped in light. Her black hair hung at her waist and every inch of her skin shone brilliantly. She was practically a fairy.

There was a white tail under her perky behind.

"Thankfully I came in time," she said, as if talking to herself.

Qiu Yu looked at the white-robed woman standing beside Zhang Ruochen and frowned. Then he said coldly, "Princess White Li, do you dare to get involved in my business?"

# Chapter 1488 - Captured Again

Chapter 1488: Captured Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Why not?” Princess White Li said.

Qiu Yu who had the body of a true god was indeed powerful, and there were only few creatures from Kunlun’s Field at the same level who dared fight against him.

Unfortunately, Princess White Li was one of them.

Qiu Yu knew that this was the best chance for him to kill Zhang Ruochen. He stopped talking to Princess White Li and mobilized his Tree God Qi, combining it with Fiery God Boxing Glove.

Suddenly, a being engulfed in flames that was more than a thousand feet tall showed up behind him.

“Anyone who dares obstruct me, die!”

Qiu Yu yelled as saint Qi flowed in his body. He operated the fiery godly shadow against Princess White Li.

The fiery power was like a storm, and it was stronger than that of normal saints.

Princess White Li took out Yinkong Tower, and the tower got larger and larger. It kept spinning and flying, giving out cold ghost Qi.

Boom!

The two forces clashed with each other.

The tower shook as it was hit by the fiery godly shadow, and all ghost Qi was dispelled by the fire, and the tower cracked.

Yinkong Tower was only a highly-ranked thousand patterns saint weapon, but Qiu Yu was wearing Fiery God Armor. The gap between the two weapons was too large.

Qiu Yu was surprised, “Princess White Li ward off by full-strength strike.”

Aside from Zhang Ruochen, Qiu Yu had never met any competitors among those at the same level, and almost no monks were able to ward off his full-strength strike.

Qiu Yu could rival an ordinary first-step saint king when he was at his prime.

He was now severely injured, so he was way less powerful.

Princess White Li carried herself with ease. She kept using Yinkong Tower to ward off Qiu Yu’s attacks.

After twelve strikes, Yinkong Tower crumbled into pieces and spread everywhere.

Zhentian Tiger was shocked.

“What a force to be reckoned with. He managed to crush a ten thousand patterns weapon using only his fist. He’s at my level. If he weren’t injured, he would be stronger than me.”

Zhentian Tiger now realized that Qiu Yu was a dangerous person and that he was showing his weaknesses on purpose.

“He’s only a mid-class absolute saint, but he’s stronger than half-step saint kings. Does Qiu Yu have a complete body constitution?” Zhentian Tiger thought.

Qiu Yu got stronger and stronger, and half his body became a sycamore tree while the other half was still human. He kept mobilizing the power of the fiery god boxing glove and crushed toward Princess White Li.

“Nine Tails True Shadow.”

The saint Qi tumbled in Princess White Li’s body, and saintly way rules rushed out of her body, forming a phantom that was



a white cat with nine tails. The white cat looked divine, and there were godly engravings in her pupils.

It was a soul shadow of White Li Ancestor.

White Li Ancestor had been the leader of Nine Li Palace since the ancient times, and he had great status in Kunlun's Field.

Both Princess White Li and Prince White Li were children of White Li Ancestor, and they were sealed since they were born, and they weren't dug out until this era.

Boom!

Nine Tail True Shadow clashed with Fiery Godly Shadow, and the two powers were in stalemate.

The ground under Princess White Li and Qiu Yu cracked.

Fortunately, there were inscriptions set up by phoenixes in Xifeng Saint Mountain that could withstand their power, otherwise the continent would've crumbled.

Princess White Li was a Taigu remains, and after the genesis and having a leaf of Seven Star Sacred Tuber, her power was at Qiu Yu's level.

"Was that all you've got, heaven and earth spiritual root?"

Light rains flew out of Princess White Li's body, merging with Nine Tail True Shadow, which made it even stronger, knocking Qiu Yu and Fiery Godly Shadow away.

"How come..."

Qiu Yu found it unbelievable.

He now realized that even at his prime, it might not be an easy job for him to defeat Princess White Li.

Qiu Yu shot Zhentian Tiger a glance and said, "What're you waiting for? Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine might be becoming back. We must kill them as soon as possible."

"Finally. That kid doesn't respect me at all."

Although Zhentian Tiger hated Qiu Yu, he knew that they needed to finish the fight as soon as possible. He then

mobilized saint Qi, and tiger sounds burst out of his meridians and saint meridians.

Princess White Li felt a bit pressured facing two great beings.

However, Princess White Li saw that both Zhentian Tiger and Qiu Yu were dazed as if they saw something horrible.

Princess White Li took a look behind her back, and she saw Zhang Ruochen and Le stood up together.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at Zhentian Tiger and Qiu Y, and he walked toward Mu Lingxi lying in blood.

Zhentian Tiger and Qiu Yu rushed down Xifeng Saint Mountain like lightning.

Princess White Li said to Le, "Pick one."

Le vanished with his iron sword and showed up behind Zhentian Tiger at the next moment.

"What a genius. Every time after a life or death experience, his cultivation surges." Princess White Li realized that she could only see a fragmented shadow of Le.

Princess White Li also used her full speed, merging with Nine Tail True Shadow and rushing toward Qiu Yu.

Zhentian Tiger sensed the danger coming after him. He mobilized his saint Qi and ran as fast as possible, crushing the stones around him.

Even so, the danger got closer and closer.

Soon, Le was a hundred feet away from him.

Zhentian Tiger spun around in the air and pushed forward.

"Tuishan... Force."

Unfortunately, before he could perform that saint spell, Le had stabbed his forehead with the sword in his hand. He twisted his wrist, releasing great sword Qi, which crushed Zhentian Tiger's head.

Zhentian Tiger didn't hit Le with his Tuishan Force as he had lost his head, but it did shake the entire Xifeng Saint Mountain.

In the end, Zhentian Tiger fell on the ground.

Qiu Yu was faster than Zhentian Tiger, and he got to the bottom of Xifeng Saint Mountain quickly. Seeing that Princess White Li was still more than a thousand feet away, he thought that he'd escaped.

"I'll defeat you one day, Zhang Ruochen. Mark my words."

Qiu Yu yelled, and just as he was about to run away, he saw Zhang Ruochen show up in front of him. Zhang Ruochen was holding Mu Lingxi in one hand and Abyss Ancient Sword in the other.

Zhang Ruochen looked apathetic, and Qiu Yu missed a heartbeat by just looking at him.

Princess White Li caught up with Qiu Yu.

Le walked out of sycamore forest with a blood-red battle sword. Obviously, he had killed Zhentian Tiger.

"How do you want to die?" Le asked.

Qiu Yu tried to be calm while he was terrified inside, "If I blow up my saint source, you'll all die."

"You need to blow it up first."

Zhang Ruochen suddenly showed up behind him, and before he could defend himself, he hit Qiu Yu's head and knocked him unconscious.

"Chain him and spare his life. He might be of some use later." Zhang Ruochen then walked toward Xifeng Saint Mountain.

Princess Luosha was standing on a branch of a ten-thousand-year-old ancient sycamore tree, and she looked very charming. It seemed that she had merged with the scene around her.

She looked at Princess White Li and said, "Another great being. Zhang Ruochen indeed has many great talents. He almost trumps me."

Princess Luosha knew exactly what Yuan Hun was aiming for.

Actually, Yuan Hun didn't stall her for a long time as she went back to Xifeng Saint Mountain a long time ago. She was

waiting for Zhang Ruochen to use that godly spirits weapon.

Princess Luosha wanted to know how powerful Zhang Ruochen's godly spirits weapon was, and what level of saint kings it could defeat, and how many times he could use it.

Unfortunately, Qiu Yu and Zhentian Tiger let her down.

A Luosha girl showed up under the tree.

That Luosha girl didn't practice mind power, instead, she followed martial way, and she was wearing a very revealing black armor. Her skin was smooth and white, and she was showing her breast, belly and thighs. She looked like a seductive heroine.

She was called Qian Yu, who had complete body constitution.

Unlike Yang Qi and Lord Lingquan, Qian Yu didn't have a powerful background, instead, she had all her loyalty to Princess Luosha, and she was one of the most powerful beings working for Princess Luosha.

Qian Yu said, "Your highness, the two girls you asked us to kill have escaped our encirclement, but both of them are heavily injured."

"So they still managed to spread the word to the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields that they can convert their Luosha blood and fragmented into merits with Zhang Ruochen?" Princess Luosha said.

Qian Yu knelt on the ground with one knee and said, "I'm so sorry, your highness. I'll accept any punishment."

After Zhang Ruochen sent out Han Qiu and Demonic Sound, Princess Luosha gave an order to Luosha race to kill them.

If Zhang Ruochen managed to succeed, that meant Princess Luosha's plan to use Merits Records Wall to weaken Shatuo Seven Fields failed.

# Chapter 1489 - Wake Up

Chapter 1489: Wake Up

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Princess Luosha stroked her chin with her fingers and said, “I won’t blame you two. It’s indeed very difficult to deal with those two. I can’t even guarantee being able to kill them.”

Qian Yu then stood back up.

Princess Luosha said, “There’re already some conflicts between Zhang Ruochen and Eight Ministry Field. We need to make the conflicts worse. As long as Zhang Ruochen and Eight Ministry Field become complete enemies, Zhang Ruochen’s plan will fail automatically.

“Then Eighty Ministry Field, Purple Mansion Field, and Hell Blade Field will be on the same side.

“While Great Devil Ten Square Field, Guanghan Field, Kunlun’s Field, and Tianmu Field will be on the same team.

“It’ll be fun to watch when they start to fight against each other.”

Qian Yu asked, “What kind of plans do you have in mind, your highness?”

Princess Luosha flew down from the ancient sycamore tree beside Qian Yu and said, “The saints from Hell Blade Field should all know that Yuan Hun went to negotiate with Zhang Ruochen. If Yuan Hun gets killed, they’ll all think it’s Zhang Ruochen who did it.

“Go tell Yang Qi and Lord Lingquan to stop Yuan Hun. Make sure they kill him before he gets back to Hell Blade Field.”

“Okay, I’ll go tell them now.”

Just as Qian Yu turned around and prepared to leave, Princess Luosha said, “Wait a second.”

Qian Yu asked, “Anything else I can help you with, your highness?”

Princess Luosha said, “Hit me with all your strength.”

Qian Yu was slightly dazed. She didn’t know why Princess Luosha asked her to do so, although she sensed that there must be a good reason.

She asked, “With full strength, really?”

“Yes,” Princess Luosha said.

Qian Yu stopped hesitating, mobilizing the evil sha Qi inside her body. Her skin turned red as if it was an iron coal. She then hit Princess Luosha on her back.

Boom!

Princess Luosha bounced away, breaking the trunks of thirteen ancient sycamore trees, injuring herself worse.

Mu Lingxi was more wounded than Princess Luosha, and after burning her saint blood to fight, she lost most of her blood Qi, which put her life in danger.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen collected some water from the Spring of Life under Sky-connecting Divine Tree and had been keeping it in a bottle, and it could finally be put to good use.

Mu Lingxi’s life force was gradually stabilized after drinking the water from the Spring of Life, but she still hadn’t woken up.

Zhang Ruochen then took out a spring pill, but after a second thought, he reckoned Mu Lingxi wasn’t strong enough to handle the power of the spring pill.

He then put the spring pill in the water from the Spring of Life to dilute it before giving it to Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen pressed one of his hands against Mu Lingxi's back, infusing saint Qi into her Tianxin Meridian, helping her refine and absorb the pill Qi from the spring pill.

Qiu Yu didn't hold back at all when he attacked Mu Lingxi, which made her inner injuries way worse than her outer ones.

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn but pitiful when he was treating Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen let Mu Lingxi sip the Spring of Life every fifteen minutes, and after an hour and a half, Mu Lingxi's outer injuries were almost healed completely.

Cough Cough!

Mu Lingxi woke up, opening her eyes, only after which Zhang Ruochen became relieved and smiled.

The world looked very hazy when Mu Lingxi first opened her eyes, and gradually, it became clearer and clearer, until she saw Zhang Ruochen's face distinctly. She said with her feeble voice, "Are...are we still alive?"

"Or what? Do you think we're both in hell now?" Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Mu Lingxi tried to stand up, but she felt an excruciating pain as she moved her body, which made her shiver.

However, she didn't look like she was suffering at all. Instead, she was exhilarated.

Being able to feel pain meant she was still alive.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Don't move. You haven't fully recovered yet."

"I'm a saint, not a weak girl." Mu Lingxi rolled her eyes at Zhang Ruochen and slowly stood up with Zhang Ruochen's support.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "When did you become so stubborn?"

"I'm being stubborn because I'm not strong enough. I must catch up with you, then I can help you like today when you're in danger in the future. Otherwise, I'll be useless when your life's at risk, which is the real painful thing," Mu Lingxi said.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her.

Mu Lingxi said, confused, “Why’re you gazing at me?”

“Um... Nothing... I wish there was someone who could always protect me. Then I wouldn’t need to refine or battle anyways. Life would be much easier that way,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Mu Lingxi snorted, “In your dreams.”

Princess White Li walked to Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi, dragging the corpse of the Bone Phoenix. “My lord, I’ve found something precious in the corpse.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen walked Mu Lingxi to a blue stone and told her to treat her wounds while sitting there.

The spine of the Bone Phoenix was more than twelve hundred feet long. One of the bones had been pierced through by a spike, and blue liquids flowed out.

The liquids solidified the second they touched the air.

“That is...”

Zhang Ruochen felt an icy coldness from the blue crystal. There seemed to be dense saintly way power in the coldness, which resembled Ning True Saint Dew.

Princess White Li said, “Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow.”

Zhang Ruochen hadn’t read relevant books yet, so he didn’t know much about Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow.

Princess White Li said, “Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow and Ning True Saint Dew have the same effect. The difference is, it’s easier for saints to absorb Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow, especially for saints with ice body constitution. Their cultivation can be improved five times more quickly when they refine Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow rather than Ning True Saint Dew.

“The amount of Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow inside the spine of the Bone Phoenix can rival ten thousand drops of Ning True Saint Dew. It’s definitely a treasure.”



Zhang Ruochen seized a large amount of Ning True Saint Dew from other saints, which was more than enough to help him become an absolute saint.

And besides, he didn't have ice body constitution, so Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow wouldn't help him much.

Eventually, Zhang Ruochen looked to Mu Lingxi.

Ten thousand drops of Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow should be enough for Mu Lingxi to become an absolute saint.

Zhang Ruochen cut all the bones of Bone Phoenix using the Abyss Ancient Sword, leaving only the spine.

And then, he mobilized Divine Fire Jingmie to refine the Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow inside, turning it into drops of liquids which contained tremendous saintly way power.

After Zhang Ruochen finished refining all the Phoenix Saint Marrow, Mu Lingxi had completely recovered from her injuries. However, she was still feeble because she had burnt too much saint blood.

Zhang Ruochen gave her the Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow and asked her to get back to the space crystal.

Mu Lingxi knew that she was too weak to be of any help, so she went in without questioning it.

Mu Lingxi gave Qiu Yu a look before walking back into the space crystal and said, "Spare his life if you can. I do owe him a favor."

Zhang Ruochen said, "He did help you once, yet he almost killed you. I'll give him a choice."

Mu Lingxi nodded and walked into the inner space of the space crystal.

"Where are Demonic Sound and Han Qiu? Did they run into some trouble?" Zhang Ruochen had a hunch that something bad might've happened.

And then, he heard the sounds of an argument coming from nearby.

Zhang Ruochen then looked to where the arguing sound came from. He saw Mad Man. He then walked toward him.

Mad Man was very upset and said, “Le, we’re brothers who’ve been through life and death together. Why are you pointing your sword at me?”

Le held his sword against Mad Man’s forehead in silence.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen walked behind Le, holding the body of Zhentian Tiger and throwing the corpse to Mad Man.

Bang!

Zhentian Tiger had turned back to its original form, which was a giant tiger that was more than seventy feet long. However, its head was crushed.

“Zhentian Tiger!”

Mad Man was astounded. He raised his head and asked, “What happened?”

“Shouldn’t you know what happened?” It was Princess Luosha instead of Zhang Ruochen who said that.

Princess Luosha walked out of the ancient sycamore woods. Her face was pale, with some blood on her lips.

Before she could reach Zhang Ruochen, she spit out blood and almost fell.

Zhang Ruochen helped her stand up and pressed his fingers against her wrist, trying to inspect her injuries, but he didn’t find anything.

However, Princess Luosha was indeed severely injured.

Mad Man was confused. He asked, “What happened? Who can tell me what happened exactly?”

Princess Luosha knew that Zhang Ruochen was trying to test her, yet she still managed to stay calm. She leaned on Zhang Ruochen with her entire body and said, “What happened? What happened was Yuan Hun ambushed me and wounded me seriously. You people from Eight Ministry Field aren’t sincere at all about cooperating and are just trying to take the Merits

Record Wall for yourself. What're you doing here? Trying to seize the Merits Record Wall? Zhang Ruochen, kill him.”

# Chapter 1490 - An Heir Died

Chapter 1490: An Heir Died

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't kill Mad Man, and he could tell that Mad Man didn't know anything.

And then, he told Mad Man what had happened just now.

Mad Man wasn't stupid. He immediately understood what happened. He clenched his teeth and said, "I'm sorry, brother Zhang. Don't be mad. I'll head back to Eight Ministry Field and I'll bring justice."

Before Mad Man left, he received a mind power message. "Yuan Hun and Golden Leopard are being encircled by many great beings of the Luosha race near Xifeng Saint Mountain. I'm supposed to go help them."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Nobody else knows where Yuan Hun and Golden Leopard are heading to, and they're both very cautious. How did the Luosha race know their traces and set up an ambush to kill them?"

Mad Man was also baffled.

Princess Luosha laughed inside, but she pretended to be thinking. "Perhaps this is another one of their schemes because they didn't see Zhentian Tiger come back. They probably aren't even being encircled by the Luosha race. Zhang Ruochen, we can't go there, otherwise, we might be plotted against again."

Zhang Ruochen felt that there was an invisible being pulling the strings. The power was very close to him, but he just couldn't figure out what it was.

Mad Man was very worried. "I have to go back. After all, many saints from Eight Ministry Field know that Yuan Hun came here to see you with me. If anything happens to Yuan Hun, they'll all think we're responsible. You have no idea what'll happen when those people go mad."

After Mad Man left, Zhang Ruochen said, "Follow him. Make sure Mad Man survives no matter what, otherwise we'll be attacked by Eight Ministry Field, and my plan will be in vain."

Le then vanished.

Seeing Le leave, Princess Luosha transmitted a trace of mind power out of Xifeng Saint Mountain and gave a new order.

To kill Le.

Le was a confidant in Zhang Ruochen, so it would be ideal to kill Le.

Mind power of the fifty-fifth level was the greatest advantage of Princess Luosha. Even if she was staying with Zhang Ruochen, she was in control of everything, unless Chu Siyuan, whose mind power had also reached level fifty-five, was also around.

Zhang Ruochen came up with some assumptions, but he suppressed them as he didn't have enough evidence.

"I need to heal first. I can't deal with the changes coming until I am strong enough."

Zhang Ruochen took a spring pill to heal himself.

He hadn't fully recovered from before. Instead, he'd just managed to stabilize himself.

After an hour, Le came back to Xifeng Saint Mountain with an iron sword in one hand and Mad Man in the other.

Mad Man was severely injured, and there was a blood-red hole in his chest. Almost all his organs were crushed, and he'd even lost a small part of his head.

He was a half-step saint king who could rival a first-step saint king, yet he was beaten half to death.

Zhang Ruochen had mostly recovered. He stood up and said, "What happened?"

"The Luosha race indeed. One of them is Lord Lingquan who escaped us last time," Le said.

Zhang Ruochen took out a spring pill and put it in Mad Man's mouth. He put his palm on Mad Man's chest, and saint Qi gushed out of his hands.

Mad Man's chest and head immediately recovered after refining and absorbing the pill Qi, and the wounds were gone very soon.

However, he had still suffered from great internal damages.

Mad Man needed to deal with it himself after he woke up.

Princess Luosha also opened her eyes when Zhang Ruochen was treating Mad Man, and she looked a bit upset when she saw Le come back alive.

There is the blood of twenty different Luosha Marquises on his clothes. What a great being that he managed to kill so many great beings in an hour, Princess Luosha thought.

Le stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "I want to talk to you privately."

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at Princess Luosha, and he suddenly realized something.

Obviously, Le didn't beware of Princess White Li. Instead, he was careful of the 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.'

"One of us has surrendered to the Luosha race," Le said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Where does that come from?"

Le said, "I was ambushed the second I left Xifeng Saint Mountain, and besides, all of them are prominent beings. I don't think it's a coincidence."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "Yuan Hun and Golden Leopard were encircled by the Luosha race, and I feel like it was planned."

Le said, “Mad Man, Princess White Li, and Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. All of them are suspects.”

“Even Princess White Li?” Zhang Ruochen smiled a bit.

Le said, “I don’t trust anyone but you.”

Zhang Ruochen realized how serious it was. He stopped smiling and said, “Princess White Li just met us. You can’t explain everything that happened if it was her. As for Mad Man and Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, both of them are seriously injured this time... They seem to be covering themselves up.

“But Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine is the heir of Great Devil Ten Square Field, so it’s almost impossible for her to surrender to the Luosha race, and besides, she had many chances to attack me before, but she never did it. There’re many things that we can’t explain if it’s her.

“Then Mad Man is the most suspicious one. He might have arranged for the great beings of the Luosha race to attack Yuan Hun because of some previous grudges, but if it really is him, wouldn’t that be too obvious?

“No matter which one it is, he or she’s extremely difficult to deal with. Their intelligence and scheming skills are better than ours.”

Zhang Ruochen had to admit that. After all, he or she had managed to hide beside him and hadn’t shown any weak points. Even Zhang Ruochen wasn’t able to do that.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Did Yuan Hun survive?”

Le shook his head. “I’d guess not. Three great beings who are just as powerful as Yuan Hun attacked him at the same time, so it would have been almost impossible for him to survive that.”

“We can’t let Yuan Hun die. Bring me there. Hope we can make it in time.”

Zhang Ruochen put back his space domain, and he looked around at Princess Luosha, Princess White Li, and Mad Man.

In the end, he looked at Princess Luosha and said, “Demonic Concubine, do you want to come with us?”

Princess Luosha was a very cautious person as she realized that Zhang Ruochen was starting to suspect her, so she agreed without any hesitation. “Sure thing!”

Zhang Ruochen, Le, and Princess Luosha left Xifeng Saint Mountain together while Princess White Li stayed and looked after Mad Man and guarded Qiu Yu.

There were chaotic saintly way powers in the sky and land, and the swamp was in ruins. The area of dozens of square miles was frozen, and some of it had turned into a lava lake.

They found Yuan Hun’s body beside a lava lake.

Yuan Hun had died in an extremely tragic way, as all his flesh was eaten by Luosha marquises, except his head.

His body was hung on a broken spear as his eyes popped. His face looked twisted, as he could have seen that he was eaten alive.

He used to be a great talent with a complete body constitution, but he died in such a tragic way. He must’ve endured great pain before he died.

Even Zhang Ruochen and Le couldn’t stay calm. Their hearts skipped a beat when they saw it.

Princess Luosha tried to look horrified and said, “Why didn’t Yuan Hun blow up his saint source?”

“Perhaps the Luosha great beings have some mind power weapons that suppressed the consciousness of Yuan Hun,” Zhang Ruochen speculated.

It was terrifying that an heir was eaten.

All the creatures from Eight Ministry Field and Heaven World could see it through the battle reflection, and one could only imagine how indignant and mad they were.

Golden Leopard was also completely devoured, and its body was in the lava lake.



There was nothing they could've done to change it. After all, even if Zhang Ruochen and Le were here, they were too injured to help them.

Now, Zhang Ruochen needed to think about what would happen after Yuan Hun's death.

“Any saints still alive?”

A deafening sound came from the swamp.

Some of the Luosha great beings noticed Zhang Ruochen.

Evil sha Qi gushed out everywhere, and it surged into the sky like dust, turning into crimson evil clouds, surrounding Zhang Ruochen, Princess Luosha, and Le.

# Chapter 1491 - Huang Python King Rune

Chapter 1491: Huang Python King Rune

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The swamp looked bizarre, and it could interfere with a monk's mind power, which was why neither Zhang Ruochen nor Le was able to notice the great beings from the Luosha race.

It wasn't easy for them to retreat now.

All those first marquises were able to fight first-step saint kings, while Lord Lingquan, Yang Qi and Qian Yu were stronger than those first marquises.

Lord Lingquan, Yang Qi and Qian Yu were both shocked to see Princess Luosha, who was standing beside Zhang Ruochen.

They thought it was the saints from Eight Ministry Field who were rushing here to save Yuan Hun, so they all came here, yet it was too late for them to leave after realizing it was Princess Luosha.

How were they supposed to fight without killing their princess?

However, if they didn't fight with their real power, Zhang Ruochen would definitely be able to see through them.

Lord Lingquan, Yang Qi, Qian Yu and the others felt conflicted and didn't even attack them in time.

Princess Luosha was so pissed by these useless subordinates that she wanted to roll her eyes.

Princess Luosha still needed Zhang Ruochen to help her break through the boundary in the Phoenix Nest, so it wasn't time to suppress Zhang Ruochen yet.

There might be a valuable in Phoenix Nest that she always craved, and she couldn't afford to lose it.

Princess Luosha tried to think of a way to get herself out of the awkward situation.

At the same moment, she saw Zhang Ruochen take out a saint sword, which was the godly spirits weapon.

Princess Luosha checked that saint sword before. Although she pretended to disdain it, she knew clearly how incredible the godly power in that saint sword was. At least Lord Lingquan and Yang Qi wouldn't be able to ward off the power.

If Zhang Ruochen used that power, the Luosha race would lose a large number of top-tier saints.

She immediately took out a purple rune that was made of jade where there were blood-red inscriptions.

"I have a Huang Python King Rune, which is enough to crush them."

She was the princess of Luosha race and the commander-in-chief of the Luosha armies on Zuling Field, so she certainly had lots of treasures, including more than one godly spirits weapon.

Huang Python King Rune wasn't even one of the top five weapons she had.

The most powerful rune a mind power saint was able to make was the Huang Python King Rune, and only mind power saint kings were able to make stronger runes, which were not allowed to be brought in by the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.

"I heard a Huang Python King Rune can kill a first-step saint king." Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised, but he still found it reasonable.

After all, as the heir of Great Devil Ten Square Field, it was natural that the 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine' had a

Huang Python King Rune to survive.

Yuan Hun must have a similar trump card, otherwise, the battlefield wouldn't have been so brutal.

Zhang Ruochen put away his godly spirits weapon since the 'Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine' was about to use a Huang Python King Rune.

Godly spirits weapons were more used to intimidate enemies, and they were of the best value before they were used.

Yang Qi figured out what Princess Luosha was about to do, so he yelled, "Retreat! She's going to use a Huang Python King Rune."

Yang Qi, Lord Lingquan, Qian Yu, and the first marquises all went behind the evil sha Qi, and then, the layers of evil sha Qi retreated like waves.

Meanwhile, seven ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons flew out, and their complete power was all triggered.

"Those Luosha marquises are really cautious, but it's not easy to ward off the power of a Huang Python King Rune."

Princess Luosha waved her arms, and the Huang Python King Rune flew high into the sky, giving out traces of purple light that contained unrivaled saint power.

Even Zhang Ruochen felt intimidated by that power.

Boom!

The rune exploded, turning into thousands of python phantoms, clashing with that crimson cloud.

Not even those ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons were able to ward off the Huang Python King Rune. They kept shaking until they fell from the sky.

Blood-curdling screams came out of the evil sha Qi. Some Luosha marquises died immediately as they couldn't withstand the power of the rune, and countless were injured.

Princess Luosha said, "All the Luosha first marquises have incredible survival skills. Huang Python King Rune won't be

able to kill them all. Let's get out of here when they're in chaos."

Whoosh!

Princess Luosha rushed in a direction without hesitation.

"I'll meet you in Xifeng Mountain."

Zhang Ruochen gave Le a look, and then, he grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword, reaching Human Sword immediately and rushing into the crimson cloud like a trace of black sword light.

He was immediately attacked by more than ten first marquises.

All of them were Xuanhuang saints, and they attacked Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword against them, leaving a long trace of sword light.

The attacks from all those Luosha marquises were neutralized, and meanwhile, the sword light tore their bodies apart.

Zhang Ruochen then walked through the blood mist and dashed forward.

No one from the Luosha race in Zuling Field could survive his one strike, unless it was a first marquis.

After killing six groups of Luosha marquises, Zhang Ruochen finally sensed some real danger drawing near. He could feel his goosebumps through his armor.

Boom!

A giant force hit the chest of Zhang Ruochen.

Even wearing Hundred Saints Blood Armor, Zhang Ruochen's blood Qi still tumbled after being hit by the force, exacerbating his injury.

Zhang Ruochen stepped back. He trampled the ground to balance himself.

Zhang Ruochen then saw it was a golden arrow that was trying to attack him.

"Marquis Saint Arrow."

Zhang Ruochen took out the Monument Shield, performed spatial move, and vanished, teleporting himself toward where the arrow came from.

Marquis Saint Arrow was wearing golden armor, and he was around nine feet tall. He stood a hundred miles away, seeing Zhang Ruochen's body continuing to emerge and disappear, rushing toward him.

“No wonder he's the Time and Space Descendant. He's still able to perform spatial move in somewhere horrible like the Bipolar Swamp.”

Marquis Saint Arrow drew his Golden Back Dragon Bone Bow that was seven feet long, and golden wind started to flow around his body.

Bang!

Another arrow flew out, a trace of light trailing behind, more than two hundred feet long.

Zhang Ruochen either used spatial twist to change the direction of the arrows or warded the arrows off using Monument Shield.

Even though Marquis Saint Arrow kept shooting the arrows, he couldn't manage to stop Zhang Ruochen at all.

Marquis Saint Arrow was dazed when Zhang Ruochen was only three hundred feet away from him. He flapped his wings while drawing the bow.

“Don't you run.”

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and arrived right above Marquis Saint Arrow. He threw his Monument Shield toward Marquis Saint Arrow, knocking him down.

Zhang Ruochen then wielded his sword against Marquis Saint Arrow.

Boom!

He broke all the protection runes on Marquis Saint Arrow, who fell on the ground, making a huge pit in the swamp.

Before Marquis Saint Arrow climbed out of the pit, Zhang Ruochen had pierced through his chest, nailing him to the ground.

“Tell me! Who’s the person that’s been sneaking around me?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Marquis Saint Arrow chuckled, looking sketchy.

Zhang Ruochen immediately realized that Marquis Saint Arrow was going to blow up his saint source and drag him down, so he cut his body in half before he managed to do so.

“It’s almost impossible to get something out of a first marquis. Those who became first marquises are all top-tier talents with great willpower. I might suffer a lot if I’m not careful enough.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, then he mumbled, “If I can’t force them to tell me the truth, then I’ll lure them to tell me.”

Zhang Ruochen then performed Traceless 36 Changes, and his body started to make cracking sounds. His human body kept bulging until he became a giant man with a horse face, and even his temperament changed completely.

Zhang Ruochen looked exactly like Marquis Saint Arrow now.

Zhang Ruochen checked to see whether there were any flaws in his disguise, and after making sure there weren’t any, he picked up Golden Back Dragon Bone Arrow and the five arrows that belonged to Marquis Saint Arrow.

He then flicked his fingers, and two balls of Divine Fire Jingmie burned the body of Marquis Saint Arrow to ashes.

He was now Marquis Saint Arrow.

# Chapter 1492 - Luosha Race Military Camp

Chapter 1492: Luosha Race Military Camp

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Lord Lingquan immediately came after hearing the fighting sound. Seeing Saint Arrow Marquis who was turned from Zhang Ruochen, he yelled, “Saint Arrow Marquis, where’s Zhang Ruochen?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately gave a bow and said, “Zhang Ruochen’s way too powerful, my lord. I failed to stop him.”

Lord Lingquan put his hands behind his back, and his eyes glinted belligerently. “You’re not Zhang Ruochen’s match anyway. Seems like I have to kill Zhang Ruochen myself.”

“Certainly. Zhang Ruochen is nothing to you, my lord.” Zhang Ruochen buttered him up.

Lord Lingquan nodded and said, “Zhang Ruochen escaped by performing spatial move, so it seems we can’t catch him anymore. Let’s go see her highness first, and she’ll give us some further instructions.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t react at all from the appearance, but he was greatly shocked deep down. He looked forward to what was coming next with caution.

He followed Lord Lingquan out of the Bipolar Swamp and entered the forest where the space was chaotic.

“Are we going to the camp of the Luosha race?”

Zhang Ruochen released mind power to inspect the area, and he found a large number of inscriptions underground and in



the air. Some of them had existed before, and some were just carved.

Saints would be killed with no doubt if they didn't know the safe route.

And then, he saw an ancient castle.

The ancient castle seemed to date back to a long time ago, and many places had already collapsed and were remade by stones randomly. When he was only a thousand feet away from the ancient castle, Zhang Ruochen saw a large group of Luosha marquises. Some of them were eating the flesh of saints, some were refining, and some were patrolling.

To the Luosha race, the best way to refine was to eat the flesh of other creatures. They were able to turn the blood Qi and saint Qi of other creatures into their own.

The better the quality of the flesh was, the more they could improve.

Which was why Yuan Hun was eaten.

The Luosha monks who are gathered around the ancient castle are all at least fourth marquises, and there're a great many of them. If they all rush out, can the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields defend themselves against them? Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

Fourth marquises were true saints.

Two second marquises were guarding the door, and they were both martial way saints who were pinnacle absolute saints with level-forty-four mind power.

“Lord Lingquan.”

“Saint Arrow Marquis.”

They immediately let them in, as they were prominent beings.

At the center of the ancient castle was a fragmented palace, and the stone pillars were thicker than buckets. The statues gave out divine forces, making Zhang Ruochen and Lord Lingquan look small.

At this moment, a large group of first marquises were gathering in the palace, and each of them was releasing evil sha Qi. Their blood Qi was strong, like divine dragons, giant elephants, and Qilin.

First marquises like Yang Qi, Qian Yu, and Lord Xianling were standing at the front, followed by the weaker ones.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked to see so many first marquises, as there were almost one hundred of them.

These first marquises were enough to defeat all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.

And besides, these were just the first marquises who were in the palace, and there were many more of them in the ninety-nine saint mountains and the other four Zuling fragments.

“How... How did the Luosha race get so powerful?”

Zhang Ruochen tried to remain calm.

There were probably less than five saints from Guanghan Field who could rival first marquises, and even besides Great Devil Ten Square Field, there were probably less than thirty of them.

To the Luosha race, the number of most talented people from a large field was nothing.

Little did Zhang Ruochen know was that Princess Luosha had deployed three million marquises to Zuling Field to kill the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields.

First marquises were one in ten thousand, so there were still some among those three million marquises.

Zhang Ruochen had now confirmed his assumption seeing the sheer number of first marquises.

The Luosha race had spread a dragnet, yet the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields were still fighting each other for merits. Zhang Ruochen suddenly found it ironic.

Saints were the pillar of any world, and it showed whether a field was prosperous or not.

If all the saints in a large field were annihilated, it might take the field more than a millennium to recover from that.

And now, all the one million saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields' lives were in danger.

And Zhang Ruochen was the only one who realized that.

Some of the monks were relieved when they saw Zhang Ruochen walk into the palace, but some were still worried, as they reckoned Zhang Ruochen might be seen through.

“Zhang Ruochen should've figured out Princess Luosha's plan. Let's see what he's going to do about it.”

“Zhang Ruochen's Tracelsss Thirty-six Changes is incredible. If he can deceive Lord Lingquan, he should be able to do the same to Princess Luosha.”

“Perhaps Zhang Ruochen's the only one who can rival Princess Luosha out of everyone from the Shatuo Seven Fields. He's the only hope we've got.”

“If Zhang Ruochen can help half the saints survive, he'll be famous in Heaven World.”

“Half? Impossible? They'll be lucky if they're totally annihilated.”

...

When Zhang Ruochen stepped into the palace, many prominent beings from Heaven World deemed that he was the rival of Princess Luosha.

It was itself incredible for someone to be the rival of Princess Luosha.

Princess Luosha was standing at the top of the palace, and she was covered by thick evil sha Qi which was tumbling like blood mist.

Although Zhang Ruochen couldn't see her real face, her shape looked very familiar.

Princess Luosha was very angry. She yelled, “Didn't you hear what I told you? Before we conquer the deepest boundary of the Phoenix Nest, don't go after Zhang Ruochen, and don't show up in front of him.”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised to hear his name.

It was the first time that he heard the voice of Princess Luosha, but Zhang Ruochen found it kind of familiar.

It was contradictory, yet the feelings coexisted.

There must be something wrong with this Princess Luosha. Zhang Ruochen looked at Princess Luosha standing at the top.

Lord Lingquan stood at the very front and said, “We in the Luosha race are more than strong enough to break the boundary deep in the Phoenix Nest. Why do we need the help of Zhang Ruochen?”

Marquis Xianling said, “That’s right. Even if we can’t, you can deploy saint kings here. Why should we be checked by a human man...”

Princess Luosha glared at Marquis Xianling, which frightened her and shut her up.

Yang Qi smiled and said, “Her highness is brilliant. Everything you guys have in mind, she has it too. The three million marquises dispatched by her highness are already the bottom line of Heaven World. If she really brings up saint kings to Zuling Field, there’s no way that Heaven World won’t interfere, and they’ll also send saint kings here, which will only make things out of control. If that happens, Zuling Field will be destroyed before we crack the boundary of the Phoenix Nest open.”

“You should know that her highness wants to destroy all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields and to get the valuable in Phoenix Nest.”

“The more it gets out of control, the less beneficial it’s going to be for us.”

Every word Zhang Ruochen heard made him scared.

Three million marquises?

Zhang Ruochen was shocked and baffled at the same time.

How could Heaven World let so many Luosha marquises into Zuling Field? Why didn’t they stop the Saints Merits Battle beforehand or notify the saints who were still on the battlefield?

Did those prominent beings from Heaven World believe that the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields were able to fight three million Luosha marquises?

No wonder Moon Goddess said that a large field was on its own if it wanted to survive. Only those with great value could get help from Heaven World.

Lord Lingquan hated Zhang Ruochen's guts, so he asked, "What kind of valuables are there in the Phoenix Nest, your highness? I don't think the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix is that important to you, your highness. Or perhaps... You don't want to kill that human man?"

Another first marquis said, "I also want to know, your highness. More than half the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields have gathered in the ninety-nine saint mountains. It's the best time to hunt them all down. If we keep waiting, there might be changes."

Princess Luosha said, "Then I'll tell you why."

# Chapter 1493 - Orion Eight Stars

Chapter 1493: Orion Eight Stars

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Have you heard of Orion Eight Stars?”

Princess Luosha’s voice echoed in the palace.

All the first marquises at the present had heard of ‘Orion Eight Stars,’ but it had a completely different meaning when it came out of Princess Luosha’s mouth.

Was the secret in the Phoenix Nest related to Orion Eight Stars?

Yang Qi was the most knowledgeable and intelligent among them, so he immediately understood what Princess Luosha meant. He said, “Zuling Field has been through one thousand yuanhui years, totaling one hundred and twenty-nine million, six hundred thousand years. Only three Gods were born in Zuling Field during that time.

“Two of the Gods were creatures that were born when Zuling Field just came into being, and it took them a long time to become Gods. However, they were both killed by Yuanhui Calamities, so we can only read about them from some ancient records in Zuling Field.

“In the most current Yuanhui, another creature became a God in Zuling Field. He used to be a human hunter, but he gained the refining records of an ancient God from Zuling Field by chance. After three thousand years of refining, he became a God.

“He was the only God of Zuling Field, Orion God.

“Not long ago, Orion God was killed when he was trying to protect Zuling Field. Orion Eight Stars that her highness mentioned was the Star Soul Godly Constellation of Orion God. You can see the eight shining stars in the sky, and three stars at the waist of the Constellation are in a straight line.

One Yuanhui was one hundred and twenty-nine thousand six hundred years.

Any creature who lived for a Yuanhui would go through a calamity.

The more powerful someone was, the more challenging the calamity would be.

Theoretically, the life expectancy of a God was one Yuanhui.

However, some powerful Gods were able to pass the Yuanhui Calamities and live longer.

Any creature who became a God was able to form a Star Soul Godly Constellation, and the light from the stars could be seen from far away, which was a thrilling scene.

Meanwhile, Star Soul Godly Constellation was also able to absorb the power in the universe and turn it into godly power, which would made Gods stronger.

Princess Luosha said, “After Orion God was killed, the Gods from the Luosha race couldn’t find his Godly Star Soul, so they reckoned his Godly Star Soul was still somewhere in Zuling Field. The only place Orion God went before leaving Zuling Field was the Phoenix Nest.

“Perhaps Orion God knew he was going to get killed and didn’t want the Luosha race to find his Godly Star Soul, so he put his Godly Star Soul in the Phoenix Nest. As long as Zuling Field is destroyed, Godly Star Soul and the Phoenix Nest will also be destroyed.

“I believe that his Godly Star Soul is still in the Phoenix Nest.”

A Godly Star Soul was way more precious than the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix. No matter how powerful the Ice

and Fire Phoenix was, it still didn't manage to become a God, so there was no comparison between the two.

After Chi Yao became a God, Zhang Ruo Chen read some relevant books, and he was informed of 'Godly Star Soul' and 'Star Soul Godly Constellation'...

A God's Star Soul Godly Constellation would stay in the universe even long after the God was dead.

If a monk managed to get the Star Soul of a God, he would be able to absorb the godly power coming out of the Godly Constellation, which would boost his refining efficiency.

If a monk managed to obtain a Godly Star Soul, his chance of becoming a God would surge.

Even if Princess Luosha was incredibly gifted, it was still almost impossible for her to become a God. Emperor Wen, Granny Begonia, the Ice and Fire Phoenix, Emperor Jimie, and Wu Zu...they were all top-tier supreme saints with extraordinary talents, yet they were still struggling to become Gods.

However, if Princess Luosha could get the Star Soul of Orion God, she would have a much higher chance of becoming a God.

And besides, monks who obtained Godly Star Soul could even utilize the power in the Star Soul Godly Constellation and exert power far stronger than his own.

Supreme saints who had Godly Star Soul were also called Pseudo-Gods in Heaven World.

When they mobilized the power in Star Soul Godly Constellation, they would be much stronger than other supreme saints, and some of the Pseudo-Gods might be able to rival the weaker Gods if they had strong Star Soul Godly Constellation.

All the prominent beings from Heaven World thought the Star Soul of Orion God had been seized by the Luosha race, so they didn't care much about the Saints Merits Battle in Zuling Field.



If they knew that there was a chance Orion God's Star Soul was still in the Phoenix Nest, lots of great beings would've been in Zuling Field already.

The heir from Hell Blade Field, Fang Yi, refined a Godly Constellation Planet in his body, and a trace of power from that Godly Constellation Planet could boost his power, and as he grew stronger, he would be able to mobilize more of the power from his Godly Constellation Planet.

However, the Star Soul power in Fang Yi's Godly Constellation Planet was all gone, and there was only one ten-thousandth of the original godly power left, making it obsolete.

As for Orion Eight Stars, it was completely different. First of all, it was a complete constellation, which trumped a single Godly Constellation Planet. Also, both the Star Soul and the godly power of Orion Eight Stars were at their prime, so an obsolete planet couldn't rival it at all.

"Orion God's Star Soul is too important. If it's indeed in the Phoenix Nest, I've got to snatch it."

Zhang Ruochen's heart pounded fast as he realized it was an opportunity of a lifetime. If he could seize that opportunity, he would have much more leverage to rival Chi Yao and to negotiate with the Moon Goddess.

Also, he would have a much more powerful trump card to protect his friends and family if they were attacked by Hell World in the future.

All the first marquises were just as excited as, if not more excited than, Zhang Ruochen. If it weren't for Princess Luosha, they would've rushed to the Phoenix Nest already.

Princess Luosha said, "Only space monks are able to break the boundary in the deepest area of the ninety-nine saint mountains. You guys will get killed if you just trespass recklessly. I'm not able to break the boundary yet, so I need Zhang Ruochen's help. Don't mess with him before I break the boundary."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes glinted as he heard that. He thought, Princess Luosha is also a space monk... Could it be...

There weren't many space monks in the world.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly had a theory to explain everything, and the more he thought about it, the more probable he thought it was.

Princess Luosha is the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, or Princess Luosha uses some secret techniques to inhabit the body of the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. That's the only explanation.

But how come the saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field didn't suspect the identity of the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine at all? There must be some intelligent people from Great Devil Ten Square Field. How come none of them see through it?

Zhang Ruochen frowned.

This was only an assumption, and he had no evidence to prove that there was any connection between Princess Luosha and the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

Princess Luosha didn't ask the first marquises to leave until making some important arrangements.

Zhang Ruochen felt a wind coming at him the second he walked out of the palace. He immediately mobilized the saint Qi in his body.

However, he immediately dispersed it when he realized his current new identity.

A Luosha female with a slender body flew toward him as she moved her waist. She sat on Zhang Ruochen's left shoulder and wrapped her arm around Zhang Ruochen's head, stroking his right ear.

Zhang Ruochen smelled a mesmerizing fragrance, and then, he took a look at the beautiful girl sitting on his shoulder.

She was a first marquis from the Luosha race, Marquis Yanlin.

He had seen her when he was trying to seize the Merits Record Wall, and she was very close to Marquis Saint Arrow.

Zhang Ruochen was now more than nine feet tall. Even if Marquis Yanlin was close to seven feet tall, she still looked small compared to Zhang Ruochen.

Marquis Yanlin's voice sounded seductive. She said, "Be careful when you're executing your task. I heard another first marquis was killed lately."

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes and stroked Marquis Yanlin's legs with his large hand. "Do you really need to worry about me?"

Marquis Yanlin enjoyed it. She said, "Did you bring some food for me this time?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that the so-called food was the flesh and blood of saints.

Also, saints' flesh and blood were the nutrition for Luosha monks.

Zhang Ruochen didn't find a storage bag from Marquis Saint Arrow, so he didn't bring back any saints' flesh and blood. He said, "Do you really need me to help you hunt?"

Marquis Yanlin frowned and looked upset. She said, "I need to guard the prisoner from Great Devil Ten Square Field in the ancient castle. I don't have time to look for food outside. You must've eaten all the food. You never think of me."

A first marquis was in charge of guarding a prisoner herself? How important could that prisoner be?

"Great Devil Ten Square Field..."

Zhang Ruochen recalled his previous assumption, and his heart skipped a beat. He'd kind of figured out who that prisoner was.

# Chapter 1494 - Beautiful Prisoner

Chapter 1494: Beautiful Prisoner

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After Marquis Yanling left, Zhang Ruochen triggered the power in the twelve Buddhist beads, suppressed his forces and followed her.

There was a tunnel to the underground.

There were complicated formation inscriptions at the entry, and there were sixteen third marquises guarding the entrance, which showed how important the prisoner was.

“Marquis Yanling.”

The two third marquises who were originally sitting stood up and saluted Marquis Yanling.

“Nothing abnormal happened?” Marquis Yanling asked.

“Nothing.”

Marquis Yanling nodded and pressed forward. Suddenly, inscriptions showed up in the air.

Her fingers turned into phantoms and pointed at nine knots on the formation.

Whoosh!

The inscriptions on the formation went black, and Marquis Yanlin disappeared in the dark.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the dark. After thinking for a while, he performed spatial twist and got in.

There was a dark space under the ancient castle.

There was a stone pillar that was around seventy feet tall at the center of the dark space, and there was a beautiful woman wearing purple armor bound by five Saint-binding Chains.

That woman was curvy with huge breasts, and her waist was thin. Her skin was smooth and pale. Even though she was a prisoner, she still had an unrivaled temperament.

Marquis Yanlin walked into the underground space and formed a flame on her left palm, lighting up the dark.

The woman chained on the stone pillar opened her eyes, stared at Marquis Yanlin and said, "Why didn't you kill me?"

"Because you're more valuable alive," Marquis Yanlin said.

That woman said, "Really? Hasn't your princess turned into me perfectly?"

Marquis Yanlin smiled and said, "It's rare to find someone as gifted as you, and with your appearance, you can be sold at a great price if we bring you back to Hell World, possibly a greater price than many saint kings."

That woman smiled. "I heard that the Luosha race is rearing lots of human beings as food, and you guys even turned large fields into ranches after conquering some large field. That sounds true now."

Marquis Yanlin said, "You only know the half of it. Many powerful members of the Luosha race love to collect human elites and train them into pets or battle slaves. Many powerful members will be happy to pay a high price for you."

"I see."

That woman suddenly looked behind Marquis Yanlin and looked confused.

Marquis Yanlin also noticed something and immediately looked behind her.

Marquis Yanlin mobilized all her saint Qi, and the flames in her hand were blazing, turning into a strange bird.

"Saint Arrow Marquis."

Marquis Yanlin looked shocked, but she didn't let her guard down just because it was Saint Arrow Marquis.

After all, not everyone could enter the prison of Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

"How did you get in?" Marquis Yanlin asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I followed you."

Marquis Yanlin didn't believe him because she knew Saint Arrow Marquis better than everyone else, so she knew that Saint Arrow Marquis didn't have the power to follow her without her noticing it.

"You're not Saint Arrow Marquis."

Marquis Yanlin noticed some weak points, which were shown by Zhang Ruochen on purpose. There was no point for Zhang Ruochen to camouflage anymore, so his forces changed sharply.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward Marquis Yanlin, and his body shape changed with every step he took. Meanwhile, he released space domain and covered Marquis Yanlin.

After ten steps, Zhang Ruochen turned back to how he was.

"Zhang Ruochen."

Marquis Yanlin recognized him.

Whoosh!

Marquis Yanlin waved her warms, and two fiery birds that were more than a hundred feet long dashed toward Zhang Ruochen, carrying two blazing fires.

Marquis Yanlin knew that she was not Zhang Ruochen's match, so she immediately performed her quickest body technique and flew toward the exit.

As long as I can get to the ground and spread the news, Zhang Ruochen won't be able to get out.

It was impossible for her to defeat Zhang Ruochen, but Marquis Yanlin was confident that she could escape from Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the saint flames, and suddenly, he was right behind Marquis Yanlin already.

“How is that possible?”

Marquis Yanlin noticed that she was still two hundred feet away from the exit, but Zhang Ruochen was only thirty feet away from her.

He was too fast!

Marquis Yanlin had to stop, turn around, and try to fight Zhang Ruochen directly.

“Xuan Dagger!”

Marquis Yanlin breathed out a dagger that was one foot long, and it flew out.

The dagger didn't target Zhang Ruochen. Instead, it was flying toward Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

She believed that Zhang Ruochen came here because of Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, so he would definitely try to save her.

“This is not enough to save your life.” Zhang Ruochen grabbed forward, performed spatial twist and changed its direction.

And then, Marquis Yanlin wielded twelve runes which lined up in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Marquis Yanlin smiled and said, “Break.”

Boom!

All the runes exploded at the same time, which released the power of twelve balls of flames which spread everywhere. Suddenly, all the inscriptions underground showed up, giving off shining white light.

Marquis Yanlin turned around and tried to fly away again.

However, Zhang Ruochen suddenly showed up at the exit and stared at her apathetically.

“I've told you that this is not enough to save your life.”

Zhang Ruochen then vanished.

“No...”

Marquis Yanlin was just about to dodge it, but then, she could see nothing but Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Howl!

A dragon sound came from underground.

Zhang Ruochen then performed Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and hit Marquis Yanlin, knocking her on the ground and crushing almost all her bones.

Zhang Ruochen took out a storage bag from Marquis Yanli and got a drop of her blood before he stood up again. He then flicked Divine Fire Jingmie.

Sizzle!

The flames fell on Marquis Yanlin, and her body started to burn. Only a saint source remained after a short while.

Zhang Ruochen put the saint source in his space ring, and walked to Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, who was tied on the stone pillar. He looked at her face and body and said, “Same... Exactly the same.”

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine said, “Sounds like you met the fake me.”

“That’s right,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine smiled seductively and said, “It’s a miracle that you survived her.”

“It is, indeed.”

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and cut all five Saint-binding Chains on Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

And then, Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine fell on the ground.

After a second, Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine opened all one hundred and forty-four of her apertures, which released



blue Nanling Dragon Fire, and her demonic Qi was tumbling. Her eyes turned into the shape of flames.

She looked completely different from the girl who was chained to the stone pillar.

The one before was a helpless girl, the one now was a ferocious she-devil.

Zhang Ruochen could feel that she was furious, and he said, "If you want your revenge right now, you might end up being imprisoned again."

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine said, "Really? You have impressive power, and we can team up to fight our way out."

"There're almost a hundred first marquises. How are we going to fight them?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine frowned and said, "Where do all those first marquises come from?"

"Long story, and I'll tell you after we get out. Follow my lead if you trust me, then I guarantee that we can both get out of here alive," Zhang Ruochen said.

This was the first time Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine had met Zhang Ruochen, so they were nothing but strangers.

It wasn't a wise thing to trust a stranger on the battlefield.

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine smiled and said, "I've heard your name before, Zhang Ruochen. You're the priest of Guanghan Field, and you practice time way and space way. I saw you use the power of space, you weren't lying."

"Of course not."

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine walked to Zhang Ruochen, shaking her breasts, and kissed Zhang Ruochen's face. "I never want to owe anyone anything, so this is my way of paying you back. If you can get me out of here, I'll pay you back with something better. Are you looking forward to it?"

Zhang Ruochen risked his life coming to save Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine because he had his own plan, but he

didn't expect the real Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine to be more cordial than the fake one.

"I'd better not."

And then, Zhang Ruochen changed his body and face back to what Marquis Yanlin looked like.

# Chapter 1495 - Phoenix Nest

Chapter 1495: Phoenix Nest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen managed to get himself and the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine out of the Luosha camp with his incredible transformation techniques.

Zhang Ruochen didn't let the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine out of the Time and Space Crystal until they arrived in a safe zone.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine made sure they were both safe before she smiled at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Your transformation skills are extraordinary. Can you teach me that?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Of course not."

"Name your price, as long as it's not too excessive." The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was very interested in Traceless 36 Changes.

There were also some techniques in Great Devil Ten Square Field that could change the faces and the bodies of monks, but they were all flawed to some extent. They could be used to trick ordinary monks, but they were useless in front of a saint.

Traceless 36 Changes was obviously much more advanced than those techniques from Great Devil Ten Square Field.

As long as she mastered a technique like that, it would be much easier for her to do everything in the future.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to waste time on this anymore, so he said, "Let's talk about the real issue here if you want to survive Zuling Field."

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine leaned against the trunk of an ancient tree, gazing at Zhang Ruochen. She found the guy in front of her to be a total prude that didn't show any interests in an exquisite woman like her.

Was he pretending to be so, or was he really immune to the temptation of beauty?

"I've told you. As long as your conditions aren't way too unreasonable, I'll be willing to accept them. Why can't you understand?" the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Princess Luosha deployed three million marquises to Zuling Field, trying to kill all the saints from the seven large fields. It's only twenty days before the merit battle is over. We don't have much time left anymore."

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine finally became serious. She said, "Are you sure about the three million marquises?"

"Of course."

Zhang Ruochen told her everything he knew, except the part about 'Orion Eight Stars.' After all, she might also try to seize it if she knew, which would make things complicated for Zhang Ruochen.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine stopped being enchanting. After a while, she asked, "How many people know about it?"

"Only you and me," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine asked, "Do you have any plan to counteract it?"

Zhang Ruochen stayed silent for a while and said, "Princess Luosha hasn't executed her plan because she needs my power to get the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix. I can use that against her."

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine said, "As long as you can check Princess Luosha, the Luosha race will lose their leader, and I can get in contact with the heirs from all the seven large fields in secret to plot a plan against her."

“That’s what I was talking about,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine looked seductive again. She said, “I told you I’ll bestow you with much better gifts if you can get me out safe.”

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine then got close to Zhang Ruochen again.

Zhang Ruochen could feel the tenderness and warmth coming from the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine. He said, “This is the first time I’ve met a concubine who’s reckless like you. Aren’t you afraid that the demonic emperor could see how close we are through the Reflection of the Battlefield?”

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine looked very chill. She pressed her hand against Zhang Ruochen’s waist and smiled. “I was forced to marry him, so I don’t mind doing things he doesn’t want to see. Why? Are you scared?”

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and vanished.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine bit her lips and mumbled to herself, “Someone incredible from Guanghai Field. His willpower is so strong that it’s almost impossible to manipulate him.”

...

Le and Princess Luosha had gone back to Xifeng Saint Mountain before Zhang Ruochen arrived back, and both of them were injured.

Princess Luosha stood up and said, “Finally, you’re back. You had me so worried.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly hugged Princess Luosha at her waist and dragged her to himself, which was something Princess Luosha had never experienced with a man before.

Princess Luosha was slightly surprised and said, “What’re you doing?”

Zhang Ruochen whispered, “You’re so attractive, demonic concubine, your highness. I’m only human. How can I resist such temptation?”

Both Le and Princess White Li looked to Zhang Ruochen as they wondered whether he was seduced or not.

Princess Luosha relaxed and smiled. “Aren’t you afraid that Cangmo Demonic Emperor is going to see this through the Reflection of the Battlefield? How are you going to survive in Shatuo Heavenly Domain after offending a demonic emperor?”

“For you, it’s totally worth it, and besides, I have the Moon Goddess to protect me, so I don’t need to be afraid of him.” Zhang Ruochen grabbed Princess Luosha’s waist tighter.

Zhang Ruochen had been tricked for too long a time, so he wanted to play her back and see whether this was Princess Luosha’s limit.

“Well, you’re the man of my destiny, so you can do anything to me.”

Princess Luosha looked down shyly, and her body only became softer.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help frowning. Was this Princess Luosha really that chill?

“Cough cough.”

Mad Man dry coughed and walked toward him. “Zhang Ruochen, your highness, I think I need to get back to Eight Ministry Field, otherwise things will be in chaos.”

Mad Man had recovered, and his power was back to his prime again.

Zhang Ruochen stopped flirting with Princess Luosha. He let her go, took a deep look at Mad Man and said, “I need to tell you something.” And then, he dragged Mad Man aside and covered them with a space domain.

“If you can’t control the saints from Eight Ministry Field by yourself, go contact the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Mad Man was dazed and couldn’t help looking at Princess Luosha. He asked, “What do you mean?”

Zhang Ruochen then told him everything.

Mad Man was on the brink of losing his mind after hearing what had happened. However, he was an experienced saint, so he was able to control his emotions. He calmed himself down quickly and nodded.

Princess Luosha was perceptive enough to notice it. Zhang Ruochen performs space domain every time he talks to someone else. It seems that he's been suspecting me after what happened.

After Mad Man left, Zhang Ruochen grabbed Princess Luosha again and headed toward the peak of Xifeng Saint Mountain. He said, "Let's go to the Phoenix Nest now."

Princess Luosha didn't fight back. She immersed herself into Zhang Ruochen's arms like a fragile girl.

There were many formation inscriptions in Xifeng Saint Mountain, and the closer they got to the top, the more dangerous it got.

Princess White Li drove Qiu Yu in front of her, so the formation would hit Qiu Yu first, and then, Zhang Ruochen used his space power to dissolve the formation.

Qiu Yu kept yelling in agony.

"Zhang Ruochen, you're going to die... Ah..."

Qiu Yu was struck by a trace of lightning that was as thick as a bucket, and he was turned dark.

However, he managed to survive it with his sturdy godly wood body.

Princess White Li said, "What are you whining about? Our hierarch has promised you that he'll set you free once you help us get to the Phoenix Nest. It's better for you to seize this opportunity."

"I have to stay alive if I want revenge."

Qiu Yu clenched his teeth thinking about it. He became stern and rushed forward.

After being struck countless times, Qiu Yu finally led Zhang Ruo Chen and the others to make it to the peak of Xifeng Saint Mountain. Qiu Yu fell onto the ground, as he was too injured.

On the other side of Xifeng Saint Mountain was the Phoenix Nest.

The Phoenix Nest looked no different from an ordinary bird nest, however, it was enormous as it was more than twenty-five thousand feet long. It was made of seven-colored vines, and there were palaces built among the vines.

Around the nest was saint Qi.

The saint Qi spun quickly and formed a giant whirlpool, and one could sense the destructive power on Xifeng Saint Mountain.

Outside the Phoenix Nest were two vast oceans. One of them was crimson while the other was blue.

The crimson ocean was made of blazing fire while the blue ocean was filled with Thousand-Year Pluto Winter Water.

One part was extreme heat while the other was extreme coldness. It wasn't easy to get through either of them.

Le took out a saint sword that was a hundred-patterns saint sword. He released his sword intent and wielded the saint sword.

Whoosh!

The saint sword flew to the sky like a trace of blue light, rushing to the Phoenix Nest, which was at the center of the ocean.

However, a space crack showed up after the saint sword flew more than ten miles, and it tore that saint sword apart.

Le shook his head and said, "The space structure is very fragile in the sky. We can either cross the Fire Ocean or Cold Ocean, and both paths will be very dangerous."



# Chapter 1496 - Fire Ocean and Cold Ocean

Led by Qiu Yu, Zhang Ruochen's group went through slaying formation inscriptions safely and came back to Xifeng Saint Mountain beside Fire Ocean.

Fire Ocean was extremely heated, and the heat waves coming out of the ocean could actually hurt people.

They weren't afraid of ordinary flames, but there were blue and white flames in the ocean which could completely melt a thousand patterns saint weapon of Zhang Ruochen's.

"What kind of flame is that?" Princess White Li asked.

Qiu Yu, who was almost killed by a slaying formation, also looked scared. He said, "The fire can melt even ten thousand patterns saint weapons. There's no way a saint can fight it.

Zhang Ruochen was very calm. "Divine Fire Jingmie."

Princess White Li was confused. "You also tamed Divine Fire Jingmie, but it's significantly weaker than the flames in the ocean."

Zhang Ruochen said, "A monk can only tame the most primitive tinder. We need to keep nurturing it for it to become stronger.

"Normally, there're three levels of Divine Fire Jinemie: Low-Mie, Middle-Mie, and Upper-Mie."

"Low-Mie flames are blue, and they're called ordinary flames.

"Middle-Mie flames are blue and white, and they're called official flames.

"Upper-Mie flames are purely white, and they're called emperor flames.

"The Divine Fire Jingmie in my body is Low-Mie flames, but those in the Fire Ocean are Middle-Mie. The gap between

these two is the gap between saints and supreme saints.”

Zhang Ruochen opened a space domain, and saint Qi gushed out of his body. He stepped into Fire Ocean with a Luan and a Phoenix under his feet.

“Master...”

Princess White Li was very worried about Zhang Ruochen’s safety, so she wanted to stop him.

“All good. I’ll go have a try.” It wasn’t usual for Zhang Ruochen to run into Middle-Mie Divine Fire Jingmie, so he wanted to get a trace.

If he could do that, he could convert the Low-Mie Divine Fire in his body into Middle-Mie level, then nobody under supreme saints would be able to ward it off if he wielded it as an attack skill.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen had underestimated the power of Middle-Mie Divine Fire. After staying inside for less than fifteen minutes, he ran back.

The Hundred Saints Blood Armor he was wearing was burnt red as if it were going to melt.

After putting back the Hundred Saints Blood Armor, everyone saw that Zhang Ruochen was burnt everywhere; some places were black while some were mangled.

Qiu Yu sneered seeing that.

Zhang Ruochen then grabbed Qiu Yu and threw him into Fire Ocean, and this was followed by blood-curdling screams from the flames.

Zhang Ruochen took a healing pill, and after a short while, he fully recovered.

“Middle-Mie Divine Fire is extremely powerful. We don’t stand any chance of passing Fire Ocean unless some unbelievable luck happens to us.”

Princess Luosha said, “Then we have to try Pluto Winter Cold Ocean at the other side”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly raised his head and looked to Xifeng Saint Mountain.

He saw two people descending from the top of the saint mountain and arrived in front of Zhang Ruochen.

It was Han Qiu and Demonic Sound.

Both of them were seriously injured, and they couldn't even fully recover after taking the healing pills.

Demonic Sound said, "We were encircled by a large group of Luosha great beings, so we came here late."

Han Qiu looked around, and eventually, she stared at Princess Luosha. "I suspect that one of us has defected to the Luosha race, and that's how those Luosha marquises learned where we were heading to. Who do you think this person is?"

Princess Luosha wrapped her arms around Zhang Ruochen's and said, "I'm the heir of Great Devil Ten Square Field. Anyone might defect to the Luosha race except me."

Han Qiu looked gloomier in seeing how touchy Princess Luosha was with Zhang Ruochen. "Really? I reckon the person's you."

Princess Luosha looked upset and looked up at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Don't be rude to the Demonic Concubine. If she'd really defected to the Luosha race, we would have been killed with the power of Great Devil Ten Square Field and the Luosha race."

Just as Han Qiu was about to argue back, Zhang Ruochen said, "Go heal yourself now."

Qiu Yu was so pissed that she couldn't even breathe smoothly while her eyes turned black, but in the end, she walked to another side.

Princess Luosha sneered as she now understood that as long as she could wrap Zhang Ruochen around her finger, all the other people would be under her control.

A blood-curdling voice came out of Fire Ocean again. “Zhang Ruochen, please save me. I’ll follow you no matter what.”

“Still alive? How sturdy.”

Zhang Ruoche performed spatial twist to drag Qiu Yu out of Fire Ocean and threw him on the ground fiercely.

Qiu Yu kept leading the way as they walked toward Pluto Winter Cold Ocean.

Freezing Pluto Winter Water filled Cold Ocean, but strangely, the water was still liquid.

As Zhang Ruochen walked toward the shore, he felt freezing winds attacking. He could only withstand it by mobilizing saint Qi.

Princess Luosha walked to Zhang Ruochen, took out a red boat the size of a palm and threw it back into Pluto Winter Cold Ocean.

Boom!

The red boat kept getting larger until it turned into a ship that was more than a thousand feet long.

Inscriptions emerged on the ship, turning into traces of light surging to the sky, forming a formation compass.

The formation compass kept spinning, dispelling the cold Qi.

“What a powerful ship. It’s definitely a ten thousand patterns saint weapon.”

Suddenly, Princess Luosha was dazed, as the ship started to sink until it was completely gone.

Princess Luosha tried to use her saint Qi to get the ship back, and Princess White Li and Han Qiu also helped. However, their efforts were all in vain.

“There’s no way the ship can float on the ocean...?”

“Then what’re we supposed to do? Can we get close to the Phoenix Nest at all?”

Qiu Yu was exhilarated. If Zhang Ruochen chose to opt out now, he could save his life, but he couldn’t show those

emotions at all as he feared that Zhang Ruochen might throw him into the water again.

Unfortunately, he couldn't avoid what was coming even if he stayed silent.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Qiu Yu and said, "Your original body is a divine tree. I reckon it can float on Pluto Winter Cold Ocean, can't it?"

Qiu Yu said, "Nothing... Nothing can float on Pluto Winter Cold Ocean."

"Well, we have to try."

Zhang Ruochen gave Demonic Sound a look.

Demonic Sound smiled and hit Qiu Yu on his back, knocking him into Pluto Winter Cold Ocean.

Bong!

Qiu Yu immediately showed his true body, turning back into a giant Divine Phoenix Tree. His trunk, branches, and leaves were all crimson, making sizzling sounds in the water.

The mist ascended because the fire touched the water.

"Damn you, bastard! Zhang Ruochen, we're sworn enemies, you swine!"

Qiu Yu kept cursing inside the Divine Phoenix Tree.

Qiu Yu had been an elegant guy all along, so it was no easy task to force him to swear.

After half an hour, the Divine Phoenix Tree was still floating on the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and flew to the trunk of the Divine Phoenix Tree. He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and stuck half of it inside the tree. "You'd better not play anything, otherwise I'll cut you in half."

"That sword is nowhere strong enough to cut me in half," Qiu Yu said.

It was very difficult to cut the trunk of Divine Phoenix Tree, which meant it was equally difficult to kill Qiu Yu.

Even though the Abyss Ancient Sword already had twenty thousand inscriptions, it was still an impossible task for it to cut the trunk of the Divine Phoenix Tree.

Zhang Ruochen put back the Abyss Ancient Sword and formed a space crack that was three feet long. He said, “Can I space crack cut you?”

Qiu Yu was speechless.

If the Divine Phoenix Tree could become a God, it could change the space rules to some extent, after which even space cracks couldn't chop into the trunk.

However, Qiu Yu was far from that level still, so he couldn't ward off a space crack.

“Damn you.”

Qiu Yu's voice came out of the trunk.

Princess Luosha, Demonic Sound, Han Qiu, Princess White Li, and Le walked onto the Divine Phoenix Tree.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't rush to the Phoenix Nest. Instead, he stopped at the shore of Pluto Winter Cold Ocean and waited for the saints from other large fields to convert merits.

The shore of Pluto Winter Cold Ocean was the perfect place for both defense and offense.

If a large group of saints from a particular large field wanted to seize the Merits Record Wall, Zhang Ruochen could move farther on Pluto Winter Cold Ocean.

# Chapter 1497 - The Final Three Days

Chapter 1497: The Final Three Days

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There were thirty-three towering saint mountains surrounding the Phoenix Nest. They were around Fire Ocean and Cold Ocean, filled with formations and hazards.

Each saint mountain was a road leading to the Phoenix Nest.

At this moment, most of the saints from Shatuo Seven Fields had chosen their roads and arrived at the top of a saint mountain, observing what Zhang Ruochen and the others were doing.

At the peak of King Kong Saint Mountain gathered a large group of saints, and there were more than seventy of them. The four leaders were all half-step saint kings.

They were the seniors from Tianmu Field.

A half-step saint king who had a leopard head looked at Cold Ocean and said, "Zhang Ruochen really knows how to pick a spot. With Pluto Winter Cold Ocean as his back road, it's impossible for us to seize the Merits Record Wall."

"Are we really going to trade merits with him? I heard Zhang Ruochen requires thirty percent of our merits. That's such a rip-off."

"Let's wait till our heir and priest get here."

...

There were lots of saints gathering at the peak of other saint mountains, and they were all fiercely discussing like the saints from Tianmu Field.

Some were plotting against Zhang Ruochen by trying to suppress them and seize the merits record wall, while some were suggesting negotiating with Zhang Ruochen.

At this moment, a group of saints was walking down the mountain, and they came from Kunlun's Field.

Wan Zhaoyi, Chu Siyuan, Qing Xiao, and some Taigu remains were walking at the front. They were all top-tier great beings among the saints.

Wan Zhaoyi, Chu Siyuan and Qing Xiao walked up on the Divine Phoenix Tree and talked to Zhang Ruochen.

They'd all known each other for a long time, and Qing Xiao was a close senior brother of Zhang Ruochen, so the negotiation went very smoothly.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Merits Record Wall, putting it on the trunk of the Divine Phoenix Tree. The saints from Kunlun's Field went along to exchange their merits.

All the saints from Kunlun's Field were top-tier great beings, so they had collected lots of merits, increasing the merits of Kunlun's Field by more than sixteen million points.

Zhang Ruochen gained more than five million merits from that, after which Guanghan's Field's merits reached ninety-nine million.

Chu Siyuan looked very upset. He asked, "Can you spare Qiu Yu's life, Zhang Ruochen?"

Chu Siyuan was disappointed at what Qiu Yu did as well, but he was the future spiritual root of Kunlun's Field, so he didn't want Zhang Ruochen to kill Qiu Yu.

To Chu Siyuan, Qiu Yu might be the cornerstone of a large field if someone spent enough time guiding him.

Weirdly, Zhang Ruochen wasn't tough at all. He smiled. "Why don't you stay and protect him, if you're so worried about his



life? If he crosses me again someday, I might knock him into the hollow.”

Chu Siyuan knew how important the Divine Phoenix Tree was, and it would be a huge loss for Kunlun’s Field if Chu Siyuan was killed by Zhang Ruochen.

1

If he stayed, he might be able to stop Zhang Ruochen.

He certainly didn’t want an old guy to stick with him. Instead, he wanted to use Chu Siyuan to check Princess Luosha.

As long as Chu Siyuan could stay with Zhang Ruochen, Princess Luosha wouldn’t be able to use her mind power to deliver messages that easily.

If he could sever the connection between Princess Luosha and the Luosha race, Princess Luosha wouldn’t know anything about changes in the Luosha race.

Princess Luosha heard the conversation between Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan. She frowned and whispered, “Aren’t you worried he’s going to seize the Merits Record Wall?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I don’t think he’s capable of doing that.”

Chu Siyuan was pissed by what he said. “How dare you underestimate me like that? I’m not leaving today. Be careful; I can take the Merits Record Wall any time!”

Zhang Ruochen knew Chu Siyuan very well, which was why he instigated him on purpose.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen’s strategy worked.

Just as Wan Zhaoyi and Qing Xiao were about to leave...

Boom!

The air trembled.

A trace of tumbling saintly way ripple came from the top of a saint mountain, and a giant white light ball ascended, hitting toward the Divine Phoenix Tree.

It was a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon, covered by two layers of saint Qi light.

The saintly way destruction Qi from the hammer-shaped ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon made Pluto Winter Cold Ocean cave, and traces of piercing cold Qi spread.

Zhang Ruochen then wielded Buddha sarira and infused it with saint Qi.

Whoosh!

Le, Princess White Li, Demonic Sound, Han Qiu, and Princess White Li all wielded a trace of saintly Qi light pillar and infused them into the Buddha Emperor sarira.

The original power of the sarira was triggered. It turned into a golden Buddha shadow, and it slapped toward the hammer ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon.

Boom!

The giant purple hammer was knocked away by Buddha Emperor sarira, hitting the mountainside of a saint mountain.

Traces of light gushed out of the saint mountain. Even with the protection of the formation inscriptions, a large part of the mountain still collapsed.

At the top of Wujin Saint Mountain, Fang Yi, Sword Master Dongliu, and the other twelve saints all gasped and took a few steps back.

Those twelve saints had exhausted their saint Qi, so they all sat down and started to mobilize their techniques to recover.

Fang Yi and Sword Master Dongliu also consumed most of their saint Qi. They felt feeble after getting back their hammer-shaped ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon.

Although the second Yao complete power of a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon was tremendously powerful, it required an incredible amount of saint Qi. Not even ordinary saint kings were able to support it.

Zhang Ruochen took back the sarira and looked to the peak of Wujin Saint Mountain.

“It’s got to be those from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. Let’s kill them first so that they won’t be in our way,” Han Qiu said.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “The most important thing is to collect merits.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen started to set up a space formation to ward off the attacks from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field.

It took Zhang Ruochen three days to complete that space formation, which covered an area of three square miles. Even a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon with second Yao complete power wouldn’t be able to break it in a short time.

The saints from Kunlun’s Field, Guanghan Field, and Great Devil Ten Square Field kept coming to exchange their merits, and the data on the wall kept being updated.

Great Devil Ten Square Field was still at the top with two hundred million points.

Guanghan Field was in second place with one hundred and sixty million points.

Kunlun’s Field was in third place with ninety-four million points.

As for the other four fields, nothing changed, as no saints came to exchange merits with Zhang Ruochen.

On the fourth day, some saints from Eight Ministry Field came, led by Mad Man.

On the sixth day, the heir of Tianmu Field led more than one hundred saints to meet Zhang Ruochen for the first time, and they reached a consensus.

The saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field attacked the formation several times, but they failed to break it.

On the tenth day, the almost one thousand top-tier saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field dashed toward the Divine Phoenix Tree at the same time.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen and the others had retreated to the deep area of Cold Ocean.

They were in a stalemate for five days, and the saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field were forced to leave under the pressure of five large fields. And then, Zhang Ruochen and the others went back to the shore of Cold Ocean.

Le and Han Qiu were in charge of merit exchange these days, and as for Zhang Ruochen, he had been spending most of the time refining Nine True Saint Dew in the space crystal.

Time flew, and it was only three days left until the merits battle was over.

Zhang Ruochen had refined twenty thousand drops of Nine True Saint Dew, and most of the saintly way rules in his body had reached the level of ‘truth and absoluteness’. Only time rules and space rules were left.

If he could refine his time rules and space rules to ‘truth and absoluteness’, then he would become an absolute saint.

“I’ve refined so much Nine True Saint Dew, yet time rules and space rules haven’t changed a bit. Is Nine True Saint Dew useless when it comes to time rules and space rules?”

Zhang Ruochen needed to explore it himself with the guidance of a teacher, which meant it would take him more time.

Zhang Ruochen stopped refining Nine True Saint Dew and walked out of the space crystal. He decided to give himself some time to reflect first.

Even though he still wasn’t an absolute saint yet, Zhang Ruochen was confident that only a few in Zuling Field could rival him.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the Merits Record Wall and looked at the ranking.

First place, Great Devil Ten Square Field, three hundred and ninety million merits.

Second place, Guanghan Field, three hundred and eighty million merits.

...

Hell Blade Field was ranked in last place while Purple Mansion Field was ranked in second to last place.

“Great Devil Ten Square Field is indeed powerful. Even if they give me thirty percent of their merits, they’d still be in first place, but the gap between Guanghan Field and Great Devil Ten Square Field is very small already. Three days is enough for Guanghan Field to surpass Great Devil Ten Square Field.”

Zhang Ruochen then looked to Princess Luosha.

Weirdly, Princess Luosha was very calm, even though she couldn’t send out any messages anymore.

She was sitting on a branch of the Divine Phoenix Tree, refining with her hands on her knees. Her black hair waving in the sky, making her look dashing.

She also practices space way, and she’s already an absolute saint. I can ask her for some help, Zhang Ruochen thought.

# Chapter 1498 - Battle of Wits

Chapter 1498: Battle of Wits

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Princess Luosha was a pinnacle absolute saint who was trying to become a half-step saint king.

There was a small purple cauldron on her palm, and the saintly way rules emanated from that cauldron.

Obviously, that small cauldron was a rules saint weapon.

When a monk became a pinnacle absolute saint, the saintly way rules in his or her body would hit their limit, and if someone wanted to advance to half-step or one-step saint king, he must comprehend more intricate saintly way rules.

For example, Princess Luosha practiced space rules, so there was only one ultimate space rule in her lower abdomen.

That space rule was a ‘rule seed,’ and only after her comprehending space ways could it grow and blossom. If a monk’s lower abdomen and body merged with space rules and heaven and earth, he would reach the most pinnacle realm under the Gods.

The saintly way rules in Princess Luosha’s body was ‘one,’ and the pinnacle realm under Gods was ‘infinity.’

Only after evolving from ‘infinity’ could someone become a God.

Comprehending the saintly ways in rules saint weapons could help a monk become a half-step or a first-step saint king more quickly.

Princess Luosha sensed that Zhang Ruochen was right behind her. She stopped comprehending, put back the purple cauldron and opened her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen sat down with his legs crossed beside her and said, "Seems like you're about to become a half-step saint king."

"I can only achieve that after the rules seed starts to grow, but now, it's just awakened."

Princess Luosha then looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, "You're almost an absolute saint yourself, aren't you?"

Both of them were shrewd enough to tell each other's cultivation by one look.

Zhang Ruochen said, "One last step."

"You haven't reached the absolute level in space rules and time rules yet?" Princess Luosha asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Are you trying to fathom me?"

Zhang Ruochen only told her he was a space manipulator with space rules in his body before, and he'd never said he was a time manipulator.

Princess Luosha asked that because she wanted to know whether Zhang Ruochen was a time manipulator or not.

The most significant difference between space monks and space manipulators was whether they had time rules in their bodies or not.

"You don't need to answer me if you don't want to," Princess Luosha said.

Zhang Ruochen noticed that Princess Luosha was acting very abnormally today.

And suddenly, Zhang Ruochen realized that Princess Luosha must've known that her identity had been exposed given everything he did.

He stayed on the shore of Pluto Ice Cold Ocean instead of going to the Phoenix Nest because he was trying to check up on her.

He asked Chu Siyuan to stay to guard against her.

Not to mention he used space domain every time he met with someone important.

Although Princess Luosha knew that her identity had been exposed, she didn't dare leave recklessly because she knew Zhang Ruochen wouldn't let her go that easily.

It wouldn't be easy for her to leave as she needed to fight Zhang Ruochen, Chu Siyuan, and Le.

This was her major concern.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he didn't dare lay his cards down yet because he reckoned Princess Luosha must have some attack valuables like godly spirits weapons given her status. If they really engaged in a fight, it would end tragically for both sides. Zhang Ruochen didn't want that before Guanghan Field reached first place.

And besides, even if Zhang Ruochen managed to kill Princess Luosha, they would definitely be encircled by the Luosha armies. Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine hadn't fully prepared yet, so the Shatuo Seven Fields didn't have any advantages in a full-blown fight against the Luosha armies.

There was no need to hide anything since both sides had learned each other's secrets.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a bit and said, "That's right, I practice time rules and space rules at the same time."

Princess Luosha's eyes glinted, and she smiled. "Incredible. You're the third creature who can control both time and space in history. I need to congratulate you now, as you'll definitely become the most sought after talent after the Saints Merits Battle, but I also need to warn you that you shouldn't flaunt your power too much and avoid standing at the point where the going is toughest. The higher you get, the tougher it'll be if you fall."

Zhang Ruochen knew that Princess Luosha said it with a reason. "Thanks for the heads-up."



Princess Luosha said, “Refining Nine True Saint Dew is only an assistive way to improve yourself. Both time way and space way are ancient ways. If you only refine Nine True Saint Dew, you can’t reach the absolute level. You need to comprehend them yourself. The ancient ways are a trial for refiners.”

Zhang Ruochen pondered what Princess Luosha said, then he smiled. “I see. Thanks for teaching me.”

They were enemies, yet they could still talk with each other, which was a rare thing.

Princess Luosha was indeed a charming and intelligent person. No wonder she could lead an army to conquer a large field even though she was so young.

“No need to thank me. If you ask the supreme saints from Guanghan Field, they’ll tell you the same thing.”

Princess Luosha stood up with her hands behind her back. Her perfect body with huge breasts and a thin waist was reflected in the water.

She looked into the distance at the Phoenix Nest and asked, “Are you staying here because you want Guanghan Field to come out on top in the Saints Merits Battle?”

Zhang Ruochen also stood up and said, “That’s right.”

Princess Luosha took out a small and delicate box and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took the box, and he could feel space ripples the second he received it from Princess Luosha.

It was a space treasure.

Whoosh!

A trace of gleaming white light gushed out of the box.

Zhang Ruochen saw lots of bottles filled with Luosha blood and a fragmented soul fly out, and there were at least ten thousand of them.

Many saints were killed by the Luosha race, so those bottles were seized by the Luosha race.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't surprised that Princess Luosha could have so many bottles.

Princess Luosha said, "I'm sure these are enough to make Guanghai Field reach first place."

"Why did you give them to me?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"No reason. I have no use for them anyway," Princess Luosha said.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a bit. If he could really convert all the Luosha blood and fragmented souls into merits, Guanghai Field could definitely make it to first place.

And then, he could destroy the Merits Records Wall and finish Moon Goddess's task.

However, Zhang Ruochen felt that something was off.

He and Princess Luosha were clearly enemies, so there was no way Princess Luosha would keep helping him.

It was too erratic.

Han Qiu had been observing Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha the whole time. She walked toward them and said, "These are free merits. How can we not take them?"

Han Qiu then used her saint Qi to get all the bottles and walked toward the Merits Record Wall.

Zhang Ruochen didn't come up with anything. He shook his head and followed her.

Chu Siyuan set up a painting way formation around the Merits Record Wall, and it was a 'Golden Iron Horse Picture.' Le and Princess White Li were guarding both sides of Merits Record Wall.

Seeing Han Qiu carrying more than ten thousand bottles, Chu Siyuan, Le, and Princess White Li were all intrigued. There were too much Luosha blood and too many fragmented souls in those bottles, and they were worth at least a hundred million merits.

Chu Siyuan pursed his lips and said, "Zhang Ruochen, Guanghai Field only needs ten million merits to surpass Great

Devil Ten Square Field. Can you give some of them to Kunlun's Field?"

Zhang Ruochen, "Even if I'm giving, I ain't giving them to you."

Le, Han Qiu, and Princess White Li had been following Zhang Ruochen the whole time, but they hadn't received any merits yet.

Zhang Ruochen was prepared to give all the extra merits to them so that they could also enter 'Saints Merits Rank' of Heaven World.

If someone could get ten million merits, he or she could make it to the 'Saints Merits Rank' of Heaven World.

If someone could enter the 'Saints Merits Rank' of Heaven World, they could get lots of benefits that ordinary saints could never have.

Chu Siyuan didn't care, as he was already a saint king. There was no need for him to make it to the 'Saints Merits Rank' of Heaven World.

As long as Le, Han Qiu, and Princess White Li obtained the merits, Kunlun's Field's merits would increase.

Chu Siyuan released mind power to count the total number of Luosha blood and fragmented souls. Halfway through the counting, he was dazed and said, "There's a Huang Python King Rune in one of the bottles."

Princess Luosha hid it very well, and only those with the same level of mind power could detect it.

Princess Luosha's eyes glinted wickedly and she said, "Break!"

Boom!

The Huang Python King Rune was activated, and the bottle started to crack before it exploded. A tumbling saint Qi was released, turning into phantoms of tens of thousands of Huang Pythons, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen, Chu Siyuan, Princess White Li, and Le.

Zhang Ruochen was well on his guard the whole time, so he infused his mind power and saint Qi into the 'Golden Iron Horse Picture' immediately.

Waaaa!

The picture formation was activated, and phantoms of human beings and beasts showed up. They looked like ferocious knights, clashing with all those phantoms of the Huang Pythons.

# Chapter 1499 - Princess Luosha's Tricks

Chapter 1499: Princess Luosha's Tricks

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Go!”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Chu Siyuan's shirt and dragged him away as fast as he could.

There was no guarantee that 'Golden Iron Horse Picture' was able to ward off the Huang Python King Rune. Even a trace of saint Qi from the rune was able to kill Chu Siyuan given how weak his body was.

Zhang Ruochen didn't put Chu Siyuan down until they were far. He then looked to Princess Luosha.

Princess Luosha rushed toward the Merits Record Wall.

“She's trying to seize the Merits Record Wall?”

Zhang Ruochen then performed spatial move, teleporting himself thousands of feet away and showing up right behind Princess Luosha.

He then wielded the Abyss Ancient Sword toward Princess Luosha.

A circle of saint Qi ripple gushed out of the sword, turning into hundreds of traces of sword Qi.

Princess Luosha shot a glance at the sword Qi behind her and smiled. “What a ruthless man. Does the old friendship mean nothing to you?”

“Does it mean anything to you then?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“I would’ve used something stronger than Huang Python King Rune if it didn’t.”

Princess Luosha opened her arms, and golden rune characters emerged on her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse. The light coming out of the rune characters formed a pair of golden wings, warding off Zhang Ruochen’s sword.

The Abyss Ancient Sword and the golden wings clashed with each other, with sparkles splashing.

Zhang Ruochen frowned, as Princess Luosha had way too many valuables. Any valuable she possessed was difficult to deal with.

The pair of golden wings on her back was definitely a top-tier valuable as well.

Boom!

Cracking sounds came from afar.

“Golden Iron Horse Picture’ formed thousands of phantoms of knights, but they kept being crushed, turning into smoke.

However, the power from Huang Python King Rune wasn’t dispersed completely. Some of the Huang Python phantoms hit Le, Princess White Li, and Han Qiu, knocking them away.

Just as they were about to fall into Pluto Winter Cold Ocean, three vines flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s back, dragging them to shore.

Princess Luosha seized this chance to rush to the Merits Record Wall and put one hand on the wall.

“Space twist.” Zhang Ruochen changed the space structure around the Merits Record Wall, trying to bring it back to him.

“Break.”

Princess Luosha waved her hands forward, and then, five space cracks showed up, and they flew toward Zhang Ruochen like a giant black claw.

Zhang Ruochen had to retract his space power and use space collapse to neutralize Princess Luosha’s space cracks.

And then, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move again to rush toward the Merits Record Wall. He wielded the Abyss Ancient Sword while forming two hand prints, hitting toward Princess Luosha.

Howl!

Howl!

The phantoms of a dragon and an elephant showed up under Zhang Ruochen's palms. Two traces of masculine Qi dived like two blazing suns.

Princess Luosha smiled sneakily and said, "Qiu Yu."

Zhang Ruochen realized that something went wrong. However, it was too late for him to retract the power of the two palms.

The Divine Phoenix Tree that was floating on Pluto Winter Cold Ocean turned back to human shape.

The Merits Record Wall and Princess Luosha also vanished.

Zhang Ruochen's handprints didn't hit Princess Luosha. Instead, they hit the surface of Cold Ocean, leading to waves that were more than a hundred feet tall.

Zhang Ruochen had great reflex when it came to danger. Right before he was about to fall into Cold Ocean, he performed spatial move again and teleported Le, Princess White Li, Han Qiu and Chu Siyuan to the shore.

Princess Luosha was standing one thousand feet away across from Zhang Ruochen.

She was holding the Merits Record Wall with one hand and a small silver knife with the other, tapping on the wall with that knife.

Han Qiu said, "How dare you seize the Merits Record Wall using a cunning trick like that. Do you have the guts to fight me directly?"

Princess Luosha didn't even bother looking at Han Qiu. She chuckled. "You're not my match."

"How dare you..."

Dark power gushed out of Han Qiu's body, turning her body into a black hole while evil power emanated from that black hole.

Princess White Li stopped Han Qiu and said, "That silver knife Princess Luosha has is a godly spirits weapon. The power inside can destroy the Merits Record Wall."

Great Devil Ten Square Field was still in first place, with ten million more merits than Guanghan Field.

If the Merits Record Wall was destroyed, everything Zhang Ruochen did would be in vain.

Princess Luosha gazed at Princess White Li with a smile and said, "Not bad. You're smart enough to realize that."

Zhang Ruochen had told everyone but Chu Siyuan who Princess Luosha was.

Chu Siyuan wouldn't be able to hold back if he knew who Princess Luosha was. However, he wasn't an idiot. After witnessing what happened, he kind of figured out her real identity.

Chu Siyuan couldn't be angrier seeing Qiu Yu, who was standing behind Princess Luosha. "How dare you defect to Princess Luosha, Qiu Yu... Aren't you worried her majesty will punish you after getting back to Kunlun's Field?"

Qiu Yu sneered and said, "If I didn't submit to her highness, I would never have the chance to get back to Kunlun's Field. You guys only know how to collude with Zhang Ruochen. Have you cared about my life for a second?"

Chu Siyuan shivered out of anger after hearing the word 'collude.' Mind power gushed out of his body, forming a crimson mountain in the sky, dashing toward Qiu Yu.

Princess Luosha pointed forward with one finger, and then, the crimson mountain exploded.

Qiu Yu was relieved a bit. He said, "Thank you for your help, your highness. I'll be loyal to the Luosha race and serve you forever."



Chu Siyuan couldn't get angrier seeing how Qiu Yu ingratiated himself to Princess Luosha.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the front and said calmly, "The Merits Record Wall means nothing to you. You only seized it because you want to negotiate with me, didn't you?"

"I love talking to smart people."

Princess Luosha took out a bottle and threw it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the bottle and inspected it with his mind power. There were three thousand traces of Luosha fragmented souls inside, which were worth twenty million merits.

After Princess Luosha triggered Huang Python King Rune, it had destroyed most of the Luosha blood and fragmented souls. Those in the bottle were all that were preserved.

Princess Luosha said, "I'm really giving you the merits this time. Does that show my good faith?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't put away the bottle until he made sure Princess Luosha hadn't put anything extra inside. He said, "If you really have good faith, you should give me the Merits Record Wall as well."

Princess Luosha smiled. "You're the person of my destiny, which means I'll give you the Merits Record Wall sooner or later. However, you need to help me do something first."

"Which is?"

Princess Luosha looked to the Phoenix Nest and said, "You need to help me get the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix."

Zhang Ruochen knew that what Princess Luosha really wanted was the Godly Star Soul, yet he wouldn't expose her when she said she wanted the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Zhang Ruochen pretended to think, and after a while, he nodded and said, "It seems I have no choice but to get used by you again."

“Don’t be so down. We’re just taking what we need.” Princess Luosha smiled.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Okay, I’ll follow you.”

“Perfect. Let’s head off then.”

Princess Luosha looked to Qiu Yu, and that look alone was already a lot of pressure for him.

Qiu Yu didn’t dare go against Princess Luosha, so he had to jump back into Pluto Winter Cold Ocean, turning back into the Divine Phoenix Tree.

Zhang Ruochen then looked to Le, Princess White Li, and Han Qiu. “It’s going to be a dangerous trip. You guys don’t need to follow.”

They knew Zhang Ruochen wanted them to leave and meet up with the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine to attack the Luosha race.

“Take care, my lord,” Princess White Li said.

Chu Siyuan didn’t know what was going on here, so he insisted on following. He was so enraged by Qiu Yu that he wanted to kill him now.

A coward like that would be catastrophic to Kunlun’s Field if he became the spiritual root of Kunlun’s Field.

Chu Siyuan wanted to seize the chance to get rid of Qiu Yu.

Zhang Ruochen, Princess Luosha, and Chu Siyuan boarded the Divine Phoenix Tree and sailed toward the Phoenix Nest.

Princess White Li stood on the shore and said, “Some of the Luosha people must’ve seen the fight between Princess Luosha and us. If they tell the others, the three million Luosha marquises will immediately attack the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.”

Le said, “Which is why we need to go meet with the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, Wan Zhaoyi, Wu Hao, Mad Man, and the others. We need to strike them first.”

Whoosh!

They rushed out of the saint mountain.

...

There was a group of Luosha marquises gathering at the top of a saint mountain, and their leader was Lord Lingquan.

Lord Lingquan was excited to see the fight on Pluto Winter Cold Ocean. He said, "Her highness has split with Zhang Ruo Chen. The war is finally coming. Marquis Tianxu, get back to the Luosha camp and tell Yang Qi and Qian Yu that we're ready to kill the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields in one haul. As for the other first marquises, follow me to the Phoenix Nest to help her highness."

# Chapter 1500 - Life-death Two Extremes

Chapter 1500: Life-death Two Extremes

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After sailing on Pluto Ice Cold Ocean for more than a hundred miles, there was Gang Wind on the ocean, and the closer they got to the Phoenix Nest, the stronger the wind became.

It seemed that there were real blades in the wind.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen, Princess Luosha, and Chu Siyuan all formed light screens to protect themselves against the Gang Wind.

The Divine Phoenix Tree stopped when it was thirty miles away from the Phoenix Nest.

There was heaven and earth saint Qi spinning in front of them, forming a giant whirlpool, and the Phoenix Nest was at the center of the whirlpool.

The Gang Wind inside the whirlpool was fiercer, and there was blue and white Divine Jingmie spinning inside. Even saint kings would find it very difficult to get in.

Princess Luosha said, "This is the last boundary of the Phoenix Nest. The deeper we get into the whirlpool, the more dangerous it's going to be. We can only get in using the power of space."

"Really? I don't believe it!"

Chu Siyuan had already reached saint-king level, so he was very proud of himself. He took out a bronze pen, a piece of

paper, and an inkstone.

The painting paper was made of a rare metal. It was more than six feet long but ten times thinner than ordinary paper.

There was beast emperor blood on the inkstone. Even without any eternal power, the energies contained in the blood made it feel like a furnace.

It took Chu Siyuan lots of effort to get that beast emperor blood, so he rarely used it.

“Wind-stabilizing Pillar!”

Chu Siyuan mobilized mind power and infused it into the bronze pen, twisted his wrist and started to paint on that metal paper using beast emperor blood.

Princess Luosha pinched her chin as her interest was piqued. After all, it was rare to find a painting way mind power monk.

After a short while, Chu Siyuan stopped painting and pressed the picture, followed by gushing mind power.

Boom!

The picture flew into the whirlpool, giving off gleaming golden light.

And then, a golden pillar that was a hundred thousand feet tall showed up, and there were blood-red engravings flowing on the pillar.

The whirlpool spun slower and slower, and the ocean turned tranquil.

Just when the whirlpool was about to disappear, space cracks showed up around the Wind-stabilizing Pillar and crushed the pillar.

Bang!

The whirlpool spread everywhere.

Chu Siyuan’s eyes popped, and he said, “The space here is too fragile. Once a trace of power stronger than saints enters the whirlpool, there’ll be lots of space cracks, but how’re we

supposed to ward off the Gang Wind and Divine Fire Jingmie without above-saint power.”

Princess Luosha was shocked.

That old man was indeed forceful. Without the interference of space, he might actually be able to stabilize the whirlpool.

Zhang Ruochen had been observing it the whole time. He said, “It isn’t because of the fragility of the space structure, but rather because there’s a brilliant space formation inside the whirlpool. As long as we can break it, we can get in.”

Princess Luosha had studied the space formation here before. “It’s indeed a space formation, and besides, there’s a slaying formation, Life-death Two Extremes Formation. The two formations have merged with each other, and if we try to break the space formation itself, we’ll be attacked by Life-death Two Extremes Formation, and vice versa. We need to crack both formations at the same time.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Is that why you used the Merits Record Wall to threaten me? You want me to help you crack the space formation?”

“That’s right,” Princess Luosha said.

Chu Siyuan said, “Life-death Two Extreme Formation is an eighth-class formation, which is very complicated and abstruse. Even saint kings might die if they try to get in.”

Princess Luosha chuckled. “Ice and Fire Phoenix was fairly mediocre on formations. I think we can crack its Life-death Two Extremes Formation.”

“The young people today are too confident,” Chu Siyuan said.

Actually, the Life-death Two Extremes set up by Ice and Fire Phoenix was stronger than Princess Luosha thought.

However, Ice and Fire Phoenix should’ve had a ninth-class formation around its nest, given its cultivation. But Life-death Two Extremes Formation was only an eighth-class formation, and even after combining it with a space formation, it was still way weaker than a ninth-grade formation, which was why

Princess Luosha said Ice and Fire Phoenix was very mediocre in formation making.

It was still extremely dangerous for her and Zhang Ruochen to crack two formations made by a supreme saint. They might be the only two saints who had the guts to do that.

Princess Luosha took out a saint scepter and pointed it at the whirlpool. Millions of inscriptions emerged, traveling back and forth in the whirlpool like dragons.

Life-death Two Extremes Formation was indeed very complicated, and it was almost impossible to crack it when millions of inscriptions intertwined with each other. Perhaps only those who were as strong as or stronger than seventh-step saint kings could break it with pure strength.

Chu Siyuan stood on the Divine Phoenix Tree and saw Princess Luosha erase the inscriptions one by one, and he couldn't help admiring her. "Impressive. A powerful woman like that from Hell World will definitely be a great enemy to us in the future."

Zhang Ruochen was also breaking the space formation, cooperating with Princess Luosha perfectly.

However, Zhang Ruochen was comprehending the space ways in the formation as he was cracking the space formation.

Just as Princess Luosha had said, he needed to use his comprehension to comprehend space rules if he wanted to reach absoluteness level.

After an hour, Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha walked forward three miles, and the whirlpool slowed down by one tenth.

After four hours, Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha walked forward for another five miles, and the whirlpool spun only half as fast as before.

After seven hours, Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha finally came to the deep area of the whirlpool, and they were only ten miles away from the Phoenix Nest. The whirlpool spun much more slowly.

At this moment, a feeble ripple was transmitted from Zhang Ruochen's lower abdomen.

The space rules in Heaven Pass River had just evolved, reaching the absolute level.

“That easy...”

Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Before reaching that level, Zhang Ruochen could see nothing but mist, but when he reached the absolute level, he realized that he'd been overthinking everything.

Now, he only needed to comprehend time rules to the absolute level to become an absolute saint.

“Hopefully I can have the chance to comprehend something in the Phoenix Nest.”

Zhang Ruochen craved great power; only with great power could he handle the ultimate battle against the Luosha race.

After a whole day, Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha stopped and gave each other a look.

And then, they both rushed toward a formation knot after using their full strength.

Boom!

Both space formation and Life-death Two Extremes Formation shook, and then, they crumbled.

Although the whirlpool disappeared, there were tumbling waves that were hundreds of feet tall on the ocean, and Divine Fire Jingmie and space cracks flew away.

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha performed their best body techniques and landed back on the Divine Phoenix Tree like two traces of golden light.

There were horrific forces sweeping across the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen, Chu Siyuan, and Princess Luosha all used their best protection valuables to ward off the destructive power.



The Divine Phoenix Tree was the most tragic one as it was continually attacked by Divine Fire Jingmie and space cracks, and almost all its branches and leaves were cut off or burned to the ground.

After three hours, the ocean was tranquil again.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The final boundary of the Phoenix Nest is broken. Can you give me the Merits Record Wall now?”

“Of course.”

Princess Luosha took out the Merits Record Wall from a space treasure and threw it away.

“I knew you were going to play me again.” Zhang Ruochen mobilized his saint Qi, stepping on the divine phoenix tree branches and rushing toward the Merits Record Wall.

He wouldn’t allow the Merits Record Wall to fall into the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t focus on the fight against the Luosha race until he made sure that Guanghan Field was in first place.

Which was why he was controlled by Princess Luosha.

“Good luck.”

Princess Luosha chuckled and flew onto the Divine Phoenix Tree branches, rushing toward the Phoenix Nest. “Qiu Yu, deal with that elder. This is a test for you.”